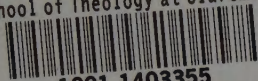


School of Theology at Claremont



1001 1403355



The Library  
SCHOOL OF THEOLOGY  
AT CLAREMONT

WEST FOOTHILL AT COLLEGE AVENUE  
CLAREMONT, CALIFORNIA











*The Rev S. Kemp*

*From the Author.*

BX

5155

L6

INV. 1893.

A SERIES OF

# PRECEDENTS AND PROCEEDINGS

IN CRIMINAL CAUSES,

EXTENDING FROM THE YEAR 1475 TO 1640;

EXTRACTED FROM

ACT-BOOKS OF ECCLESIASTICAL COURTS IN THE

DIOCESE OF LONDON,

ILLUSTRATIVE OF THE

DISCIPLINE OF THE CHURCH OF ENGLAND.

TO WHICH IS PREFIXED, AN

INTRODUCTORY ESSAY.

BY

WILLIAM HALE HALE, M.A.

ARCHDEACON OF LONDON.

LONDON:

FRANCIS & JOHN RIVINGTON,

ST. PAUL'S CHURCH YARD, AND WATERLOO PLACE;

& SAUNDERS & BENNING, 43, FLEET STREET.

1847.

*c*

LONDON:

GILBERT & RIVINGTON, PRINTERS,

ST. JOHN'S SQUARE.

TO THE RIGHT HONOURABLE

SIR HERBERT JENNER FUST, KNT. LL.D.

DEAN OF THE ARCHES,

OFFICIAL PRINCIPAL OF THE ARCHES COURT OF CANTERBURY,

AND

MASTER OF TRINITY HALL, CAMBRIDGE,

THIS WORK IS RESPECTFULLY DEDICATED,

BY HIS SINCERE AND OBLIGED FRIEND,

W. H. HALE.

CHARTERHOUSE,  
FEB. XVIII, MDCCXLVII.

CALIF. STATE LIB. 12.16-57





THE  
ACT-BOOKS OF THE ECCLESIASTICAL COURTS

HAVE FURNISHED THE  
COLLECTION OF PRECEDENTS

IN THE FOLLOWING ORDER :—

THE COMMISSARY COURT OF LONDON.

Precedents	1— 69	from	Act-Book	A.D.	1475—1482
_____	70—115	. . . .	_____		1489—1491
_____	116—159	. . . .	_____		1492, 1493
_____	160—164	. . . .	_____		1496
_____	165—190	. . . .	_____		1497
_____	191—245	. . . .	_____		1496—1501
_____	246—273	. . . .	_____		1501, 1502
_____	274—296	. . . .	_____		1508—1511
_____	297—322	. . . .	_____		1518—1526
_____	323—342	. . . .	_____		1526—1529
_____	343—346	. . . .	_____		1539

THE ARCHIDIACONAL COURT OF COLCHESTER.

Precedents	247—383	from	Act-Book	A.D.	1540, 1541
_____	384—399	. . . .	_____		1543, 1544

THE CONSISTORY COURT OF LONDON.

Precedents	400—411	from	Act-Book	A.D.	1540—1544
------------	---------	------	----------	------	-----------

THE COURT OF THE VICAR-GENERAL OF LONDON.

Precedents	412—433	from	Act-Book	A.D.	1554, 1555
------------	---------	------	----------	------	------------

THE ARCHIDIACONAL COURT OF LONDON.

Precedents	434—438	from	Act-Book	A.D.	1562, 1563
------------	---------	------	----------	------	------------

THE ARCHIDIACONAL COURT OF ESSEX.

Precedents	439—453	from	Act-Book	A.D.	1566—1568
_____	454—468	. . . .	_____		1572
_____	469—481	. . . .	_____		1574—1577
_____	482—500	. . . .	_____		1575, 1576
_____	501—518	. . . .	_____		1577, 1578
_____	519—532	. . . .	_____		1579, 1580
_____	533—575	. . . .	_____		1583—1586
_____	576—596	. . . .	_____		1586, 1587
_____	597—620	. . . .	_____		1588—1590
_____	621—633	. . . .	_____		1590—1591
_____	634—646	. . . .	_____		1592, 1593
_____	647—661	. . . .	_____		1595, 1596
_____	662—670	. . . .	_____		1597, 1598
_____	671—683	. . . .	_____		1598, 1599
_____	684—690	. . . .	_____		1599, 1600
_____	691—696	. . . .	_____		1600—1602
_____	697—703	. . . .	_____		1602, 1603
_____	704—717	. . . .	_____		1604—1606
_____	718—724	. . . .	_____		1606, 1607
_____	725—731	. . . .	_____		1608—1610

THE ARCHIDIACONAL COURT OF ESSEX (*continued*).

Precedents	732—734	from	Act-Book	A.D.	1612
-----	735—744	. . . .	-----		1613, 1614
-----	745—748	. . . .	-----		1614, 1615
-----	749—753	. . . .	-----		1616, 1617
-----	754—762	. . . .	-----		1618, 1619
-----	763—769	. . . .	-----		1619, 1620
-----	770—775	. . . .	-----		1620, 1621
-----	776—778	. . . .	-----		1623
-----	779	. . . .	-----		1624
-----	780	. . . .	-----		1625
-----	781—788	. . . .	-----		1626—1628
-----	789, 790	. . . .	-----		1629
-----	791—794	. . . .	-----		1630—1632
-----	795—799	. . . .	-----		1632, 1633
-----	800—806	. . . .	-----		1634, 1635
-----	807—817	. . . .	-----		1636—1638
-----	818—820	. . . .	-----		1638, 1639

THE ARCHIDIACONAL COURT OF LONDON.

Precedents	821—829	from	Act-Book	A.D.	1639
------------	---------	------	----------	------	------

AT THE END OF THE VOLUME THE PRECEDENTS WILL BE FOUND  
ARRANGED UNDER THE FOLLOWING HEADS :—

Absolution.	Church-stock.	Pardoner.
Administration.	Churchwarden.	Parish Bounds.
Adultery.	Churchwarden's Account.	Parish Clerk.
Alms to the Poor.	Churchyard, &c.	Pax-bread and Blessed
Apparitor.	Clerical Misconduct.	Bread.
Appeal.	Communion.	Penance (Forms of).
Aquæbajulus.	Confession.	Penance-sheet.
Arbitration and Compro-	Contempt of the Clergy.	Perjury.
mise.	Conventicles.	Pews and Seats.
Archdeacon's Jurisdic-	Courts and their Officers.	Plurality.
tion.	Diffamation.	Processions and Peram-
Assaulting Priests.	Dress of Clergy.	bulations.
Banns of Marriage.	Drunkenness and haunt-	Proctors.
Baptism.	ing Taverns.	Profaning the Church.
Bell-ringing.	Dues and Fees.	Pronubæ.
Bible.	Excommunicate Persons.	Purgation.
Bishop's Park.	Fox's Monuments.	Recusancy and Popery.
Blasphemy.	Fraternity (Goods of).	Roodloft.
Breaking Faith.	Heretical Opinions.	Sacrilege.
Burial.	Incest.	Sacristan.
Catechizing.	Incontinence.	Schoolmasters.
Chancel.	Infants.	Sick Persons.
Charity.	Injunctions.	Simony.
Chrim.	License to officiate.	Sundays and Holydays
Church (Misbehaviour	Matrimonial Causes.	(Non-observance of).
in).	Midwives and Surgeons.	Testamentary Causes.
Church Books and Regis-	Miscellaneous Offences.	Tithes and Offerings.
ters.	Orders (Holy).	Torches and Torch-
Churching of Women.	Ordination.	warden.
Church-rates.	Overlaying Infants.	Usury.
Church-repairs.	Pardon.	Witchcraft.

AN ESSAY  
ON THE  
ENGLISH ECCLESIASTICAL LAW,  
AND THE JURISDICTION  
OF THE ECCLESIASTICAL COURTS.





## ESSAY,

8c.

---

THE publication of a work like the present, which exhibits a series of Precedents of Cases in the Ecclesiastical Courts of the Diocese of London, from the year 1475 to the year 1640, and which illustrates the method, in which the Discipline of the Church of England was exercised in the correction of the vices and errors both of the Laity and Clergy during that period, might at any time be regarded with interest, if upon no other account, at least upon this; that whilst it incidently records the gradual changes in opinions upon religion, which took place during that eventful period, and accurately portrays the nature of our ancient Ecclesiastical Discipline, it also enables us to obtain in many respects a clearer insight into the domestic habits of the inhabitants of the Diocese of London in former ages. It is not, however, to the connexion between the contents of this volume and the history, both of the Church of England, and of English society, that I am inclined to attach the greatest importance. Had no other object been present to my mind amidst such antiquarian researches, than that of adding something to the general stock of knowledge; however valuable the contribution might appear to be, I could hardly have justified to myself such an employment of my

leisure hours. It is in the public proceedings of the Legislature for the improvement of Ecclesiastical Discipline, and in the private opinions, which many persons entertain of a great injury supposed to have been inflicted by the Reformation upon the Church, in the destruction of her powers of Spiritual Discipline, that I have found motives, which have encouraged me to persevere in these labours, and which have induced me to publish some portion of the results. Whether the course of Legislation upon the subject of Clerical Discipline has been based upon correct principles of Jurisprudence, and whether experience has proved its fitness to meet the condition of society and the wants of the Church, it would be presumptuous in me to decide. I entertain, however, a strong and, I venture to say, well-grounded opinion, that if our system of Ecclesiastical Discipline is to be remodelled, it cannot but be of use, to have an accurate knowledge of that system in its most ancient and simplest form; such knowledge may serve to show the origin of those defects, of which we now complain; and we may be enabled to determine, whether in our altered state of society, and consistently with modern notions of Criminal Justice, an effectual remedy for those defects can be devised. In the attempts which have been made in the course of the present century to revive a Discipline, which had fallen almost into desuetude, it has been discovered, that the summary justice of ancient times has given place to protracted, and, by consequence, expensive processes; and hence it not unfrequently happens that crimes go unpunished: but, on the other hand, the numerous cases in which within the last few years criminal Clergymen have been convicted, suspended, and deprived; and the important questions, which have been raised and decided in the Ecclesiastical Courts upon doctrinal and rubrical questions, are proofs, that inconvenient or expensive as the legal process may be, Ecclesiastical Discipline is not wholly extinguished, nor is our Church destitute of the means of declaring by Legal decision, what are the Doctrines

contained in her Formularies, and what are the Practices, which in things external she enjoins. The present period is indeed remarkable, both for complaints against the inefficiency of our Discipline, and for endeavours to amend it; and yet posterity would judge most unjustly, if it should conclude, that these proceedings were called into action by an increase of immorality among the Clergy, or by greater neglect in the performance of duty. It is not, that crime is more frequent, far otherwise; the means which we possess of comparing the manners and habits and conduct of the Clergy of our own day with those of any former period, only serve to prove our present superiority; and all the desire which is shown, and the wishes which are expressed, to procure the punishment and ejection of unworthy Clergymen, are so many proofs of a higher tone of feeling, and of a stronger conviction on the part of the Church at large, that any conduct on the part of a Clergyman, which falls short of being exemplary, though it may not deserve punishment, is yet the proper subject of reproof.

The discussions which have of late years taken place on the subject of Clerical Discipline, together with the increased cultivation of Ecclesiastical knowledge, have contributed to direct the attention of many persons to the general question of Church Discipline, and to the power of correction, which the Church formerly exercised, as well over the Laity, as over the Clergy; and it is to be feared, that not a few persons have been induced to undervalue the blessings conferred upon us by the Reformation of Religion, as if the restoration of truth had been purchased by a declension in morals, and liberty had been followed by licentiousness.

It cannot be denied that, as respects the conduct of Lay members of our Church, all Discipline has ceased; and there is good ground to believe, that if any one were bold enough, especially when such a work as this is presented to the public, to propose the restoration of it, he would encounter

hostility not less formidable, than that with which the most learned of modern writers on Church Discipline, Bishop Gibson, was assailed upon the publication of his invaluable work, the "*Codex Juris Ecclesiastici Anglicani*;" and that he would be denounced, as a disciple of Archbishop Laud, who was secretly desiring to renew the terrors of the Court of High Commission, and to destroy liberty of conscience and freedom in the profession of religion. This present work will prove, that the Reformation is unjustly blamed, as if it had occasioned the overthrow of that authority in matters of faith and of conduct over the Lay, as well as Clerical, members of our Church, to which in former times every one was amenable; and that for nearly a century subsequent to the Reformation, until the year 1640, the faults and vices both of the Laity and Clergy, whether in faith, or morals, or Ecclesiastical observances, were the subject of most vigilant inquiry, and were corrected and punished according to one uniform system. The contrast between the present and past condition of our Church since her Reformation, as respects her power over the Laity, is indeed most striking; but whilst we are forced to admit, that our Church is more defective in this respect than any other religious community; and that, inasmuch as Church membership implies submission to the laws of the Church, they who are schismatical in conduct and profligate in manners, ought, in compliance with the commands of our Lord and of his Apostles, to be censured and corrected by the Church; it would not be inconsistent with such an admission, if we expressed a strong doubt, whether the restoration of such a system of Discipline, as is portrayed in this volume, is suitable to our present social condition, or calculated to promote true religion, and to improve the public morals. In the present complicated form of society, and above all, in so serious a matter, as the punishment of sin by public censure and rebuke, we need not be ashamed to confess the difficulty,

in which the Church is placed, as a spiritual society in the midst of an opposing world, and to acknowledge, that it is far easier to discern defects in her system of internal government, than to devise a remedy for them.

The opinion that our Church lost her power of exercising Discipline at the Reformation, owes, I believe, its origin in a great degree to that well-known passage in the Commination Service, which first states, that “in the primitive Church there was a godly discipline; that at the beginning of Lent, such persons, as were notorious sinners, were put to open penance and punished in this world, that their souls might be saved in the day of the Lord, and that others admonished by their example might be more afraid to offend;” and then subjoins, “In the stead whereof, until the said discipline be restored again, which is much to be wished, it is thought good that at this time in your presence should be read the general sentences of God’s cursing,” &c. Now the wish here expressed, it should be observed, relates only to a certain primitive custom<sup>1</sup>, and to the restoration not of any practice recently fallen into desuetude, but of a godly discipline exercised in the earliest ages at a certain period of the year; and if it be borne in mind that, in the “*Reformatio legum*,” which is commonly ascribed to Archbishop Cranmer, public penance is prescribed as the punishment of scarcely any other offence but that of perjury, whilst imprisonment is proposed as an ordinary punishment, we may be allowed to conjecture, that when the writer of the Commination Service suggested the restoration of a practice usual in the

<sup>1</sup> Mention is made of this practice in the Canons enacted under King Edgar “*Hæ consuetudines trans mare observantur; id est, quod quilibet episcopus sit in sede episcopali sua die Mercurii, quem caput jejunii vocamus; tunc unusquisque eorum hominum qui capitalibus criminibus polluti sunt, in provincia ista, eo die ad illum accedere debet, et peccata sua illi profiteri, et ille tum præscribit eis pœnitentiam, cuique pro ratione delicti sui; eos qui eo digni sunt, ab Ecclesiastica communitate segregat, et tamen ad propriam eorum necessitatem animat et hortatur; et ita postea, cum illius venia, domum redeunt.*” *Ancient Laws and Institutes of England*, vol. ii. p. 267.



Primitive Church, of making the first day of Lent the day of public penance, it was with the view of limiting, instead of extending the practice of this punishment, of which there is reason to believe, that the commonness of it at the period of the Reformation had destroyed the efficacy. If, as will be hereafter pointed out, discipline was less exercised in the Ecclesiastical Courts during the reign of Edward VI. than in that of his predecessor, it is still incredible, that the passage quoted from the Communion Service contains any allusion to such a deficiency of spiritual authority; the Book of Common Prayer having been not only compiled, but also printed within the short period of sixteen months after the accession of Edward to the Crown, King Henry VIII. having departed this life on the 28th of January, 1546-7, and the Prayer-book having been printed in June, 1548<sup>2</sup>.

It appears to me that a very erroneous idea is generally entertained of the origin of the Ecclesiastical Courts of this country; the Ecclesiastical jurisdiction being considered, as if it were not only an encroachment upon the liberty of mankind in general, but also something foreign to our National Jurisprudence, and alien from its spirit; an instance of successful usurpation by the Church upon the authority of the State. It is not necessary to enter upon the argument, whether the care of Religion ought not to form a branch in the science of Jurisprudence amongst a nation professedly Christian, or whether it is right, that violations of the laws of Nature and of God should be regarded by the State as subjects of punishment, on no other ground, and in no other degree, than as they are injurious to individuals, and disturb the public peace. It is universally admitted, that the Common Law of this country is of purely Anglican origin; but whatever may be its present condition, and whatever theories may thence be deduced, as illustrative of its fundamental principles, I venture to

<sup>2</sup> Strype's Memorials, vol. iii. p. 136.

assert that, according to the Ancient Constitution of England, the care of religion and the enforcement of obedience to the Laws of God was one object of the Common or National Law, and that the Ecclesiastical Courts were, from a period at least as early as the reign of Canute, instruments authorized by the State to take charge of the public morals, and to punish those who offended against the laws of God. Religion was formerly considered the means in the hands of the State of promoting the public good, and accordingly the Law enjoined not only the preservation of Peace, but the observance of Religion.

The English Jurist invariably teaches, that if we would trace the Common Law of England to its primæval source, we must search for it in the legislation of the Anglo-Saxon and Anglo-Norman kings; nor will the learned Antiquary be less ready to acknowledge, that the differences by which the inhabitants of this country, as respect their social condition, are distinguished from the continental nations, are referable to peculiar laws respecting the possession and rights of property which existed prior to the Conquest. The Anglo-Saxon laws were deeply marked with the impress of religion, and this to such an extent, that it is scarcely possible to separate the Ecclesiastical from the Secular enactments; and as the laws for Secular purposes do not appear to have been promulgated solely by the advice of the laity, so neither were laws relative to the profession and observance of the Christian religion, nothing more than the Constitutions and Canons of Ecclesiastical councils. The Union between the Church and State was complete and entire; the same authority and the same assemblies of great men, which defined the rights of property and the rule of justice between man and man, prescribed the conduct which every man was publicly to observe as a member of the State in subordination to the law of God. The truth of this statement will appear from the following passages in the Anglo-Saxon Laws, which are quoted as con-

tained in the work published by the Record Commission, entitled, "Ancient Laws and Institutes of England."

The Laws of Wihtræd, King of the Kentish men, who died A.D. 725, were enacted by a convention of the great men<sup>3</sup>, and relate chiefly to religious duties and offences, to the observance of the Sabbath and the prohibition of heathen worship<sup>4</sup>.

Alfred succeeded to the crown of Wessex in 871. The first part of his Laws contains not only the Ten Commandments, but many enactments almost literally transcribed from the book of Exodus, but in which the Vulgate, from which they may be supposed to have been taken, is "so far departed from by omissions, amplifications, or substitutions, as to preserve very little resemblance with the presumed original<sup>5</sup>." At the end of the first part of Alfred's law it is asserted, "These laws were shown by Alfred to his 'witan,' and by them declared good to be holden<sup>6</sup>;" but whether this allegation refers or not to the second part, rather than to this part which is taken from Scripture, it is equally true, that the Secular and Ecclesiastical laws of this monarch are inseparably combined, and that the influence of religion was united with the kingly power in checking the progress of vice, and in securing the public peace. Whether the law of Alfred<sup>7</sup> which forbid that "bocland" which had been entailed upon a family, should be given to others than kinsmen, has reference to a testamentary disposition of the property, may be questioned; a stronger proof cannot however be adduced to show in what manner the Kingly and the Episcopal authority acted together, than the provision, that the proof of the "bocland" being free from entail was to be made "in the presence of the King and of the Bishop before the kinsmen" of the possessor.

The Laws of Ina, King of Wessex, though enacted at as early a period as those of Wihtræd, King of Kent, are noticed

<sup>3</sup> A. L. vol. i. p. 37.

<sup>4</sup> pp. 40—43.

<sup>5</sup> See notes of the Editor of the Anglo-Saxon Laws, p. 54.

<sup>6</sup> p. 59.

<sup>7</sup> p. 89. Compare vol. ii. p. 456. XLl.

in this place, because they are found in the MS. appended to the Laws of Alfred: they contain a few enactments<sup>8</sup> relative to religion, but the authority which enacted them was that of the "ealdormen" and "witan" as well as of the Bishops.

The preface to the Laws of Edward and Guthrum illustrates in a remarkable manner the position, that in the Anglo-Saxon times the care of religion was an intrinsic part of the National law; it is therein declared, that the two princes "ordained that they would love one God, and zealously renounce every kind of heathenism. And they established worldly rules also for these reasons, that they knew, that else they might not many control, nor would many men else submit to divine 'bōt'<sup>9</sup> as they should; and the worldly 'bōt' they established in common to Christ and to the king, whensoever a man would not lawfully submit to divine 'bōt' by direction of the Bishops<sup>1</sup>."

The preface to the Secular Laws of Edmund is to the same effect, "Edmund the king makes known to all people both old and young that are in his dominions, that which I have deliberated with the council of my 'witan' both Ecclesiastic and Secular, first how I might most promote Christianity. Then seemed it to us, first, most needful that we should most firmly preserve our peacefulness and harmony among ourselves throughout all my dominion<sup>2</sup>."

The Laws of Edgar, which, as well as those of former kings, recognized the payment of Church scot and Tithes, and the observance of Festivals and Fasts, were enacted, not in any Ecclesiastical synod but with the council of the Witan<sup>3</sup>.

The Laws of Ethelred, who died in 1016, are of a very remarkable character, being, if we may so speak, still more Religious: it is needless to refer to particular enactments, I shall content myself with quoting but one passage, which

<sup>8</sup> pp. 103, 104.

<sup>9</sup> "Bōt," amends, compensation.

<sup>1</sup> p. 167. Compare vol. ii. p. 478, where the phrase "would not lawfully submit to divine bōt," is translated, "ubicunque recusabitur lex Dei juste servari."

<sup>2</sup> p. 247.

<sup>3</sup> p. 263.

not only proves incontrovertibly that the profession of Christianity is a fundamental principle of the Anglican constitution, but also shows by what steps and with what intent the Divine Law became an intrinsic part of the Common Law of England. "It is very justly incumbent on Christian men "that they may diligently avenge any offence against God. "And wise were those Secular 'witan' who to the Divine "Laws of right added secular laws for the peoples govern- "ment, and directed the 'bôt' to Christ and the king, that "many should thus of necessity be compelled to right. But "in those 'gemots' though deliberately held in places of "note after Edgar's lifetime, the laws of Christ waned and "the kings laws were impaired. And then was separated, "what was before in common to Christ and the king in "secular government. And it has ever been the worse "before God and before the world, but it may now come to "an amendment, if God will it. And an amendment however "may yet come, if it be diligently and earnestly undertaken. "And if any one will properly cleanse the land, then must "he inquire and diligently trace where the criminals have "their dwelling, who will not desist, nor make 'bôt' before "God; but wherever they may be found, let them be com- "pelled to right willingly or unwillingly, or let them alto- "gether withdraw from the country unless they submit and "turn to right<sup>4</sup>."

These references to the Anglo-Saxon Laws which exhibit a continuous chain of legislation, terminating with the death of Ethelred in 1016, exactly half a century before the Conquest, are proofs of the assertion, that the care of Religion was one object of the Common or National Law; but they can be regarded only as intimations of the existence of an Ecclesiastical jurisdiction. We find, however, in the Laws of Cnut distinct evidence, not only that the Divine Law was a part of the National code, but also that the courts of justice

<sup>4</sup> p. 349.



took cognizance of offences against the Law of God, and caused the offender to make amends for his transgression.

At the Shiregemot, which, by the Law of Cnut, was held twice in the year, the Bishop of the shire and the Ealdorman were both present, and they were directed "to expound (*tæcan*) as well the law of God as the secular law<sup>5</sup>." And in a subsequent law, which speaks of the award of damages or amends for wrong, the following rule is prescribed: "Always as a man is mightier or of greater degree, so ought he the more thoroughly to make 'bōt' for injustice before God and before the world. And let divine 'bōt' be earnestly and constantly sought, according as the books prescribe, and let Secular 'bōt' be sought according to Secular Law<sup>6</sup>." If by Secular "bōt" (as is evident) is meant amends for transgression of Secular Laws; the term Divine "bōt" cannot have any other meaning than amends for violation either of the Divine Law itself, or of the Laws of the State relative to Religion. Nor can the offences here spoken of, be any other than those, which in the ordinance of William the Conqueror, for the separation of the Ecclesiastical from the Secular jurisdiction, are described as "*placita de legibus episcopalibus*," and "*causæ quæ ad regimen animarum pertinent*."

It was not by the mere authority of the Church, or in compliance with any foreign influence, that the Ecclesiastical and Secular Laws of Cnut were promulgated, but by the King himself with the consent of his "*witan*<sup>7</sup>;" and it is among the Secular and not among the Ecclesiastical Laws of that monarch, that we find it enacted, that "if any one swear a false oath on a relic and he be convicted, let him forfeit his hands or half his *wēr*, and let that be common both to the lord and to the Bishop, and let him not thenceforth be oathworthy, unless he the more thoroughly before God make 'bōt' and find him 'borh'<sup>8</sup>" that he will ever after

<sup>5</sup> p. 387.<sup>6</sup> p. 399.<sup>7</sup> p. 359.<sup>8</sup> "Borh," security.

“abstain from the like <sup>9</sup>,” and it is among the same laws that we find it enacted, that in certain cases of murder, in the case of adultery, and incest, and failure of lād or purgation, the Bishop was to adjudge the bōt or amends <sup>1</sup>.

The general character of the Anglo-Saxon Legislation is thus indicative of the closest union between the Church and the State, between the Divine and the human Law; one system of jurisprudence defined the Legal rights of the Clergy and of the Laity; the submission of the Church to the authority of the State was as complete, as was the recognition made by the State of the Law of God, as a rule of life and conduct, the infraction of which the State would not by any means permit to be unpunished.

With the reign of Cnut ends the period of genuine Anglo-Saxon Legislation. It is remarkable that we know the Laws of Edward the Confessor, or rather the Customs which are said to have existed in his time, from no other source than from what appears to be a return to an inquisition made by the Conqueror, in the fourth year after his acquirement of the Crown of England. The document containing the result of this inquiry is extant, under the title, “*Leges Regis Edwardi Confessoris* <sup>2</sup>,” and, as we may conclude from the Preface, the inquiry was made in the same manner as that to which we owe the Domesday; a jury of twelve men being impanelled, in each county, to declare the laws and customs of the kingdom. The earlier part of this compilation harmonizes in spirit with the Laws of preceding Kings, and shows how earnestly the State watched over the rights of the Clergy and the interests of religion; it is, however, chiefly valuable to us, as enabling us to trace the course of events, which probably led to the separation of the Secular from the Ecclesiastical jurisdiction by the subsequent ordinance of the Conqueror.

The following extract from the Laws of Edward the Con-

<sup>9</sup> p. 399.

<sup>1</sup> p. 407.

<sup>2</sup> p. 442.

fessor illustrates both the position which the Anglo-Saxon Bishops held, as members of the State, and probably also the process by which the Ecclesiastical and Secular jurisdictions were afterwards disunited:—

“ Si aliquis excommunicatus ad emendationem ad episcopum venerit, absolutus eundo et redeundo pacem Dei et sanctæ Ecclesiæ habeat. Quod si aliquis ei forisfecerit, episcopus faciat suam justiciam. Et si pro justiciâ episcopi emendare noluerit, ostendat regi, et rex constringat forisfactorem ut emendet cui forisfecit, et episcopo et sibi; et sic juste gladius gladium juvabit.”

*“ De justiciâ sanctæ Ecclesiæ.*

“ Ubique justiciâ regis vel alia quælibet justiciâ cujuscunque tenuerit placita vel justiciam, si minister episcopi fuerit et ostenderit causam sanctæ Ecclesiæ, ipsa prius ad finem deducatur, ad quem finem poterit rationabilius eo die. Justum est etiam, ut Dominus ubique per servos suos honoretur.”

*“ De libertate eorum qui de feudis Ecclesiæ tenuerint.*

“ Quicumque de Ecclesia tenuerit vel in feudo Ecclesiæ manserit, aliubi extra curiam ecclesiasticam non placitabit, si in aliquo forisfactum habuerit, donec quod absit, in curia ecclesiastica de recto defecerit<sup>3</sup>.”

In order to a right understanding of the custom thus set forth, as existing in the Confessor's reign, it is necessary to bear in mind, not only that the Bishops of that age were possessors of numerous and extensive manors, but also that wherever they had upon those lands the privileges of “Saca et soca, tol et theam, et infangenethf,” the possession of those privileges, carried with it the right to hold a baronial or manorial court<sup>4</sup>. By virtue of this privilege, as we read in

<sup>3</sup> p. 443.

<sup>4</sup> p. 451.

the Domesday survey<sup>5</sup>, respecting the City of Canterbury, the Archbishop claimed "*forisfacturam in vicis extra civitatem ex utraque parte ubi terra sua est.*" The Baronial rank of the Archbishop is also further evidenced by the return of the number of "*Milites Archiepiscopi,*" who held lands of the Archbishoprick. The mention, therefore, of a "*Curia Ecclesiastica,*" in the passage above cited, does not imply the existence of Ecclesiastical Courts, properly so called, but rather of Baronial Courts belonging to the Bishops; the truth of which statement is further confirmed by the right of holding pleas in such courts, being limited expressly to the tenants and inhabitants of the Episcopal lands; and the effect of the declaration of the custom would be simply that of preserving the baronial rights of the Bishops, and confirming their manorial jurisdiction by the intervention, when necessary, of the King's courts.

It may be doubted whether the *placita*, above alluded to as "*causæ sanctæ Ecclesiæ,*" the prior hearing and determination of which in any court of justice was conceded as a mark of respect to religion, were causes of a purely religious nature. But since the right of priority of hearing is mentioned in the Laws of H. I.<sup>6</sup>, "*Agantur primo debita vere Christianitatis jura—Secundo regis placita;*" and in the same Laws, there is the following remarkable notice of the intervention of the Secular authority, in aid of the enforcement of religious duty<sup>7</sup>, "*Ubicunque recusabitur lex Dei juste servari, secundum dictionem episcopi, cogi oportebit per mundanam potestatem, necessaria siquidem justitia et districtio secularis in divinis plerumque legibus et secularibus institutis, quia plures aliter a suis pravitatibus revocari nequeunt, plures ad Dei cultum ac legalitatis observantiam inclinari nolunt; unde pro multa malorum infestatione, commoda pacis dispensatione provisum est, ut graviora placita magisque punienda soli justitiæ vel miseri-*

<sup>5</sup> Vol. i. fol. 2. a.<sup>6</sup> p. 514.<sup>7</sup> p. 522.

“ cordiæ principis addicantur, ut venia petentibus et pœna  
 “ peccantibus abundantius habeatur,” I am inclined to the  
 opinion, that the “ Causæ Ecclesiæ,” mentioned in the Law of  
 the Confessor, might occasionally be causes, as well those purely  
 religious, as those of a mixed character relating to the tem-  
 poralities of the Church. But however this may be deter-  
 mined, the fact, that at the time of the Conquest the Bishops  
 were possessed of Baronial Courts, would seem to have pre-  
 pared the way for the following ordinance of the Conqueror,  
 which prohibited purely religious causes from being adjudged  
 by the Court of the Hundred, and forbad lay judges to pre-  
 side in causes which pertained “ ad regimen animarum.”  
 “ Propterea mando et regia auctoritate præcipio, ut nullus  
 “ episcopus vel archidiaconus de legibus episcopalibus am-  
 “ plius in hundret (see the law of Cnut above cited) placita  
 “ teneant, nec causam quæ ad regimen animarum pertinet  
 “ ad iudicium sæcularium hominum adducant, sed quicumque  
 “ secundum episcopales leges de quacumque causa vel culpa  
 “ interpellatus fuerit ad locum, quem ad hoc episcopus ele-  
 “ gerit vel nominaverit veniat, ibique de causa vel culpa  
 “ sua respondeat, et non secundum hundret, sed secundum  
 “ canones et episcopales leges rectum Deo et episcopo suo  
 “ faciat<sup>s</sup>.”

The change thus made in the practice of the Courts amounted to no more than this,—the giving to the Bishops, already possessed of Baronial Courts, the right to decide causes of religion in Courts, where none but Ecclesiastics presided; and if we bear in mind the religious character of the fundamental Laws of England in that age, it must be evident, that these proceedings of the Conqueror did not introduce any new Jurisdiction, or make any real alteration in the Law. The tribunal was no longer of a mixed character; the Laity were no longer united with the Clergy, but the Law, which was to be enforced, was the same as before. If Laymen had before pronounced judgment in the Court of the Hundred, “ secundum Episcopales leges et secundum

<sup>s</sup> p. 495.

canones," the Bishops were henceforth to pronounce the same judgments, in their own Courts, according to the same Law.

Enough, perhaps, has been already adduced in proof of the assertion that the Anglo-Saxon laws had recognized an Ecclesiastical Law as a part of the Common Law, which derived its authority from the Crown and State of England without the intervention of any foreign influence or jurisdiction; and were I to compress my argument within the smallest compass, it would be contained in the following proposition:—That the power of Citation which the Ecclesiastical Courts have ever possessed, and by virtue of which they caused persons to answer for various moral and religious offences, pertaining "*ad regimen animarum*," and which Citation was enforced against contumacious persons by the authority of the Crown, was not acquired by the Bishops, through the growing influence of the Court of Rome, or by the silent introduction of the Canon Law, but that having been in Anglo-Saxon times exercised by a mixed tribunal, it was, by the ordinance of the Conqueror, vested in the Bishops alone.

I am anxious to press this point upon the attention of my readers; as proving that whatever connexion between England and Rome, was in after-ages established through the medium of appeals to the Court of Rome, the authority, which was exercised by the English Ecclesiastical Courts as exhibited in the present work, was an authority not introduced into this country from Rome, but one of as purely English origin, as the whole Common Law of England, proceeding from the great councils of the nation which voluntarily and freely admitted the law of religion, as a branch of the national jurisprudence, ages before the Roman Canon Law became known as a system, by means of the compilation of Gratian's *Decretum*, towards the close of the 12th century.

It would be foreign to my present purpose, to notice the aggressions, which at subsequent periods were made by the Papal See upon the independence of the Eng-



lish Church, notwithstanding the severe enactments which were from time to time made by Statute Law against these encroachments; or to give a history of the political and legal condition of this country during the centuries prior to the Reformation, when the independence both of the English Crown and of the Anglican Church was often sacrificed by appeals to the Court of Rome; I go on to observe, that throughout the whole course of English Legislation upon the subject of the Ecclesiastical jurisdiction, scarcely a single passage can be discovered, from which it can be fairly argued that the State was unfavourable to its exercise, when confined within its lawful sphere. I freely admit that the Churchmen of the twelfth and succeeding centuries had far too high notions of the nature of the Church, as being not only an Heavenly, but also a Worldly Kingdom, of which the Pope was Supreme Head<sup>9</sup>: nor is it surprising, that they willingly cherished an error so flattering to their spiritual pride, when even their Sovereigns, at such times as it suited their Temporal interests, were willing to avail themselves of the authority of the Papal See, and the terrors of excommunication, to crush opposing factions. But, on the other hand, I am of opinion, that this conduct, whether pursued by Prelates or by Kings, was in violation of the independence of the Anglican Church, and contrary to the dignity of the Imperial Crown of England; and that, inconsistent as was the conduct of Henry the Eighth, in first crouching at the feet of the Papal throne, and then declaring his independence of the very tribunal, from which he had

<sup>9</sup> That Churchmen, prior to the Reformation, should have held these opinions, is not surprising, when we find a learned Italian Canonist, Ferraris, in a book printed in 1782, thus describing the Papal power, and quoting in illustration of the statement the Decretum of Gratian and the Extravagantes of John XXII. and Boniface VIII.—“*Deveniendō igitur ad Papæ auctoritatem. Papa est quasi Deus in Terra, Unicus Christi fidelium Princeps, Regum omnium Rex maximus, Plenitudinem potestatis continens, cui Terreni simul ac Coelestis imperii Gubernacula ab Omnipotente Deo credita sunt.*”—Ferraris, *Prompta Bibliotheca*, v. Papa, Art. ii. 18. This work was authorized by the Superiors of the Franciscan Order in 1745.



sought justice; he did but act in strictest accordance with the principles of the ancient Law of England, when he declared, that the Church of England had always enacted her own laws; and that all Legal jurisdiction<sup>1</sup>, Secular as well as Ecclesiastical, emanated from the Crown.

A part of the opposition made by Churchmen to the authority of the Crown, in times subsequent to Becket's elevation of the see of Canterbury, undoubtedly owed its origin to the opinion, that the Church is a body, not only abstractedly and in idea, but also in truth and reality, separate from the State, of which the Bishop of Rome is the Sovereign Head, and that Churchmen are consequently exempt from any temporal jurisdiction exercised by Laymen. The process, by which the assumption of a Supreme and Spiritual power passes into the exercise of Temporal sovereignty, is one of the simplest kind; it is exemplified by the whole history of the Court of Rome, and by the fact, that there is not a single kingdom in the world, which has ever recognized the spiritual powers of the Pope, without discovering, that the external affairs of the State, and even the temporal interests of the people, are at once subjected to his influence, as matters of which, in his high capacity as Christ's Vicar upon earth, charged with the care of all the flock, he has a right to take cognizance, and upon which, in their connexion with the preservation of the faith and the welfare of Holy Church, he is bound to give his counsel for the guidance of the faithful, even in questions which affect their allegiance to the person of the Sovereign.

From the acknowledgment of the Pope as the Spiritual Head of the Church, Becket and his followers drew the conclusion, not only that Spiritual men, but also that their Temporal possessions in lands, benefices, and tithes, were free from any other than a Spiritual controul. There was accord-

<sup>1</sup> The reader is requested to bear in mind the distinction between "Legal Jurisdiction" and "Spiritual Authority." The authority which the Ministers of Religion possess as Spiritual Pastors is of Divine origin; but their Secular rights and authority are derived from human laws.

ingly a perpetual struggle to prevent the rights which the Laity possessed in advowsons, and the claims which they had upon real property in the hands of the Clergy, from being adjudged in the King's Courts. Such was the general nature of those disputes between the Clergy and Laity, which have been so frequently and erroneously described not merely as contests between the Church and State, but as oppositions between the Ecclesiastical and the Common Law.

The Clergy claimed for their own persons an exemption from the Secular jurisdiction, and from Secular punishment<sup>2</sup>. The well-known privilege of "Benefit of Clergy" is a proof that the Temporal Courts were not unwilling, to a certain extent, to recognize the claim; and yet it is to be observed, that the denial of this privilege forms scarcely more than a single item in those complaints made by the Clergy in the reigns of Hen. III., Edw. I., and Edw. II. against the encroachments of the Temporal Courts, which were embodied in Articles entitled "Gravamina Cleri." In those times it was not the State, which complained of the power of the Clergy, but it was the Clergy, who complained of the violation of their privileges, which they asserted to belong to them by the ancient laws of the kingdom, and to have had confirmed to them by all the Royal Charters. The contest between the Crown and the Clergy was rather Legal than Religious, neither was it the question whether the Roman or the English Law should prevail, but whether the subject matter of a cause belonged to the Temporal or Spiritual Court. The union, in the persons of the Bishops, of Baronial privileges and Spiritual authority, the mixed nature of the property of Ecclesiastics, many of whom held by birth or by purchase

<sup>2</sup> If the passage in the Laws of Henry the First—"De illis qui ad sacros ordines pertinent, et eis qui sacris ordinibus promoti sunt, coram prælatis suis est agendum de omnibus inculpacionibus maximis vel minoribus," be, as some have considered, a proof of the antiquity of this claim of exemption from secular jurisdiction, the conduct of Becket in resisting the Constitutions of Clarendon, may appear to have been better founded upon legal principles, than is generally supposed. See A. L. p. 555 and the note.

lay fees, together with Ecclesiastical revenues, the circumstance of the same layman holding lands by different tenures, one part of his estates being held of the Church, whilst another part was held either of the King, in capite, or of some Lord by customary tenure or other service; such mixed natures of rights and of property could not exist without frequent perplexity, leading to acts of apparent injustice, and causing frequent litigation. When the Clergy demanded freedom of action in matters purely religious, compliance with their requests does not seem to have been denied; but when the temporal rights of the Crown and of the Laity were in question, no other concessions were made by the State, than were consistent with the preservation of those rights, and the authority of the Temporal Courts over all property not justly held in Mortmain. It may be remarked, that these contests between the Church and the Crown occupy that period in the history of the English Law, during which that Law was, as it were, hewn out from the rock, and in which it received its definite shape and proportion. If the Church was contending for her liberties, the Barons were also contending for their feudal privileges, and both the Clergy and the Barons were frequently united against the Crown. The final establishment of the paramount authority of the Crown in this country, over both the Barons and the Prelates, put an end to contention, and with the recognition of a well-defined law peace came in, and harmony was established among all orders of men.

There is a general tendency amongst the writers of the legal history of this country, to represent the Church and State as distinct bodies engaged in a perpetual warfare with each other. The Constitutions of Clarendon of Henry II.; the Statute of Circumspecte Agatis of Edward I.; and the Articuli Cleri of Edward II., are mentioned as curbs placed upon the growing insolence of the Clergy, and evidences that the Temporal and Ecclesiastical Courts of this country are based as it were upon antagonist principles. It requires,

however, nothing more than a calm perusal of those Enactments to discover, that nothing was farther from the intention of those Monarchs, than the destruction of the authority of the Church; and that, whilst they desired to preserve the Rights of the Crown, and the due subjection of the persons and property of the Clergy to the Law of the kingdom, the Statutes which they enacted rather confirmed, than weakened, the authority of the Ecclesiastical Law, when exercised within its proper sphere. Able, as we now are, to form a calm judgment upon the legal effect of those proceedings, it is not beside the truth to say, that we may now regard those Statutes, as declarations of the nature of the English Ecclesiastical Law, and evidences of the powers, which by the Common Law of England properly belonged to the Ecclesiastical Courts.

It may be true, that by the Constitutions of Clarendon, Henry II. "checked the power of the Pope and of the Clergy, and greatly narrowed the total exemption which they claimed from the Secular jurisdiction<sup>3</sup>;" but this is not all the information which is to be derived from that interesting document. The chief object of the Constitutions was doubtless that of asserting the jurisdiction of the King's Courts in all causes relating to advowsons, and over such of the Clergy as were guilty of crimes, for which the subjects of the King were amenable to the temporal power; and the power of the Pope was indirectly restrained by the clause, which regulated the course of appeals in the Ecclesiastical Courts, and after appeal made from the Archbishop to the King, and the review of the cause by the Royal precept in the Archbishop's Court, forbade further proceeding being had without the Royal assent. But this object was accomplished not by destroying the Ecclesiastical jurisdiction over the King's subjects, but by regulating the exercise of it, so that, according to the different nature of the cause, judgment should be given in the one Court or the other. There is not the slightest

<sup>3</sup> Blackstone, vol. iv. p. 422.

intimation in any one of the Constitutions of Clarendon of any intention to disturb the lawful exercise of the judicial authority of the Prelates, or of any hostility, if we may so term it, existing between the two jurisdictions ; on the contrary, in the 13th Constitution, the King and the Prelates are combined to maintain each other's rights to forfeitures ; and in the 6th Constitution the power of the Spiritual Court over the Laity was more than confirmed by the clause which legalized presentments, and gave the Bishop power, in cases where he was unable to procure the accusation of a guilty person, through fear or favour, to summon a Jury of twelve of the neighbourhood, to declare, upon oath, their knowledge of the fact. If the unconstitutional claim of the Clergy to be exempted, even when criminally indicted, from the jurisdiction of the Crown, was checked by Henry II., it is not less evident that the purely Ecclesiastical discipline, for the authority of which under the Common Law of England I am contending, was recognized by that Monarch, as a part of the ancient customs of the realm.

The only instances which I have discovered of a direct interference on the part of the Sovereign to interrupt the exercise of Ecclesiastical Discipline, are to be met with in the reign of Henry III. ; and they are the more remarkable from this circumstance, that whilst the King in the exercise of his prerogative thought fit to restrain a particular Prelate from correcting the vices of the Laity, he left him full power to exercise his jurisdiction in Matrimonial and Testamentary Causes. It appears from Matthew Paris' history of the year 1246, that Hugo Grostete, Bishop of Lincoln, at the instigation of the Dominicans and Franciscans, had exercised a most severe inquisition, by his archdeacons and deans, upon the vices and immoralities of all orders of men, high and low, to the great injury of the good fame of many, and which had not before been accustomed. Grievous complaints were made of his conduct to the King, who issued a writ to the sheriff of the county of Hertford, enjoining him to prohibit

any of the Laity from appearing before the Bishop or his officials, except in Matrimonial and Testamentary Causes. The same historian also mentions in the following year Statutes<sup>4</sup> enacted to the same effect; in which notice occurs of the title "*Indicavit*," being that, by which the Writ of Prohibition was known. These proceedings, together with many others of a similar nature, drew forth from the Clergy a full volume of complaints, "*Gravamina Cleri*," digested under fifty heads, which they intended to bring before the King in Parliament. Matthew Paris has recorded the document in the "*Additamenta*" to page 951, under the title of "*Articuli pro quibus Episcopi Angliæ fuerant pugnaturi*"<sup>5</sup>. He has added another document, apparently prepared by the Bishops for the King's sanction, in order to the redress of their grievances, which they asserted to be in direct violation of the "*Chartæ communium Libertatum*," which had been conferred and granted by the King. I have thought it necessary to direct the reader's attention to these proceedings in the reign of Henry III., not only because they are proofs that there was an ecclesiastical jurisdiction,—that in Matrimonial and Testamentary Causes, which under no circumstances whatever did that monarch venture to interrupt; but because they confirm the account which I have given of the legal nature of those disputes between the Temporal and Ecclesiastical Courts, which continued through the earlier part of the succeeding reign, and which it was the object of subsequent statutes to allay.

When it is said of Edward I., who is styled the English Justinian, that "he gave a mortal wound to the encroachments of the Pope and his Clergy, by limiting and establishing the bounds of Ecclesiastical jurisdiction, and by obliging the Ordinary, to whom all the goods of

<sup>4</sup> I find no trace of the Statutes thus mentioned in the "*Statutes of the Realm*."

<sup>5</sup> See also the proceedings of the Provincial Council of Canterbury, A.D. 1257. Wilkins' *Concilia*, vol. i. p. 723.



“intestates at that time belonged, to discharge the debts of “the deceased”<sup>6</sup>,” great as is the authority from whence these dicta have proceeded, I humbly beg leave to express my dissent from statements, which are commonly considered as representing the legislation of Edward I. to be hostile to the Ecclesiastical jurisdiction. I may be in error as to the fact, but I have as yet been unable to discover any proof whatever, that the goods of persons dying intestate belonged to the Ordinary. That the disposition of them belonged to him, we know both from the very Statute (that of Westminster, 13 Edw. I.) above referred to; from the clause of Magna Charta, “*Si aliquis liber homo intestatus decesserit, bona sua per manum proximorum parentum suorum et amicorum et per visum ecclesiæ distribuantur*,” and also from the Constitution of Archbishop Boniface, which twenty-five years previous to the passing of that Statute had inflicted Ecclesiastical censures upon the Lords of Manors, for hindering the payment of the debts of such of their tenants as died intestate, and for preventing distribution being made by the Ordinary of a part of the effects for the benefit of the deceased. But that the goods of intestate persons were at that time so possessed by the Ordinary, as to be a kind of Ecclesiastical revenue, does not appear.

If, again, we carefully examine the Statute “*Circumspecte Agatis*,” it is evident from the very terms of it, that no description of it is more imperfect than that which (with all due deference to so great an authority as Lord Hale) has been given of it, “as declaring the limits and bounds of the Ecclesiastical jurisdiction.” It is indeed a most valuable record, even at the present day, of the power of the Ecclesiastical Courts; but if any power was limited by it, it was that of the Temporal and not of the Spiritual Courts; nearly every clause of the Statute being protective (as the title “*Circumspecte Agatis*” addressed to the King’s Judges implies) of the jurisdiction of the Bishop, and declaring the cases, in which a Prohibition does *not* lie.

<sup>6</sup> Blackstone, vol. iv. p. 425.



There is, also, one remarkable passage in the legislation of Edward I. to which (especially since he is styled our English Justinian) I cannot forbear to allude, and which proves in the clearest manner, how unfounded is the notion, that he entertained so much as the idea of foregoing, in any respect, the use, if I may so speak, of the Ecclesiastical law in his system of jurisprudence. As the Conqueror of Wales and the Legislator of the Principality, this Monarch published a code of laws to be observed in that country under the title "*Statuta Walliæ*." It was, we may imagine, competent to him in the plenitude of his power to have dispensed altogether with the Ecclesiastical jurisdiction; and yet when he introduced, as a new custom, into Wales the right of the wife to dower, he specially provided, that in case question should arise upon the lawfulness of the matrimony, the Bishop (as in the English Courts) should be called upon to try the question, and certify the King's Judges of the fact. In a similar manner in trials upon Writs of Mortdancestor in Wales, if the Deforciant pleaded the illegitimacy of the Demandant, the Bishop of the place was to make inquiry, and judgment was to be given "by the Bishop's testimony, whose testimony (it is added) shall not be gainsayed." I may notice one more instance in the reign of Edward I. corroborative of the opinion, that that Sovereign rather protected, than restrained the authority of the Ecclesiastical Courts. It is to be met with in the concluding clause of the Statute of Joint Tenants (34 Edw. I.), which restrained the granting of a Writ of Indicavit, or Prohibition before the admission of the libel and contestation of the suit in the Ecclesiastical Court.

The observation above made respecting the Statute "*Circumspecte Agatis*," that it protected, rather than limited, the exercise of the Ecclesiastical jurisdiction, is not less applicable to the Statute of 9 Edw. II., entitled "*Articuli Cleri*," which consists of sixteen cases put on the part of the Bishops, to each of which a specific answer is given; the answer in no

less than fourteen of those cases being confirmatory of the privileges of the Church, and formal renunciations on the part of the Crown of the improper exercise of Prohibition in the Temporal Courts. It was only when the Ecclesiastical Courts transgressed the proper limits of their jurisdiction, and took cognizance of Common Law Pleas pertaining to the Crown, and which were "not of Testament or Matrimony," that the Crown interfered (as in the case of the Statute of Edw. II., entitled "*Prohibitio Formata de Statuto Articuli Cleri*") to restrain the Ecclesiastical Courts<sup>7</sup>.

The concluding words of the "*Articuli Cleri*," are well worthy attention. In expressing "his desire to provide for the State of Holy Church of England, and for the tranquillity and quiet of the Prelates and Clergy," "the King willed and granted that the Prelates should use, execute, and practise for ever the jurisdiction of the Church in the premises, after the tenor of the answers aforesaid, without quarrel, inquieting, or vexation of us or of our heirs, or of any of our officers whatsoever they be."

I feel persuaded, that no unbiassed person can go through the perusal of the "*Statutes of the Realm*," from the earliest period even to the reign of Henry VIII., without coming to the conclusion, that the Ecclesiastical jurisdiction was fully recognized by the State, as a branch of the Common Law of the kingdom. I have been unable to discover in them the least trace of any opinion expressed, that the Authority of the Church was derived from any Foreign source, or that her rights were the result of concessions to the influence of Rome, rather than privileges pertaining to her by the ancient Constitution of England. I can find no other restraining Statutes (besides those relating to lands held in Mortmain), except those which forbad suitors in Temporal Courts to be cited for defamation (1 Edw. III.), which restrained excessive fees for Probates of Testaments (31 Edw. III. and 2 Hen.

<sup>7</sup> Compare also 2 Hen. V. 1. 3.

V. 2), and which prevented timber from being tithed as “*sylva cædua*” (45 Edw. III.). But there are, on the other hand, both Statutes which protected the exercise of the Ecclesiastical jurisdiction, as well as Statutes which enlarged its power over the person. In the former class may be placed,—that of 15 Edw. III. 1, which recognized the jurisdiction over usurers, and gave the Ecclesiastical judges the privilege of an injunction from the Chancery to the Temporal Judges, if they unduly interfered;—those of 25 Edw. III. and 9 Hen. VI. c. 11, which recognized the right of trial of Bigamy and Bastardy in the Spiritual Court, —that of 50 Edw. III., which permitted the Judges in the Ecclesiastical Court to proceed, after Consultation granted, notwithstanding Prohibition, if the cause were identically the same; and that of 1 Rich. II. against those who maliciously indicted persons at Common Law, who had sued them for tithes and other matters in the Spiritual Court. In the latter class may be placed the Statutes of 5 Rich. II. c. 2, 2 Hen. IV. c. 15, 2 Hen. V. 1; which, whilst they declared that judgment of Heresy belonged to the Spiritual Court, strengthened its power by permitting Heretics to be imprisoned, in order to compel them to answer; and that of 1 Hen. VII., which added a punishment, unknown before to the Ecclesiastical Law; that of imprisoning clerks, convicted of offences in the Bishop’s Courts. As to the various Statutes against obtaining Citations and Provisions of benefices, &c. from Rome, without the King’s license,—against the holding of benefices by aliens,—against the payment of increased annates,—and even the Statute of *Præmunire* itself, they are the very documents to which we may appeal for proofs, not only that the Sovereign power of England is free from subjection to Rome, but also that the Anglican Church was, in the earliest ages of our Legislation, not only a National, but also a free and independent Church.

Having thus reviewed the Ecclesiastical jurisdiction in connexion with the Statute law prior to the Reformation, I

might pass on to the consideration of the changes made in its exercise by the formal assumption of the supremacy under the reign of Henry VIII. It is, however, convenient to pause awhile, for the purpose of introducing a few observations upon the Constitution of the Ecclesiastical Courts, the Persons who there presided, and the Extent of the Practice in them.

The existence of a body of laws termed "*Canones et Leges Episcopales*," has been traced to a period antecedent to the Conquest, and prior to the invasion of the liberty of the Anglican Church, by the pretensions of the Papal See. So long as the *Placita*, whether Ecclesiastical or Secular, were held in the Court of the Hundred, it is most probable that the course of Legal proceeding was similar, whatever was the nature of the suit. When, however, we attempt to discover by what steps, and from what period, the course of the proceedings in these Courts became assimilated to the practice of the Canon and Civil Law, we have to lament that the subject is involved in obscurity. The change must in fairness be ascribed to the influence of foreign intercourse. The carrying appeals to Rome, (a practice restrained, though not wholly forbidden, in the Council of Clarendon,) would almost require, that the previous proceedings should be according to the forms of the Roman Courts, so that public convenience might combine with the secret wishes of the Episcopal Order to produce harmony and union between the practice of the English Courts and those of the Papal See. There is, however, no reason to believe, that the forms of justice which prevailed in the Court Christian were regarded with jealousy; and the fact, that the forms of the Court of Chancery and of other Temporal Courts in this kingdom, are after the model of the Civil Law, shows that our ancestors were in no case unwilling to supply the defects in the forms of our own Common Law by a recourse to foreign principles, whenever the necessities of justice rendered it expedient to call in such aid.

The Ecclesiastical Courts in this country, from the time of their separation from the Court of the Hundred in the reign of the Conqueror, have been essentially Episcopal, the authority there exercised being that which is vested in the Bishop, as the *Judex Ordinarius* of the Diocese. I am obliged to borrow from Van Espen, (*P. III. Tit. v. c. 1. De Judicibus Ecclesiasticis*;) an account of the principle of Delegation which gave to the Ecclesiastical Courts the machinery, by which their authority has been exercised in the Western Church. His account of the matter is, that as in the earliest ages the Episcopal power increased by the more frequent reference made to their judgment, the Bishops, finding themselves overwhelmed by the labour, first committed their authority to some Presbyter or to their Archdeacons. Custom, he adds, seems rapidly to have converted the delegated authority of the Archdeacons into an independent jurisdiction belonging of right to their office; upon which the Bishops, being jealous of this increase of the archidiaconal power, and finding themselves unable wholly to resume, or to exercise in their own persons the authority, which had been delegated to the Archdeacons, for the recovery of their jurisdiction, appointed their own Vicars or Officials to act as judges in their place by a Delegated authority. The existence of such Vicars-General and Officials is traced by this learned Canonist to the twelfth century. The progress of Delegation did not, however, stop here; for the inferior Prelates, the Abbots and Archdeacons, in their turn assumed a similar right of Delegation, and appointed their own Officials and other Officers to exercise jurisdiction in their name and place. The course of proceeding appears, however, to have varied according to local circumstances, and to have followed no fixed principle; and hence we may account for the remarkable differences which have existed in this country in the constitution of the Ecclesiastical Courts in the respective Dioceses; the jurisdiction in Contentious causes being in some cases wholly reserved to the Consistory of the Bishop, whereas in other Dioceses, the

Archdeacons, Abbots, Deans, and Prebendaries possessed an authority inferior to that of the Diocesan, only in respect of acts specially pertaining to the Episcopal office.

In five of the twenty-six dioceses of England and Wales each of which has its Consistory Court, the Bishops have also their Commissary Courts; but in only thirteen dioceses are the Archdeacons found to possess a Court with jurisdiction; the number of Decanal, Capitular, and other Courts subordinate, in a certain degree, to the Episcopal jurisdiction, is stated to be ninety-seven; there being also nearly one hundred smaller Courts wholly exempt from Episcopal authority, concerning the far greater number of which it is very doubtful, whether any trace at all remains of the original Delegation to them of the Ordinary jurisdiction. Of late years the inconvenience and inconsistency of this subdivision of Ecclesiastical authority has attracted the attention of the Legislature: but we must not imagine that in ancient times any evil ensued, or that discipline was thereby impeded; on the contrary, it would appear, that by the subdivision of the Ecclesiastical jurisdiction greater facilities were afforded for its exercise, and that however in later times the multiplicity of jurisdictions has proved practically inconvenient in respect of the granting probates of wills and administrations of estates, the case was quite the reverse, when men lived and died in the place or county in which they were born, and when they accounted it a privilege to have a peculiar jurisdiction at hand to which they could have resort, to give legal authority to testamentary papers, and to secure the due fulfilment of the deceased's will. The small extent of any Peculiar jurisdiction does not appear, if we might judge from a single instance which has come under my notice, to have caused the authority to be less vigorously exercised. The archives of St. Paul's Cathedral contain several documents, from which it appears that the Peculiar Court of the Dean and Chapter in the parish of Pelham, in the county of Hertford, was frequently held between 1297 and



1403, at which persons were proceeded against before the Official for immoral conduct, and excommunicated.

As an exemplification of the Judicial character of the ancient office of Archdeacon, it may be noticed, that such of the abbeys as possessed an extensive Ordinary jurisdiction, exercised it by means of an Archdeacon. At Glastonbury, at Croyland, and at Westminster, there were Archdeacons. The Abbey of St. Alban's possessed a jurisdiction exempt from the Bishop, exercised by an Archdeacon appointed by the Abbot, which extended over twenty-six parishes of the counties of Herts and Bucks. The Register of Wills, still extant, from the year 1408, and the Act Books of that Court, commencing in 1515, abundantly prove that the Testamentary, Civil, and Criminal jurisdiction of that small number of parishes, was extensive enough to give employment to a separate court, over which in later years a learned Doctor of Canon Law presided as the Archdeacon's Official, assisted by the Registrar, and attended by an adequate number of resident Proctors. The number of wills proved between 1412 and 1439 may be roughly estimated at three hundred and eighty<sup>8</sup>; and those between 1505 and 1536, at nearly seven hundred. Between the years 1515 and 1541, there were, at least, three hundred and fifty causes relative to marriage, tithes, defamation, &c. before the court, which held in the latter year no less than twenty-one sittings. It may be sufficient, as another proof of the quantity of business sped in these inferior Courts, to mention, that the Court of the Archdeacon of Colchester, held in the year 1636 forty-two Sessions at four different towns within the Archdeaconry.

The existence of so many Ecclesiastical Courts, all of which owe their origin to centuries preceding the Reformation, implies the general prevalence of the Ecclesiastical Law throughout the kingdom; and the Biography of the Prelates of our

<sup>8</sup> In the Court of the Archdeacon of London between 1395 and 1417, in twenty-two years, nearly 4000 wills passed under Probate and are recorded in the Register.



Church as it is exhibited in Bishop Godwin's "*Commentarius de Præsulibus Angliæ*," affords abundant evidence that the practitioners in it found in the knowledge of that system of jurisprudence, a source of wealth as well as a path to honour. The theological learning of the middle ages, as well as the universal dominion of the Papal See, is so interwoven with the Canon Law, that, in those ages, the learned Canonist and the learned Theologian were almost convertible terms. Becket was a Doctor in Canon Law, and Archdeacon of Canterbury, before he was made Chancellor of England, and subsequently advanced in 1162 to the See of Canterbury. Archbishop Peckham held the office of Auditor Causarum in the Court of Rome at the time of his election to the See of Canterbury, having studied the Civil and Canon Law in 1268 at Lyons. It was the proficiency of Archbishop Stratford in the practice of the Canon Law, and his conduct as Dean of the Arches, which recommended him to the notice of Edward II., and induced that monarch first to make him his secretary, and then to procure for him, by Papal Provision, the appointment to the Archbishopric in 1333. Simon of Sudbury, who was consecrated Archbishop in 1375, was, in early life, one of the Judges of the Rota in the Court of Rome. Archbishop Courtney, his successor in 1381, is related to have been a most diligent student in the Canon Law. Archbishop Chicheley, who was consecrated in 1414, was a Doctor in both Canon and Civil Law; and his zeal for the study of these Laws is manifested by the tenor of his foundation of All Souls' College, Oxford, the Fellows of which were divided into two classes, Jurists and Artists. Archbishop Stafford, who succeeded in 1443, had been appointed by his predecessor, Chicheley, Dean of the Court of Arches; and Archbishop Morton, who was consecrated in 1486, had practised as an Advocate in the same Court. The same course of life had also been pursued by Archbishop Warham, who was translated from the See of London to that of Canterbury in 1504. Numerous other prelates might be men-

tioned, as well as divines, of inferior rank, whose history illustrates this union of the study of law with that of theology. It is but an act of justice to add to our list the names of John de Athon and of William Lindwood, our two famous English Canonists : the former of whom was a Canon in the Cathedral of Lincoln ; the latter, first Dean of the Arches, and afterwards Bishop of St. David's in 1442.

Prior to the Reformation, few persons (if we take the See of Canterbury as an example of the rest of the kingdom) were elevated to the highest stations in the Church, but such as had acquired reputation in one of two different kinds of life, either in the retirement of the Cloister, or in the busy practice of the Ecclesiastical Courts ; I do not mean to underrate the theological attainments of those Prelates, or to insinuate that the men of that age, who acquired influence in the Monastery, or reputation as the Ecclesiastical Advocate or Judge, were not thoroughly versed in the Roman Catholic system of Theology. It must however be obvious, that whether it were the Monk or the Canonist, who was advanced to the Episcopal Order, they would be equally, though on different grounds, disposed, by the habits of their previous life, to maintain the Supreme authority of the Papal See, and to regard the successor of St. Peter as the Defender of all Religion, and the Source of all Law. It is not improbable, that Archbishop Cranmer might have been destitute of that freedom of thought, which he was called upon to exercise, had his earlier course more nearly resembled that of his predecessors. The discipline of the Monastic rule of life might have framed his mind to the habit of uninquiring submission to authority ; and self-interest, or the fear of the consequences of change, might have prevented his asserting the Legal Supremacy of the Crown against the Supremacy of the Pope, had he been, as was usual with Ecclesiastics of that period, what we should now call in ordinary language, a lawyer by profession. Cranmer is indeed known to us not as a Canonist, but as a Divine : it is evident, however, that he

was not unacquainted with the Canon Law; and it is not foreign to the subject to remark, that he owed his advancement, to the legal opinions which he had expressed respecting the validity of the marriage of Henry VIII. with the wife of his deceased brother, and to the circumstance of his having been one of the agents appointed to conduct the proceedings instituted by the King himself in the Pope's Ecclesiastical Court, for annulling the marriage between himself and Queen Catherine. During his residence at Rome, and whilst employed in suing on behalf of his Sovereign at the feet of the Roman Pontiff, he most probably discovered that the Canon Law was the chain, which bound the Crown of England in captivity to Rome, and that unless that tie were forcibly broken asunder, neither the Realm of England could be delivered from Foreign thralldom, nor Religion itself set free.

I now proceed to notice the changes which were made, as may be supposed, under the advice of Archbishop Cranmer, in the administration of the Ecclesiastical Law of our country, as the consequence of, and in connexion with, the assertion of the King's Supremacy. I must first observe, it was the Papal Canon Law, and not the Anglican Canon Law, (if I might be allowed so to term the Ecclesiastical part of our Common Law,) which that Prelate desired to destroy. And if we would learn by what means he accomplished this object, we must refer to the proceedings of the Royal Commissioners for the Visitation of the Universities<sup>8</sup>, which took place in 1535, within two years from the time of his consecration. By their authority various lectures on Divinity, Philosophy, Greek and Latin, were established in the different Colleges. And in the place of the Canon Law lecture, a Civil lecture was read in every college, hall, and inn. That these proceedings gave a deathblow to the regular study of the Canon Law, is evident from the fact, that from that time Degrees

<sup>8</sup> Strype, Memorials, i. cap. 29.

ceased to be taken in Canon Law, as a separate faculty. Not more than seven or eight persons, after that period, graduated at Oxford in Canon Law, and that under the description of Doctors *Utriusque Juris*. The circumstance that there “occurred not a third or fourth part of Bachelors of the Canon or Civil Law (especially the former) as before;” is noticed by Anthony Wood, in his *Fasti Oxonienses*, A.D. 1536, and he ascribes it to the dissolution of the religious houses. The real cause, however, must have been the open discouragement, by the King’s visitors, of the study of the Canon Law, and the fear which must have prevailed in the minds of the students, lest they should be suspected of denying the King’s Supremacy, whilst they studied a system of jurisprudence, the fundamental principle of which was the Universal Supremacy of the Papal See. The Civil Law was still a branch of study; and the practice of the Ecclesiastical Courts was soon transferred into the hands of the civilians<sup>9</sup>. The Canon or Pontifical Law thus ceased to be studied; not without injury to the study, perhaps, of that most valuable depository of the principles of equity and justice,—the Civil or Roman Law.

But though authority thus interfered to prohibit the study of the Canon Law, the Ecclesiastical Laws of England and the jurisdiction of the Ecclesiastical Courts were wholly unimpaired. Had it been otherwise, the Reformation in England would have been not merely a Religious Reformation, but a Political Revolution. In the Act of Parliament (24 H. VIII. c. 12.) for restraint of Appeals to Rome, the whole “Body Politick” which was subject to the Crown, is declared to consist of “the Spiritualitie” and “the Temporalitie,” that part of the said Body Politic called the Spiritualitie, now being usually called the English Church, having power when any cause of the Law divine happened to come in question, or of spiritual learning,” “without the intermeddling of any

<sup>9</sup> Vide Act of Parliament, 37 H. VIII. c. 17.

exterior person or persons, to declare and determine all such duties, and to administer all such offices and duties as to their rooms spiritual doth appertain." Whilst "the Law Temporal for trial of propriety of lands and goods, and for the conservation of the people of this realm in unitie and peace without ravyn or spoill, was, and yet is administered, adjudged, and executed, by sundrie judges and administers of the other part of the said Body Politike called the Temporalitie, and *both their auctorities and jurisdictions do conjoin together in the due administration of justice, one to help the other.*" The laws, also, which in the same Act are declared to have been enacted in the reigns of former kings to protect the royal prerogatives, liberties, and preheminences from the invasions of the See of Rome, were designed in the express words of this Act, "for the conservation of *the jurisdictions spiritual and temporal*" of the realm against annoyance from the same quarter. The two jurisdictions, it may by the way be remarked, are here described as deriving their laws from distinct sources, and as aiming at distinct objects; the spiritual jurisdiction being based upon the law divine, and having for its object the performance of moral duty, and the promulgation of Divine truth; whilst the temporal jurisdiction guarded the possession of property, and maintained the public peace. It would almost seem as if the writer of the preamble just quoted, had been recently reading the Anglo-Saxon laws which I have before quoted, so exactly does his account of the specific objects of the two jurisdictions, and of the authority of the Divine Law, as a rule of justice, agree with the maxims of those laws.

The Reformation, if under that general term we may include the whole series of events by which this country was freed from the authority of the Bishop of Rome, was in its commencement nothing more than a legal and political Reformation; a renunciation of the intrusive power of the Pope over the King's subjects, and an assertion of the competency of the Anglican Church to decide by her own tribu-

nals all questions relative to the Divine Law, and to spiritual learning. A Reformation in religion soon followed, but it was as a providential and not a necessary consequence. Had it been possible for the See of Rome to have renounced its pretensions to universal dominion, and at once upon Cranmer's accession to the Archiepiscopate to have acknowledged the independence of the Anglican Church, and the consequent validity of his sentence of divorce between Henry VIII. and Queen Catherine; at the same time accepting the proposals to come to a composition with the Crown upon the payment of Annates and first-fruits, (as suggested in 23 H. VIII. c. 20, and referred to in the subsequent Act 25 H. VIII. c. 20,) and thus to have converted the temporal authority of the See of Rome into a purely spiritual superiority, it is not improbable, that the condition of the Anglican and of the Gallican Church might have resembled each other, and that in both countries the whole power of the State might have been alike employed to stop the progress of a Reformation in Religion.

The rejection by the Crown of England of the Papal dominion, was not followed by any legal disorder. The Act of 24 H. VIII. c. 12, which forbade appeals to Rome, provided in its room an appeal to the Archbishops in person; but in the following year, by the 25 H. VIII. c. 19, an appeal to the King's Majesty in the King's Court of Chancery was substituted for the appeal to the Archbishop in person. The power of dispensation which had been before exercised by the Pope, was in like manner, and at the same time, vested in the Archbishop of Canterbury.

Of all the proceedings in the legal Reformation of the Church, consequent upon the assumption of the Supremacy by Henry VIII., that which by the extension of the royal prerogative effected the greatest alteration in the constitution, was produced by the Act of 26 H. VIII. c. 1, which gave to the King and his successors an authority co-ordinate with that of the Ecclesiastical Courts, and empowered



him "from time to time to visit, repress, redress, reform, order, correct, restrain, and amend all such errors, heresies, abuses, offences, contempts, and enormities, whatsoever they be, which, by any manner, spiritual authority, or jurisdiction, ought or may lawfully be reformed, &c., any usage, custom, foreign law, foreign authority, prescription, or any other thing or things to the contrary notwithstanding." By virtue of the authority thus granted to the Crown for the exercise of Ecclesiastical jurisdiction, the King delegated Cromwell to act as his Vicar-General<sup>1</sup> throughout the kingdom. That part of Cromwell's proceedings which respected the visitation of the Monasteries is most known to us; the authority, however, by which he acted, was like that of any Vicar-General or Official, a purely Ecclesiastical authority; the Ecclesiastical jurisdiction over the whole kingdom not being absorbed, but rather actively exercised by him as the Delegate of the Crown, which had been constituted the chief Ecclesiastical judge; and all the Bishops during the Royal visitation being inhibited the exercise of their jurisdiction, in the same manner as Bishops and Archdeacons are now inhibited during the time of an Archiepiscopal or Episcopal visitation.

These proceedings not only clearly prove, that the Ecclesiastical jurisdiction was not destroyed by the assumption of the Supremacy, but they go far to establish the position, that the Ecclesiastical jurisdiction is in itself a part of the English Common law, since at the very period in our history in which the authority of all Foreign law (and especially of the Papal Canon Law) was publicly renounced, the Crown itself is found enforcing a system of Ecclesiastical jurisprudence, which is expressly declared to be uncontrolled by any Foreign law or Foreign authority. The royal Ecclesiastical visitation of King Henry VIII. exercised its chief power in the visitation of Monasteries: there is reason, how-

<sup>1</sup> Cromwell, as Vicegerent, took precedence of the Archbishop. 31 H. VIII. c. 10.



ever, to believe, that pending the visitation, the usual Ecclesiastical business of the Local Courts proceeded without interruption; the Officials making no other change than that of adding to their names, as was the case in the Archidiaconal Court of St. Alban's, the words "*Regia auctoritate suffultus.*" Other facts might be adduced, to show that the rejection of the Papal authority did not impair in the slightest degree the exercise of Ecclesiastical jurisdiction. One circumstance may, however, be adduced in corroboration of the statement; namely, the Act of 32 H. VIII. c. 7, which conferred upon Laymen the right to sue in the Ecclesiastical Courts for the payment of tithes granted to them upon the dissolution of Monasteries, and which enacted, that they, who were guilty of subtraction of such tithes, should be punished by Ecclesiastical censures.

As it is evident from the foregoing observations that the Reformation rather established than diminished the legal authority of the Ecclesiastical jurisdiction in England, so also it may be made to appear, that as little injury was done to the Ecclesiastical Law. Much stress has been laid upon the enactments of three Acts of Parliament, 25 H. VIII. c. 19; 27 H. VIII. c. 15; 35 H. VIII. c. 16, which authorized the King to appoint thirty-two Commissioners to examine and reform the Canon Law; and which enacted, that such ordinances as should be made by the King and the thirty-two Commissioners, should be reputed and used for the King's Laws Ecclesiastical of this realm: as if the repudiation of the Papal Canon Law had left a void in the legal code, which it became necessary to supply. If, however, we attentively examine the terms of those Acts of Parliament, it will appear that the primary object contemplated in the appointment of that Commission, was the examination of the Ecclesiastical Laws which were then in existence, for the distinct purpose of abrogating such parts of them, as were found to be "prejudicial to the King's prerogative royal, or repugnant to the laws and statutes of the realm, or over much onerous

to his Highness and his subjects, whilst all such parts of them as should be approved, were, with the King's consent, to stand with their full strength and power."

These Acts distinctly point out what were the laws which the Commissioners were to examine and expurgate; namely, diverse Constitutions, Ordinances, and Canons, Provincial or Synodal, which had been enacted; such as the Clergy assembled in Convocation had the power to enact, but which in the Act of Submission, 25 H. VIII. c. 9, as recited in the 29 H. VIII. c. 15, the clergy promised "in verbo sacerdotii" they would never henceforth exact without the King's assent first obtained. The Code of laws thus referred to can be none other, than the well-known Constitutions of Otho and Othobon, and the Provincial Canons and Constitutions of the Archbishops. That the Constitutions of Otho and Othobon bear the name of these Papal legates, does not invalidate the assertion, that these Canons were laws of the Anglican Church. The councils at which the legate Otho presided in the year 1236, and that at which the legate Othobon presided in the year 1268, were both of them National Councils—they were publicly held in the Cathedral Church of St. Paul's, London, and were attended by the Archbishops of both provinces of Canterbury and York, as well as by other Bishops, Abbots, Deans, and Archdeacons; and though in both the preambles to the two sets of Constitutions the mission and presidency of the Legate is recited, the consent of the Council to the enactments is as distinctly declared. The Sovereign himself, though not present in the council, must be considered to have consented to these proceedings, as far as his consent would be deemed necessary, since the historians relate that Otho came as Legate at the express desire of Henry III., and that his presence gave offence to the people; and the part which Othobon took in his capacity of Legate in the disputes between that king and his barons, and his residence in the court of the Sovereign is sufficient proof, that the National Council at which he presided could not have been con-

voked without the assent, if not the direct authority, of the King.

The Provincial Constitutions intended to be submitted to the Commissioners, form a regular series of enactments commencing with the Archiepiscopate of Langton, who was consecrated in 1222, and terminating with the Archiepiscopate of Chicheley, who died in 1443. It is a remarkable fact, and strongly corroborative of the assertion made in 24 H. VIII. c. 12, that "the English Church has always been reputed and also found of that sort, that both for knowledge, integrity, and sufficiency of number, it hath always been thought, and is also at this hour, sufficient and meet of itself, without the intermeddling of any exterior person or persons, to declare and determine all such doubts, and to administer all such offices and duties as doth to their rooms spiritual pertain:" that of seventeen Archbishops who were consecrated to the See of Canterbury, from 1222 to 1443, no less a number than fourteen presided in synods and convocations, in which Canons were promulgated for the government of the Church; so regularly and constantly did the course of Ecclesiastical legislation proceed. And when it is borne in mind, that all these Canons, the production of more than two centuries of continual legislation, were enacted by the authority of the Anglican Church alone, without so much as an allusion to any implied necessity of their being confirmed by the authority of the Pope, we cannot surely avoid coming to the conclusion, that, as in the time of Henry VIII., the practice of the Church to make Canons for her own government, without exterior or foreign intervention, was considered to be a proof that that part of the Body Politic, which was called the Spirituality, was subject to no foreign power, so we also in the present age may appeal to the same historical fact, for proof of the declaration, which we solemnly make, "that no Foreign person, Pope or Potentate, hath, or ought to have, any power, authority, or jurisdiction, spiritual or temporal, within this realm."

The extent of this code of Anglican Canon Law is exhibited in a strong point of view, by the general structure of "Lindwood's Commentary upon the Provincial Canons;" a work, which I believe to be in itself unique in its design, and also invaluable, as bearing testimony to the fact, that England has always possessed a Canon Law of her own, based indeed upon the ancient Canon Law of the whole Western Church, but prevailing by force of her own Domestic legislation. The Decretal Letters of the Popes form the basis of the Roman or Pontifical Law; and it is not the language of exaggeration to state, that the principles of law contained in them have occupied the labours of hundreds of commentators. These Decretals are digested into five Books, which contain one hundred and eighty-five Titles. Our Canonist Lindwood, assuming as the basis of his work the Provincial Constitutions of our Archbishops, digested them upon the model of the Decretals into five correspondent Books, containing seventy-four Titles, each of which corresponds with some known Title of the Decretals; adding to it a perpetual gloss or commentary, which is not only explanatory of the text, but which may be considered as historical evidence of the recognition in our own country of those legal principles, which had been adopted in the Western Church. England, then, was found at the Reformation possessed of a Canon Law of her own, contained in her own Constitutions and Canons; they had been enacted in times of Papal usurpation, and contained in them some principles contrary to the Royal Prerogative, the correction of which was necessary to make the Spiritual and Temporal law harmonize together; but the whole body of the Law Ecclesiastical, with these exceptions, was confirmed, and remains as part of the English Law, unless altered by Acts of Parliament, unto this day.

It would be too great a digression, were we to inquire into the causes which delayed the appointment of the Commission above mentioned, and even in the reign of Edward VI. rendered abortive the design of Cranmer to remodel the

Ecclesiastical Laws. It would seem, that as the pretensions of the Church to the possession of a legislative authority, independent of the Crown, gradually subsided ; and as the erroneous opinions and practices sanctioned by the Constitutions and Canons of Papal times, were virtually renounced and abrogated by the Statute laws, which regulated contracts of marriage, and which gave to laymen authority to act as judges and advocates in the Ecclesiastical Courts,—by the Acts of Uniformity ;—by the promulgation of the Thirty-nine Articles,—and by the legal restriction of heresy to opinions condemned in the four general Councils,—the necessity of remodelling or expunging parts of the ancient Code gradually lessened. The Church found herself possessed, as this work will show, of full authority for the religious and moral government of the people ; her jurisdiction was entire, and nothing remained for her but to exercise it in due subordination to the Crown, and in strict accordance with the Christian faith, as purified from the superstitions and errors of Rome.

Having already shown that the wish expressed in the Communion Service for the restoration of a Primitive discipline, is improperly taken to be proof of the decay of the Ecclesiastical discipline under the growing influence of the doctrines of the Reformation, and directing my readers to the contents of the following work, for proof that that discipline was as rigorously exercised throughout the reign of Elizabeth, of James, and Charles, as in any former period, I must now advert to the condition of the Church during the reign of Edward VI., and request the reader's attention to the real source of the opinion, that the Reformation destroyed Discipline, and reduced the Church to her present powerless condition, as a moral governor of her people.

It must be acknowledged, that although the Acts of Parliament of the reign of Edward VI. contain abundant evidence of the recognition of the Ecclesiastical jurisdiction, there is reason to believe, that its power so far ceased for

a time to be exercised, as to justify the complaints made in the latter part of Edward's reign, that Discipline had need to be restored. The Records of the Consistory Court of London contain notices of Testamentary and Matrimonial causes, but I have been unable to discover any Acts' books relating to Criminal causes during the reign of that monarch; the series of precedents in the following work is, therefore, broken from the year 1546 to the year 1554. This abeyance of the power of the Ecclesiastical Courts appears to be as alluded to in the Act of 3 and 4 Edward VI. c. 11, for the nomination of Commissioners to peruse and make Ecclesiastical Laws; the preamble of which declares that the determination of Ecclesiastical causes hath not of long time been put in use, nor exercised, by reason, first, of the usurped authority of the See of Rome; and, secondly, because they were not perfectly understood nor known by the King's subjects. There were, however, other causes in operation.

It may safely be affirmed, that neither under the reign of Henry VIII., nor under that of Elizabeth, was the doctrine of the Supremacy of the King, as the source not only of Ecclesiastical but almost of Spiritual authority, maintained so highly as under that of the youthful Edward. Not only did the King assume, by the Acts of Parliament passed in the first year of his reign, the power of appointing to Bishoprics by Letters Patent, thereby abolishing the Canonical election by the Dean and Chapter, but it was also enacted in the same Act, that all Citations of parties into the Ecclesiastical Courts should be in the name and style of the King, the Teste being in the name of the Archbishop, or Bishop, or other persons having Ecclesiastical jurisdiction, who had commission and grant of authority Ecclesiastical immediately from the King's Highness. The seal of every Diocese was also to bear upon it the King's arms. The Ecclesiastical Law was indeed then recognized, but the right to exercise it was limited to such persons, as should receive



special authority<sup>1</sup>. The Dioceses of England were visited by a Royal Commission, and Royal injunctions issued for the Reformation of Religion, which the Bishops were commanded to obey; but it does not appear that the Ordinaries held their courts as heretofore. The people at large were thus set free from their former restraints, and, as might be expected, a general dissolution of manners was the result. It is certainly a most remarkable circumstance, that the very period of our history in which, by the authority of the Sovereign, Religion was reformed, should be that in which Discipline was most neglected. It is possible that Cranmer, in his zeal for the promulgation of a new code of Canon Law, might have considered it expedient to permit old principles to fall into abeyance: we find, however, in the Memorials of the reign of Edward VI., that the real cause of the decay of Discipline, was the unwillingness of the advisers of the King to commit any portion of the Ecclesiastical jurisdiction to Bishops, whom they deemed unworthy of confidence, a note to this effect being extant in the handwriting of the King himself in the year 1552<sup>2</sup>. "That it were very good that discipline went forth, so that those that should be executors of it were men of tried honesty, wisdom, and judgment. But because those Bishops who should execute it, some for Papistry, some for ignorance, and some for age, some for ill name, some for all these, are men unable to execute discipline, it is, therefore, a thing unmeet for those men." "Therefore, for the present, he resolved to set up discipline, and yet to keep it out of the hands of all the Bishops," as one of the King's memorials for religion written in October, 1552, assures us, wherein he made a memorandum for commissions to be granted to those Bishops that were grave, learned, wise, sober, and of good religion, for the executing of disci-

<sup>1</sup> The Commission of Edward VI. to the Dean and Chapter of St. Paul's, to exercise jurisdiction, was among papers which were in the possession of the Dean of St. Paul's in 1559. The Commission was dated March 1, 1546.

<sup>2</sup> Strype's Memorials, vol. iv. p. 141.



pline. How much evil had ensued from the temporary suspension of the power of the Ecclesiastical Courts, and the reservation of all Ecclesiastical power to the person of the King, may be gathered from a Royal proclamation, (Feb. 20, 1551,) prohibiting frays and fightings in Cathedral Churches, and bringing in horses and mules into the same. The extreme length to which the notion of the Supremacy was then carried, may also be perceived from the fact of the King, in 1551, granting licences of dispensation to several parties for eating flesh on Lent and other fasting days.

Upon the death of Edward and the accession of Mary, and the consequent restoration of the Ecclesiastical authority to the Bishops and other Ordinaries, the same Discipline which had existed before the Reformation was once more restored; and it continued, as the contents of this work show, unimpaired, until the year 1640. The statement, then, that Discipline was destroyed at the Reformation, is to a certain extent true, if we look only at the short reign of Edward; but it is also not less true, that the Discipline, which was then in abeyance, was afterwards revived, and fully maintained for nearly a century in our Reformed Church.

We find this difference in the condition of the Ecclesiastical Law under the reigns of Henry and of Edward, that whereas under both those monarchs designs were entertained for the reformation of old and the promulgation of new laws: in the former reign, the Sovereign assumed the Ecclesiastical jurisdiction, and exercised it by his Vicegerent, leaving at the same time the Episcopal authority unimpaired; in the latter, the Sovereign so assumed the jurisdiction, as to exclude all the Bishops from exercising any part of it. Henry the Eighth was content to allow the Ecclesiastical Courts their full power, so long as they renounced all connexion in the Papal See. Edward the Sixth was afraid to intrust the exercise of authority to Prelates, who were considered to be attached to the doctrinal errors of Rome. In the former reign Dis-

cipline was maintained, but Truth made little progress; in the latter, Truth was established, but with the temporary suspension of Discipline. We pass over the reign of Mary, to consider those measures of the reign of Elizabeth, by which a more perfect Discipline, than perhaps had ever before existed, was established in the Church, but which being illegally executed, was on that account overthrown.

It has been already noticed, that upon the assumption of the Supremacy, and with it the authority to exercise Ecclesiastical jurisdiction, by Henry, the whole authority of the Crown was delegated to Cromwell, as the King's Vicegerent. Under Edward a different course was pursued, and one less in accordance with the forms of the Ecclesiastical Law; six sets of Commissioners being appointed to visit the particular Sees allotted to them, a Preacher and Register being attached to each. The circumstance is worthy of notice, as illustrating in some measure the origin of that Court of High Commission, the establishment of which, for the exercise of Ecclesiastical jurisdiction by the Crown, forms so conspicuous a feature in the history of our Church in the reign of Elizabeth and her two successors.

Upon the accession of Elizabeth to the crown, no change was made in the constitution of the Ecclesiastical Courts, which, during the reign of her predecessor, and by the repeal of the Statute of 1 Edw. VI. c. 2, had recovered the free exercise of their powers. Had no alteration been made by Statute in the exercise of the Royal Prerogative, it would have been competent to the Crown, according to the precedents established in the reigns of Henry and Edward, to have exercised the entire Ecclesiastical jurisdiction, either by the appointment of a Vicar-General, as in the case of Cromwell, or by Visitors specially appointed, as in the reign of Edward, for the visitation of certain Dioceses<sup>3</sup>. Such Visitations would have been necessarily of a temporary character,

<sup>3</sup> Memorials of Cranmer, vol. i. p. 209, A.D. 1547.

and would have been attended, during the period of the Visitation, by the Inhibition of all other jurisdiction, whether Metropolitan or Episcopal. It was desirable, in order to meet the exigencies of the times, to avoid the inconvenience resulting from such Inhibitions of the Episcopal Authority, and, at the same time, to provide for the perpetual exercise of the full power of the Crown, as the Supreme Ordinary, for the maintenance of the Reformed Religion. Such, if we may judge by the subsequent proceedings, were the objects contemplated by the clause of the 1st Eliz. c. 1; which, whilst it enacted that all Spiritual jurisdiction should for ever be united to the Crown, empowered the Queen and her successors, for ever, to appoint, from time to time, Commissioners for the exercise of this jurisdiction, for the reformation of all disorders, &c., which, by any manner of Spiritual or Ecclesiastical power, authority, or jurisdiction, might be lawfully reformed, &c.

An impartial student of the history of the Church, during the reign of Elizabeth, cannot fail to observe that this establishment of the Court of High Commission was then considered the great measure for Ecclesiastical Reform; indeed, it may be doubted, whether, humanly speaking, the power of Rome could have been repressed, or the Protestant religion maintained, had not the Crown thus put forth the full power of the Prerogative jurisdiction. If that power proved eventually too weak to stem the progress of Puritanism, eagerly received as it was by the lower orders, and secretly encouraged by men of high rank about the Court, it certainly was effective for a long series against the designs of the See of Rome. Were we to judge of the proceedings of the Court of High Commission only from the nature of the contests in which Prelates, so vigorous and uncompromising as Archbishops Parker and Whitgift, were engaged, first with the scrupulous opposers of external uniformity, in respect of dress and ceremonies; and afterwards with the favourers of the Genevan form of disci-

pline, we might possibly be inclined to think that there was little need of such a Court, as that of the High Commission. But when we find, that so mild a Prelate as Archbishop Grindal, and one so unwilling as he was to use severe measures himself, upon his translation to the see of York, intreated the Queen<sup>4</sup> “to renew the Ecclesiastical Commission for his province; as a thing highly necessary for those parts, for the more effectual suppressing of corrupt religion, and giving encouragement to the Gospel;” it seems evident that there was a necessity for the exercise of the Royal authority, in order to give efficacy even to the Archbishopial power within that Province.

If the power of the Commission had affected no other persons than Popish Priests or Recusants, it is probable that it would have avoided many of the charges which have been brought against it; but in the progress of opinion the Commission had to contend with persons, whose excess of zeal, however we may regret the method of its development, we cannot wholly condemn, and in whose sufferings we can hardly forbear to sympathize. The deprivation and imprisonment of the Puritan and Disciplinarian naturally excited the popular feeling in their favour; and whilst the frowns of Elizabeth almost compelled the Archbishops to take upon themselves the odium arising from proceedings which seemed to savour of religious persecution, the Sovereign herself escaped in a great measure the unpopularity, which the exercise of her authority, by merely Lay commissioners, would have brought upon her Court. It was not, however, with respect to doctrinal errors alone, that the Court of High Commission put forth its powers; though to these the public attention was chiefly directed. We learn from Stowel’s case (related in the life of Archbishop Parker<sup>5</sup>), who was supposed guilty of bigamy, that they who were guilty of immorality, as well as those suspected of heresy, were summoned to answer before this

<sup>4</sup> Strype’s Life of Grindal, p. 263.

<sup>5</sup> Vol. ii. p. 161.

Court ; and the manner in which the Earl of Leicester interfered in his behalf, seems fully to explain the statement made by Archbishop Whitgift, when, in his reply to King James at the Hampton Court Conference, he asserted the necessity of the existence of this Court, and justified it on the ground ;—"Because, although the fault might be of that nature, as that the ordinary jurisdiction might censure it ; but eftsoons it fell out that the party delinquent was too great, and so the Ordinary dared not proceed against him ; and so mighty in his state, and so wilful in his contumacy, that he would not obey the summons or censure. And so it came to pass that the Ordinary was forced to crave help at the High Commission <sup>6</sup>."

It must be admitted, that the powers granted by the Crown to the Court of High Commission exceeded the limits prescribed by the Act of Parliament, and that the punishments inflicted by that Court were illegal, whenever they exceeded in kind and degree the Censures which the Ecclesiastical Courts had, by the Common Law, the power to inflict<sup>7</sup>. Ecclesiastical censures, such as Monition, Penance, Suspension from participation in the rites of religion, and even Excommunication, are punishments which affect only the mind and conscience ; they have little influence upon persons who have no respect for religion. It is manifest, both from the proceedings of the High Commission, and also from the propositions made in the "*Reformatio Legum*" to invest the Ecclesiastical Judges with the power of imprisonment, that these Censures had fallen into contempt. The necessity of the case seemed to justify a recourse to severer punishments : nor were there wanting those of the Judges, who, upon private consultation with a civilian, Dr. Lewis, acquiesced in the opinion, that according to the Ecclesiastical Law it was competent to the Bishop to inflict in certain cases a pecu-

<sup>6</sup> Strype's Whitgift, vol. ii. p. 497. See also, Reasons for the Commissions Ecclesiastical, vol. i. p. 266.

<sup>7</sup> Coke's Institutes, 4. c. 74.

niary penalty; from which it was concluded that the Commission had the same power<sup>8</sup>: the Court therefore continued to enforce its decrees by fine and imprisonment. The course pursued in this case is an instance of legal principles being sacrificed to meet a temporary necessity. Expediency seemed to justify the proceeding. Had the Court of High Commission kept within the bounds of the purely Ecclesiastical jurisdiction, many crimes and acts of disobedience might have passed unpunished; but it is probable, on the other hand, that the entire overthrow of the Ecclesiastical discipline, and the permanent restriction of the Ecclesiastical authority by the abolition of the form of proceeding *ex officio*, would not have taken place in the reign of Charles I. The history of this Court, in its origin and progress and overthrow, ought to afford a warning of the real inexpediency of violating legal principles under temporary pressure. For seventy years this Court exercised its authority; but not all its endeavours for the preservation of order and religion could compensate for the illegal exercise of power. It fell with the Monarchy. The remembrance of its evils and oppressions has been carefully transmitted to later ages; whilst the good intention of its institution has been so forgotten and discredited, that he who ventures to suggest a single argument in defence of its original object and purpose, is liable to be suspected of favouring religious tyranny and the arbitrary exercise of Ecclesiastical power.

I shall now conclude this Essay with a few observations upon the sources from which the following work has been compiled, and the general character of the proceedings detailed in it. It will be found to exhibit an almost continuous series of Precedents, illustrative of proceedings in Causes of Office against both clergymen and laymen, from the year 1475 to 1640, compiled from the Registers of Ecclesiastical Courts in the diocese of London: that part of it which relates

<sup>8</sup> See the account of this conference in Strype's Life of Grindal, p. 345, A.D. 1577.



to the period antecedent to the assertion of the supremacy of the Crown being taken from the Registers of the Court of the Commissary of the Bishop of London; whilst the remaining part is chiefly taken from the Registers of the Archidiaconal Courts of London, Colchester, and Essex. On some accounts it is to be regretted that so small a portion of the Records of the Episcopal Courts has been preserved; whether they have perished from neglect, or were intentionally destroyed, or were consumed in the fire of London in 1666, cannot now be ascertained. The defect has been effectually supplied, for the purposes of this work, from the Registry of the Archidiaconal Courts, with this incidental advantage, that the unity of the Ecclesiastical discipline throughout the diocese is more perfectly exhibited, and the fact of its prevalence in the most remote parishes is clearly established.

The nature of the documents which have supplied the materials of this work are so little known, that it may not be uninteresting to the reader to receive some more particular account of them. Nearly one-half in number of these Precedents have been extracted from an almost perfect series of Act-Books belonging to the Court of the Commissary of London, commencing with the year 1476, and terminating with the year 1539. They are eleven in number, some imperfect, and varying in size from two to three hundred folios. The Registers of the proceedings were kept by the Registrar, who was a Public Notary, whose business it was to attend the Court and to record the minutes of the proceedings. The names of the parties and the nature of the charges against them, in most instances, appear to have been inserted in the Act-Book previous to the Court-day. The *vivâ voce* proceedings in each cause were instantly recorded, and in the most rapid manner. This circumstance, and the frequency of the abbreviations, has, in many cases, made it very difficult to decypher the text, and it is possible that some misreadings have taken place. In some few passages it has been scarcely possible to make



out the sense. The same observation will apply to some of the later, as well as to the earlier parts of the work. The General Index will serve to show the nature of the offences, which rendered the parties amenable to the Ecclesiastical Courts. Some idea of the extent of the jurisdiction, and the frequency of its exercise, may be gathered from the statement that an accurate enumeration of the causes which were before the Court of the Commissary (whose jurisdiction was limited to the city of London and some small part of Essex and Hertfordshire) from Christmas, 1496, to Christmas, 1500, shows that no less than one thousand eight hundred and fifty-four persons were cited before the Court in the period of four years; one-half of whom were charged with the crimes of adultery and others of like nature.

The latter portion of the Precedents, from the year 1540 to 1640, has been extracted from forty-three Act-Books, of the Archidiaconal Courts, each volume containing at least two hundred and fifty folios. It may not be out of place to mention, that the Records of the Archidiaconal Court of Essex, of proceedings *in civil causes*, are equally voluminous: we must leave it to others to ascertain whether it was the love of litigation, or the prevalence of wrong, or the cheap price at which justice was administered, or the density of population, which caused so many suitors to await the decision of a judge, whose jurisdiction did not extend over one-half the county of Essex. There is no reason to believe that the activity of the Ecclesiastical Courts, as instruments of moral correction, was at all abated as the year 1640 approached. In the Court of the Archdeacon of London, between the 27th of November, 1639, and 28th of November, 1640, the judge held thirty sittings; the number of entries of causes being more than two thousand five hundred. The number of persons presented must have been considerably less, allowing that each person attended on two or three Court-days; the index, however, to the volume would show that about one thousand eight hundred persons

were before the Court in that year, three-fourths of whom, it may be calculated, were presented for tipping during Divine Service, breaking the Sabbath, and non-observance of Saints' days.

Whatever evils have resulted from the sub-division of the Ecclesiastical jurisdiction, it could scarcely have been adopted, had it not been attended by some great and apparent benefit; such as that of enabling the Church to subject the people at large to a moral government, as the tribunals were multiplied, and the authority of the Church was carried to the remotest parts of every diocese. The acts and duties of the Episcopal office are, according to the principles of the Canon Law, divided into two heads: "*Quæ sunt ordinis*," and "*Quæ sunt jurisdictionis*."<sup>9</sup> Under the former head are comprised Ordination, Consecration, Confirmation: under the latter, all the duties of Spiritual and Temporal government comprised in the general term "Ordinary jurisdiction"<sup>1</sup>. The former duties are so limited to the Episcopal order, that they cannot be performed by any inferior ecclesiastic; the latter, however, easily admit of being committed to other persons than Bishops, there being nothing in the nature of testamentary and matrimonial causes, which necessarily would restrict the decision of them to the personal authority of the Bishop. Nor would it appear that the visitation of a diocese, for the regulation of external ceremonies and the correction of manners, or even the power of granting institutions to benefices, cannot be adequately performed by others than the Bishop himself.

There is no reason to believe that in the ages prior to the Reformation, the mere circumstance of the exercise of a jurisdiction originally derived from the Episcopal authority, by ecclesiastics of rank inferior to the Bishops, caused any dissatisfaction. In these later times we entertain scarcely any other idea of the Episcopal office than

<sup>9</sup> Barbosa de Episcopis, c. i.

<sup>1</sup> Lindwood, p. 166.

as an authority purely spiritual, and which has no other duties to perform, but those which relate to the character and conduct of the Clergy, and the public instruction of the people. A well-governed diocese is that in which the Bishop attends most sedulously to the peculiar duties of his order. But in ancient times the exercise of jurisdiction in the correction of the vices of the laity, was a far more prominent part of the Episcopal office, as appears from a very interesting writ noticed by Lord Coke, in his Institutes, 2. p. 625, addressed in the 48th Henry III. to the Bishop of Hereford, complaining that in his absence from his diocese, the people were neither informed nor reformed, *per verbum salutis* and *virgam correctionis*, the destitution of the diocese being described as so entire, “*ut ne dum Episcopum, sed nec officialem haberet, vicarium aut decanum, qui quicquam spiritualitatis exercere posset in eadem.*” The Ecclesiastical Courts were, in reality, the means by which the Episcopal authority was exercised over the people of the whole diocese. And if the Bishops of the times before the Reformation appear to us to have been more concerned in affairs of state, and more secular in their character, than those of the period since the Reformation, we should unjustly conclude from thence that the spiritual welfare of the people was wholly neglected; the Clergy who presided in the numerous Courts being actively engaged in repressing error, and punishing every dereliction of duty. \*

And here it may not be out of place to correct an erroneous impression which very commonly prevails with reference to the office of Archdeacon, and the term applied to the Archdeacon of “*Oculus Episcopi*”<sup>1</sup>. The Archdeacons of ancient times were indeed actively employed in the moral government of the dioceses; but it was by means of legal tribunals that they exercised their authority; it was not so much a personal, as an official inspection

<sup>1</sup> See the Commentator on Decretal. i. xxiii. c. 7, De officio Archidiaconi.

which they exercised, performing the duty by annual visitations and synods, and carrying on the work of correction throughout the whole year by their Courts, in which their Officials presided, and their Registrars recorded the proceedings. No better proof can be given of the searching character of the Archidiaconal jurisdiction at the conclusion of the fourteenth century, than that which is afforded by the Poet Chaucer, who, in his *Frères tale*, gives a most accurate account of the offences for which persons were brought before the Archdeacon's Court, at the same time that he exposes the corrupt and inquisitorial practices of the Somners or Apparitors, who travelled about the country in search of suspected persons, and reaped a plentiful harvest by threatening them with Citations, and accepting money to forbear the execution of their threats.

The separation between the clerical and the judicial character is at this time so complete, and the Clergy at large are such entire strangers to legal studies, that it is almost considered wrong that a Clerical judge should preside in an Ecclesiastical Court. To such an extent is the feeling carried, that the fact of the Consistory and Archidiaconal Courts being the Courts of which the Bishop and Archdeacon were the Supreme judges, is almost forgotten. That a Bishop or Archdeacon should preside in his own Court, would be as little expected as that the Sovereign should take her seat in her own Court, among the Judges of the Queen's Bench. In both the temporal and spiritual Courts, the principle of delegation has been carried to such an extent, as almost to extinguish the remembrance of the source from which the authority itself is derived, and, in the case of the Ecclesiastical Courts, to cast derision upon proceedings conducted only by lay judges, the object of which is professedly "*pro morum correctione et salute animæ.*" These observations are not made in order to encourage the idea that it is possible, in the present age, to restore a religious and clerical character to the Ecclesiastical Courts; but rather for the purpose of drawing atten-

tion to the fact, that the system of criminal jurisprudence, which it is the object of the present work to illustrate, was purely religious in its character, a system of moral government, emanating from the Episcopal order, and forming that part of the pastoral care which is fully expressed in the Consecration Service, where the Bishop promises that "such as be unquiet, disobedient, and criminous within his diocese," he "will correct and punish according to such authority as he has by God's word, and as to him shall be committed by the ordinance of this realm."

According to the practice of these Ecclesiastical Courts in Criminal causes, as we learn from Oughton's *Ordo Judiciorum*<sup>2</sup>, from Lyndwood's *Provinciale*, lib. v., and the fifth book of the *Decretals*, there are three distinct methods of Indictment:—1. Inquisition; 2. Accusation; 3. Denunciation.

In the first form of proceeding, that by Inquisition, the Judge is in fact the Accuser. He may proceed against the party from his own personal knowledge, or from common fame of crime committed; and no other step is required to bring the party before the Court, except Citation. I am inclined to believe that before the Reformation the most usual mode of proceeding was that by Inquisition; and that the Apparitors of the different Courts, who not only attended the Ecclesiastical Judges at the time of their visitations and during the sitting of the Courts, but who also at other times employed themselves in discovering cases of delinquency, were the chief means of bringing crimes to the notice of the Judge, who, without further information, cited the parties to appear. Traces of the unpopularity of these Apparitors (whose ordinary business it was to execute the Mandates or Citations issued by the Court), and of the general dislike of their office, may be met with in several parts of the following work; and the Constitutions of Archbishops Boniface and

<sup>2</sup> Vol. i. p. 215.

Stratford in the thirteenth and fourteenth centuries, as well as the Canons of 1597 and 1603, which regulated their number and limited their duties, are evidence of the extent to which these inferior officers abused their authority, and took advantage of their connexion with the Courts. Their office, however, though odious because they acted as common informers, was not without its use, when they made known to the Ecclesiastical authorities the names of those who had died intestate, and enabled the Court to compel the parties legally to administer to the Estate of the deceased, for the payment of his just debts and the proper distribution of his effects.

The second form of Indictment, as it may be called, is that in which an Accuser comes forward, who voluntarily undertakes the cause, and, in the Legal phrase, is said to promote the Office of the Judge. In this form Criminal suits are now generally brought forward, the Bishop or Ordinary having ceased to proceed by Inquisition, and substituting, as a matter of form, his Secretary or other person, who, in his own name, promotes the Office of the Judge and becomes the Accuser of the party.

The third form of proceeding, by which the Ecclesiastical Court took cognizance of offences, was that of Denunciation. It differed from Accusation essentially in this point, that the person who gave the information to the Judge was not bound to constitute himself the Accuser, and become subject to the conditions and penalties to which the Accuser was liable in order to carry forward the suit<sup>3</sup>. Denunciation is now known to us under the name of Presentment: the process of time and the enactment of the Canons of 1603 has limited the power of making Presentments to the Minister and Churchwardens; and thus the Churchwardens have become not only the guardians of the goods of the Church, but also in theory the supervisors of the Clergy and people. I must

<sup>3</sup> See Lyndwood, L. v. T. i. v. denuncient.



refer the reader for more particular information respecting the present state of the Law of Presentment or Denunciation to Bishop Gibson's Codex<sup>4</sup>: it may here suffice to observe, that these Presentments in the present state of the practice of the Ecclesiastical Courts are but the shadow of a form. After making the Presentment, all the formalities of a suit must be gone through; and whether the complaint be that the Surplices are not properly washed, or that the Church is in ruin, or that the Clergyman is neglectful of his duty, every step of the process to obtain a decree for the washing of the surplices, for the repairing of the Church, or the suspension of the Clergyman is equally expensive, equally subjected in the present day to the necessity of using written forms, and employing through every stage the Proctor and the Advocate. It is not an exaggeration of the fact to state, that if any Bishop at the conclusion of his Visitation and the receiving Presentments from all the parishes under his jurisdiction were to proceed to redress by legal process all the defects and irregularities complained of, he might render himself liable to expenses of suits, as great as would absorb a very large part of the yearly income of the See. It would not be difficult to devise a remedy for that part of the evil which relates to mere external matters, such as the repairs of Churches; but as respects the exercise of discipline over the Clergy, it seems doubtful whether consistently with our modern notions of justice any forms of proceeding can be devised, which can prevent the accused from incurring unnecessary expense, and causing wilful delay in the execution of sentence.

All the proceedings in the following volume are proceedings *ex officio*; and they are, in one fundamental point, exemplifications of a principle of criminal jurisprudence, wholly opposed to that which prevails in our Common Law; for whereas, in the Temporal Courts, the principle, that no man

<sup>4</sup> p. 959.



is bound to accuse himself, is that which universally prevails, even in many cases to the hindrance of justice and the security of crime, in the Spiritual Courts the whole energy of the discipline, which continued in the Church until the year 1640, was derived from the power which the Ecclesiastical Judge possessed of proposing the articles of charge to the accused in person, and of requiring him, upon oath, to admit or deny the accusation. But when the Act of Parliament of 16 Car. I. c. 11, and the subsequent Act of 13 Car. II. c. 12, took away the power of administering this oath, and of compelling persons to purgation, the practice of the Ecclesiastical Courts was at once changed, and this power paralyzed. The oath so administered was termed the oath *ex officio*. If the accused party confessed the charge, the cause was concluded, and sentence passed, or the party was simply dismissed, if his appearance was considered sufficient punishment. If the accused party denied the charge upon oath, he was then obliged to defend his oath by the evidence of two or more compurgators, upon whose joint oath to the credibility of the accused, and their disbelief of the charge, the party was pronounced innocent, and formally restored to his reputation. If he failed in his compurgation, he was pronounced guilty. In some cases, witnesses were examined, either on the part of the accuser, or of the accused. It is probable that when persons either from want of friends, or from their own want of character, were unable to procure compurgators, the accused were condemned as guilty of specific acts, which they very probably had not committed. It is also probable that many a hypocrite was enabled by his own perjury, and by the ignorance of his compurgators, to escape unpunished.

The parties cited before the judge seem to have been unattended by any legal adviser; they heard the charge at the mouth of the judge, whilst the registrar briefly noted the proceedings and the answer. It is doubtful whether any degree of publicity attended the proceedings, except in the

performance of penance, or in the publication of the decree of excommunication. Had the case been otherwise, and the daily cases in the Ecclesiastical Courts been published to the world, as Police reports are now given, we can hardly conceive any thing more demoralizing to society, than such an exhibition of crime.

In the early part of my investigation of these Records, I felt much disappointment at discovering the comparatively trivial nature of the offences, for which persons were brought to account before the Ecclesiastical Courts; and at being unable to trace in these Act-Books the proceedings against any persons of eminence, who were Lollards or Heretics. At one time I was inclined to suspect that the books had been wilfully destroyed; but the absence of the original forms of proceeding is more probably to be ascribed to the circumstance of the articles of accusations and depositions of the witnesses being all reduced to writing, and preserved together, as being too long for entry in the Act-Book, though a few important cases were afterwards transcribed into the Bishop's register. It appears, indeed, that whenever the articles of accusation took the regular form of libel, and that depositions were taken upon them, no more entries were generally made in the Act-Books than were actually necessary to show the progress of the cause. In every case which came under my notice, in perusing the Act-Books of the Archdeaconry of St. Alban's, in which the parties appeared by a Proctor and prayed articles, I observed, that whilst the formal proceedings of the Proctor on either side are most carefully noted, it was scarcely possible to discover from the entries the nature of the cause, and often difficult to ascertain in favour of what party the final sentence was given. But though the present work does not show how bitterly persecution was carried on under Henry and Mary, nor make us better acquainted with the charges for which so many persons suffered, it may not on that account be the less interesting; especially when it shows to us, how men ordinarily

offended against religion, and exhibits the faults of daily life ; and this so accurately and minutely, that it would almost seem as if there was no act or word, contrary to truth or purity, for which he, who committed it, might not be called to account : indeed, I can hardly better describe the general contents of this book, than by saying that it is a History of the Moral Police of the Church, and that it details how the Ecclesiastical Magistrate treated every species of offence which could be brought before him ; deciding the matter in a most summary way, and apparently so justly, that there occurs hardly a notice of an appeal.

I have almost occasion to regret, that in the following work so frequent notice should have been taken of crimes against chastity : the cases selected bear no proportion whatever to the real number ; indeed, it would seem as if lust was always the great prevailing crime. To have less frequently mentioned such cases would have failed to give the reader an adequate notion, either of the extent of the public profligacy, or of the resistance offered to it ; nor could otherwise proof have been given, that offences of this nature were punished throughout the whole period of the Ecclesiastical vigour in the same manner. I should have been glad, if I had had leisure for such a work, to have added some comments upon the various offences which are brought to view in the following work, and to have pointed out the particular Canons and Constitutions of our own Church, or the general rules of the Canon Law, which authorized the Court to take cognizance of the particular offences ; I trust, however, that the work will prove of use, not only in a legal, but in an historical point of view, since it is, in fact, a brief chronicle of all the various changes in opinion which took place during the period of which it treats, not only with respect to doctrines, but also with respect to external rites and ceremonies. The work does, indeed, exhibit the Church as possessed of far wider power over the conduct of men than now remains to her. What though the wilfulness of man has deprived her

of this power, we ought not to forget for one moment that such events are part of God's own dispensation towards his Church ; nay, are intended, as we believe, to show, through a series of ages, that under every variety of outward circumstances, whether with or without the aid of law, whether with or without the support of Sovereigns and the sanction of the State, the truth of the Gospel will still be preserved in the world, and Christ's own promise to his Church fulfilled, that the gates of hell shall not prevail against it.



ACTA HABITA  
CORAM  
MAGISTRO W. WYLDE,  
COMMISSARIO

REVERENDI IN CHRISTO PATRIS  
DOMINI THOMÆ KEMPE LONDONIENSIS EPISCOPI,  
QUI ONUS COMMISSIONIS SUSCEPIT  
XXIX DIE MARCHI ANNO DOMINI MCCCCLXV\*.

I.

A. D. 1480.

*Petri Pore.*—Ambrosius de Borazeos contempnit Deum dicendo, quod non est custus parcialis, et quod unum diligit melius quam alium; et contempnit beatam Mariam Katerinam et Margaretam, vocando eas meretrices, ad instanciam Petri de Epecyys de eadem. xxiii die Junii Ambrosius comparuit, negavit articulum, et continuatur ad diem Martis, et juravit illo die comparere. xxviii die Junii partes comparuerunt, et judex assignavit Ambrosio terminum ad comparendum, die Sabbati proxima ad audiendam voluntatem suam; postea Pasterinus de Castro Novo et Everardus Chirch xxviii die Junii jurati, deposuerunt contra Ambrosium: Ambrosius . . . die Julii præstitit juramentum de implendo penitentiam sibi injectam, quod offerret ceream ponderis ii lb. apud Salvatorem, et quod solveret ecclesie sue parochiali x libras ceræ, si amplius fuerit convictus super detectione.—f. 8 b.

Contempt of  
God and the  
Saints.

II.

*K. col. (Katherine Coleman.)*—Moricius Schreve recusat offerre pro diebus Lune, Martis, et Mercurii in ebdomada

Refusal to  
offer.

\* The MS. being defective, the heading is here supplied; the Commission of the Commissary is found in the Register of Wills belonging to the Court of the Commissary.

Pentecostes, et redarguebat Rectorem ibidem: citatus ad xiii diem Julii, illo die partes comparuerunt et solverunt; ideo dimissus.—f. 12.

## III.

Incontinence. *Anne.*—Agnes Bery fornicavit cum Ricardo Nuttyng. Vir comparuit xiii die Julii, negavit articulum, die Lune proximo purgare se se quinta (sc. manu). illo die compurgatores recusarunt jurare, et continuatur ad diem Veneris, illo die fuit continuata ad diem Veneris proximum, illo die non comparuit, ideo suspensus.—f. 12.

## IV.

Non-payment to light, and to wages of aquæbajulus. *Mil. (S. Michael) querne.*—Thomas Walynger recusat solvere ad lumen trabis et salarium aquæbajuli. Thomas comparuit xxvii die Julii, et injungitur ei, quod solvat citra diem Lunæ proximum, vel ad dicendam causam quare per censuras ecclesiasticas compelli non debeat, illo die non comparuit, ideo suspensus.—f. 14.

## V.

Expulsion of wife from his house. *Christoferi.*—Willielmus Rydley expulsi uxorem suam a domo sua, quamvis nuda. Willielmus comparuit ix die Augusti, fatetur articulum, et juravit quod in die Veneris adducet apprenticium suum eodem die, illo die continuatur ad diem Mercurii proximum, illo die dimittitur.—f. 16.

## VI.

Begetting a child, and keeping it unbaptized. *Berkyng.*—Elias Fadir fornicavit cum Katerina Kelleye, quæ peperit per eundem, et puer non erat baptisatus per ii dies. Vir comparuit iii die Augusti, fatetur articulum, et continuatur ad diem Mercurii proximum, illo die comparuit et fuit continuatus ad diem Veneris proximum, illo die continuatur ad diem Veneris proximum, illo die non comparuit, ideo suspensus; vir comparuit xxix die Augusti, et continuatur ad diem Jovis proximum, sexto die Septembris vir corrigitur et dimittitur.—f. 16.

## VII.

*Fanchurch.*—Ricardus Mower comparuit xviii die Augusti,



et pro adulterio commisso, et violenta manuum inunctione in Penance for  
Catworthe, præstitit coram commissario juratum de implendo adultery, &c.  
pœnitentiam: viz. quod tribus dominicis præcederet crucem,  
deferendo manu sua cereum pretii unius denarii, nudis  
pedibus, camisia et toga indutus in ecclesia de Fanchurch, et  
quod satisfaciet partem pro expensis, et inungitur quod præ-  
missa faciat sub pœna excommunicationis.—f. 18 b.

## VIII.

*Botulphi Algat.*—Petrus Cornelus recusat solvere clerico Non-payment  
parochiali ibidem pro solemnisatione matrimonii. Citatur for marriage.  
ad xxviii diem Augusti; xii die Septembris, quia partes sunt  
concordatæ, ideo dimittitur.—f. 19 b.

## IX.

*Laurenti Juri.*—Johannes Haberam fornicavit cum Anna Incontinence.  
Kyrkham. Vir xxii Septembris comparuit et recusat jurare, Refusal to  
continuatur ad crastinum Michaelis, et continuatur per judi- take the oath.  
cem ad eundem diem, illo die fuit continuatus ad diem  
Mercurii proximum: vi die Octobris, vir negavit articulum,  
die Lune proximo purgare se se quinta; illo die et defecit in  
purgatione, et judex computavit eum pro convicto, et habet  
diem Veneris ad recipiendam penitentiam. xxi die Octobris  
Johannes Abraham juravit implere penitentiam.—f. 22.

## X.

*Alphegi.*—Johannes Stokys utitur incantacionibus sorti- Sorcery.  
legiæ pro febribus.—f. 25 b.

## XI.

*Andr. Hol.*—Johannes Pynner injecit manus violentas in Assaulting  
dominum Petrum Gilbert in ecclesia, et fregit brachium suum, priest.  
quod non potuit celebrare, et spoliasset eum in ecclesia. Vir  
citatur ad xxviii diem Novembris. Johannes comparuit illo  
die, negavit articulum, et continuatur ad diem Sabbati. Illo  
die fuit continuatus ad diem Sabbati proximum, partes com-  
paruerunt ix die Decembris et continuatur die Jovis proximo.  
xiii die Decembris partes comparuerunt et compromiserunt Compromise.  
in Mr. Lety et Bell, ita quod ferant laudum citra crastinum  
Hillarii.—f. 32.

## XII.

Refusal to pay  
the exhibition  
of a chaplain.

*Sepulchri.*—Johannes Scharpe et Willielmus Wyterynghe executores testamenti Willielmi Garstons recusant exhibere capellanum celebraturum pro anima defuncti in ecclesia de Westham per ii annos, contra voluntatem defuncti per eos juratam; et Ricardus Daniell et Willielmus Coterell Iconomi de Westham asserunt, quod xx marcæ remanent in manibus dictorum executorum per mortem Johanne filiæ Willielmi Garstons.—f. 33.

## XIII.

A. D. 1481.

Adultery.

*Sepulchri.*—Johannes Grymbill Barbor adulteravit cum Alicia Pypere. Vir citatus ad ii diem Aprilis. Vir comparuit v die Aprilis, recusat jurare; continuatur ad crastinum. Mulier non comparuit, ideo suspensa. Mulier comparuit, fatetur articulum xx die Augusti.—f. 47.

## XIV.

Keeping a wo-  
man in her  
house  
accursed.

*Omnium Sanctorum Berkyng.*—Alicia Bate, alias Barley, for kepyng of a woman in her howse that is a curst. Mulier citatur ad xvii diem Aprilis; non comparuit, ideo suspensa.—f. 51 b.

## XV.

Excommunica-  
tion for favour  
shown to an  
excommuni-  
cate person.

*Brigide.*—Johannes Benet excommunicatus pro favore et auxilio impensis Agneti Batync denunciatae pro excommunicata; et pro quo erat inhibitum Rectori et capellano parochiali, quod non admitterent eum [ad] divina audienda, nec ad communionem. Comparuit viii die Maii, fatetur quod recepit communionem non absolutus, et juravit implere penitentiam sibi injunctam per commissarium; et penitentia injuncta, quod in toga et camisia, nudis pedibus, precedat crucem processionaliter, cum candela precii unius denarii, et quam offerret processione finita.—f. 54.

## XVI.

Refusal to pay  
the exhibition  
of a chaplain,  
and legacies.

*Michaelis Cornhille, Petri Chepe.*—Johannes Hungerforde et Willielmus Rowse executores testamenti Georgii Rowse recusant exhibere unum capellanum, in ecclesia sancti Petri per annum, et recusant solvere vis. viii*d.* legatos Willielmo

Burwell, et iii s. iiii d. legatos Ricardo Burwell: xxv die Maii partes comparuerunt, et executores habent ad crastinum corporis Christi, ad exhibendum Inventarium.—f. 57 b.

## XVII.

*Petri Pore.*—Auicia Shrewysbury fregit fidem, in non pa- Breaking faith.  
rendo certo laudo et arbitrio inter eam et Johannem Cole  
coriatorem et Willielmum Standon, arbitratorios per eam jura-  
tos et electos per eam et Ricardum Bursell [electos]: Mulier  
citatur ad viii die Augusti, illo die fuit continuatum ad diem  
Sabbati, illo die viz. xi die Augusti mulier comparuit, negavit  
articulum: die Martis proximo purgare se se quarta; illo die  
xiii die Augusti partes comparuerunt, et continuatur in diem  
Lune proximum; xx die Augusti Auicia et Ricardus Bursell Compromise.  
comparuerunt et compromiserunt in Rectores parochialium  
ecclesiarum sancti Botulphi extra Bisshopisgat et Petri Brade  
in omnibus causis ubique pendentibus, ita quod ferant laudum  
infra quindenam; sunt jurati; aliter comparebunt. Ultimo die  
Augusti fuit continuatum ad ix dies.—f. 72.

## XVIII.

*Schordiche.*—Willielmus Gyppe et ejus uxor non accedunt Not coming to church.  
ad ecclesiam diebus festivis, set tempore divinorum accep-  
tant alios in domum suam, pro servicia vendenda, et sunt Pronubæ.  
pronubæ. Comparuerunt xv die Septembris negaverunt ar-  
ticulum pronubacie et alium articulum modificant: die Lune  
purgare se, uterque se, quarta: illo die purgant se et dimit-  
tuntur.—f. 74.

## XIX.

*Omnium Sanctorum Honylane.*—Thomas Potynger com- Oath taken as to contract of marriage.  
paruit coram commissario in domo officii xxiii die Augusti,  
et prestitit juramentum, quod nunquam contraxhit matri-  
monialiter cum Margareta Hudson de eadem, ibidem presente,  
et confitente, quod nullum testem habuit ad probandum  
contractum, et ideo commissarius remisit eos regulæ con-  
scientiarum suarum.—f. 76 b.

## XX.

*Alphegi.*—Johannes Mongoy non accedit ad ecclesiam Not coming to church.

parochialem diebus festivis ad divina audienda, et dicit, quod non vult accedere ad ecclesiam suam nisi ad placitum suum: comparuit 5 die Septembris, nescit contradicere. Continuatur ad crastinum, vi die Septembris dimittitur.—f. 79 b.

## XXI.

Oath as to  
contract of  
marriage.

*Mildrede Pultri.*—Ricardus Birt et Jeva (Anglice Jyue) Walter comparuerunt coram commissario in domo officii ii die Octobris, et dictus Ricardus corporale prestitit juramentum, quod nunquam contraxhit matrimonialiter cum dicta Jeva, nec fecit promissum eidem super matrimonio contrahendo.—f. 87 b.

## XXII.

Clerk not ad-  
mitted with  
rector's con-  
sent.

*Antonini.*—Johannes Belamy aquebajulus ibidem non fuit admissus ad officium cum consensu Rectoris ibidem. Comparuit iiii die Octobris et dimittitur.—f. 88 b.

## XXIII.

Apostata.

*Clementis extra Barr.*—Dominus Robertus Crowmer apostata citatus ad xxiiii diem Octobris ad exhibendum litteras ordinarii: quod non comparuit, suspensus a celebratione divinorum.—f. 92 b.

## XXIV.

Diffamation.

*Marie at Hyll.*—Johanna Gescroft uxor Johannis Gescroft diffamavit publice in ecclesia Sancte Marie at Hyll Margaretam Baxster vocando eam meretricem communem; et reclamavit publice in prefata ecclesia contra edicionem bannorum habitorem inter prefatam Margaretam et Willielmum Lacy, cum quo contraxit: citatus ad xxi diem Novembris.—f. 96 b.

## XXV.

Pronubæ.

*Michaelis Bassyng.*—Johannes Dunkyne et ejus uxor pronubæ Margerie Thorneton et Domino Johanni Henley, ambo citati ad xviii diem Januarii. Margeria comparuit xviii die Januarii, fatetur articulum, et dictus capellanus levavit filium suum proprium per eam a sacro fonte: continuatur ad diem Mercurii. Duncan et ejus uxor dimittuntur. Margeria Thorneton non comparuit, ideo suspensa.—f. 106 b.

## XXVI.

*Botulphi Byllyngisgate.*—Johannes Sewale magister artis de Chawndelerys, et alii, recusant offerre ratione aulæ ejusdem artis ab antiquo locatæ pro x marcis; et sunt a retro in solucione per vi annos in festo Paschæ proximo futuro: illo die fuit continuatus ad diem Jovis post diem Cinerum, xxi die Februarii continuatur ad viii dies, illo die continuatur ad diem Lune proximum; vi die Martii, Dominus Jacobus Walker Rector ecclesie Sancti Johannis in Walbroke et aliæ partes comparuerunt, et compromiserunt in commissarium, ita quod laudum infra viii dies inclusive, sunt jurati, aliter comparuerunt.—f. 109 b.

## XXVII.

*Sepulchri.*—Johanna Beverley apud Lessell apud Cowcross est sortilega, et sollicitavit ii sortilegas conjunctas, ut ipsæ laborarent, quod Robertus Stanton et alius generosus de Grayssyn diligerent eam, et nullam aliam, qui adulteraverunt cum eadem, et, ut dicitur, ipsi pugnarunt pro ea, et unus alium fere interfecit, et maritus ejus non audet morari cum ea pro ipsis ii viris; et est communis meretrix, et pronuba, et vult intoxicare viros, quod ejus ars defecit. Et Agnes commorans cum ea est pronuba.—f. 115.

## XXVIII.

*Omnium Sanctorum Majoris.*—Cecilia Bisshop executrix Nicholao Bisshop recusat solvere summo altari de parochia Sancti Jacobi Garlikhith vis. viii*d.*: citacio in viis et modis.—f. 120.

## XXIX.

*Marie Stanyng.*—Henricus Taylour et ejus uxor, they have not reseyved ther howsyll at Ester, at ther parish Chirche, et uxor mariti [est] diffamator vicinorum suorum; mulier citatur ad xi diem Maii, illo die vir comparuit et continuatur ad diem Veneris proximum.—f. 125.

## XXX.

*Nicholai Macell.*—Willielmus Parson fregit fidem Willielmo Wheteaker pro convencione feni “bargen of hey”

Refusal to offer.

Sorcery.

Refusal to pay to the high altar.

A.D. 1482.

Not confessing at Easter.

Breaking faith.

iii.s. ii.d. xi die Maii comparuit Parson, negavit articulum, in die Martis purgare se se quinta; quia non comparuit ideo suspensus: xi die Junii purgavit se et dimittitur. Ipse non vult solvere pro purgacione: habet diem Veneris ad dicendum causam, quare non debet compelli ad solucionem.—f. 131.

## XXXI.

Breaking faith. *Katerine Colman*.—Willielmus Weldon fregit fidem Magistro Ricardo Boseworthe, pro non solucione xxs. Partes comparuerunt, xvii die Augusti partes comparuerunt; et fatetur se fregisse fidem, et quod promisit solvere in festo Michaelis proximo sub pena excommunicacionis extunc prout extunc et ex tunc prout ex nunc ferendæ, si defecit in solucione, et quod in crastino Michaelis comparebit, ad certificandum quod fecerit in premissis, et tunc tractare pro xxiiis. ultra.—f. 152 b.

## XXXII.

Refusal to pay to light. *Fanchirche*.—Elena Baker recusat solvere lumini Sancte Anne iis. xid. Mulier citata ad xvii diem Augusti, non comparuit, ideo suspensa.—f. 153 b.

## XXXIII.

Singing the Litany derisively.

*Sepulcri*.—Johannes West, horner, Willielmus Andrew apud le Horshede pandoxator, qui cantabant derisorie latiniam in Zeld Hall, quando erant in duodena lequest. in crastino Decollacionis Sancti Johannis Baptiste: Johannes Marierd et Andrew comparuerunt ii die Septembris, fatentur de latinia, et continuatur ad le cameram. West eodem die comparuit et fatetur ut supra, et continuatur ad dictum diem; quia non comparuit, ideo suspensus; West dimittitur.—f. 157 b.

## XXXIV.

Heresy.

*Omnium Sanctorum Stanyng*.—Thomas Wassynghorn ipse est hereticus; dicit quod sacramentum altaris est panis materialis: xii die Septembris comparuit, negavit articulum et comparebit die Lune proximo ad viii dies post.—f. 159 b.

## XXXV.

*Omnium Sanctorum Stanyng*.—Mariona Sylwyng de paro-



chia Omnium Sanctorum Stanyng jurata super veritate dicenda xxvii die Septembris anno Domini mcccclxxxii in domo officialis coram commissario deposuit, quod Thomas Wassyngborn dixit; quod Christus erat falsus patri suo, dum vixit in terra; et beata Maria erat falsa qwene, Bartholomeus [et] Paulus erant falsi occisores hominum; et ista dixit in presentia Capellani parochiæ ibidem, Aderwyke barbitonsoris, et Jenyns, qui duxit in uxorem filiam. Testis et flet et dicit, quod uxor dicti Jenyns retulit, quod dictus Thomas, quando visitavit infirmos, dixit in Anglicis, nowe he go forte with the costardmonger.

Contempt of  
Christ and  
Saints.

Elena Mortemer de eadem jurata &c., deponit, quod audit dictum Wassyngborn tempore visitacionis infirmorum dicentem in Anglicis, wher gothe ye costardmonger, et audit eum sic dicentem iiii vel 5.

Eodem die Wassyngborn: iudex prefixit ei diem Veneris ad octo dies proximum ad comparendum, et respondendum, et illo die viz. iiii die Octobris abjuravit, et dimittitur.—f. 162 b.

## XXXVI.

*Colchirch.*—Willielmus Clarke contravenit juramento per eum prestito, in admissione ad libertatem London, et admissionis ejus in artem eorum, et conducendo alienigencias ad operandum cum eis, et habet quatuor alienigenas operantes cum eo, et modo, xv die Octobris continuatur ad adventum suum in domum.—f. 167.

Hiring foreign-  
ers to work at  
his art.

## XXXVII.

*Botulphi Algate.*—Ricardus Kelly habet duas uxores viventes viz. Alicia Kelly, cui desponsatus erat in Hibernia, et Elisabetha Clifforde, cui erat desponsatus in parochia Omnium Sanctorum Berkyng; et continuatur ad diem Mercurii proximum, illo die partes comparuerunt et dimittuntur.—f. 174 b.

Bigamy.

## XXXVIII.

*Petri Brade.*—Thomas Cowper, et ejus uxor, Margareta, pronubæ horribiles, et instigant mulieres ad fornicandum cum quibuscumque laicis, religiosis, fratribus minoribus, et nisi fornicant in domo sua, ipsi diffamabunt nisi voluerint dare eis ad voluntatem eorum; et vir est pronuba uxori, et vult relinquere eam apud fratres minores pro peccatis habendis:

Pronubæ hor-  
ribiles.

partes comparuerunt xvi die Decembris, negaverunt articulum; die Veneris proximo purgare se se 4 et uxor se 4; illo die partes comparuerunt cum vicinis et dimittuntur.—f. 177.

## XXXIX.

Contempt of  
court.

*Matfelon (Whitechapel).*—Dominus Willielmus . . . . . capellanus parochialis ibidem reprobavit apparitorem pro citacione testis, et percussit eum in cimiterio.—f. 179 b.

## XL.

Subtraction of  
tithes.

*Botulphi Algate.*—Godfrey Speryng cum familia non audit divina in ecclesia parochiali, subtrahit decimas et jura ecclesiastica. Vir citatus ad vi diem Februarii, et presertim purificationis Beate Marie ultimo preterito, oblaciones suas Deo et ecclesie debitas subtrahendo, sententiam excommunicationis in hac parte latae incurrando; quia non comparuit, ideo suspensus; quia non comparuit, excommunicatus.—f. 184.

## XLI.

A. D. 1475. \*

Antenuptial  
incontinence.  
Penance.

*Matfellow.*—Johanna Talbot peperit absque matrimonio, et recessit a loco ubi peperit non purificata; comparuit xvi die Novembris, et habet 3 dominicis precedere processionem nudis pedibus, in Kirtela capite flammola nodata cooperto, in parochia sancti Dionisii.—f. 190 b.

## XLII.

Impeding the  
payment of the  
parishioners.

*Omnium Sanctorum Stanyng.*—Willielmus Knaploke impedivit solucionem parochianorum ibidem, in festo Conceptionis beate Marie ultimo preterito; vir comparuit xiii die Decembris; negavit articulum; in die Lune purgare se se iiii; illo die purgavit se se et dimittitur.—f. 194.

## XLIII.

Consulting a  
magician for  
stolen goods.

*Marie Abchurch.*—Nazareth Jarbrey xxii die Februarii comparuit coram commissario in domo officii, et prestito juramento super veritate dicenda fatetur, quod erat apud

\* Some quires of the Act Book, which contained the proceedings of the years 1478 and 1479, are wanting. The book is composed of separate quires of paper, fastened separately through the back. The remaining quires appear to have been transposed, those containing the earlier proceedings being placed last.

Westminster, cum Thoma Barley, in Totell-strete, et ipse post certas oraciones factas per eundem Thomam, ipse inspexit in unum lapidem de berell, et ibidem vidit una vice unum virum, in certo apparatu, qui reportavit unum pixidem ablatum furtive a domo matris suæ, cum perlis, lapidibus et aliis rebus; et alia vice ad rogatum clerici ecclesie Sancti Georgii, iterato ivit ad domum ejusdem Thome, et ibi conformiter, vidit unum virum et mulierem in certis apparatibus, quos non noverat, et descripto apparatu et forma personarum, clericus dixerat quod novit mulierem, et ipsa erat nominata Longbele; et ista † nihil aliud fecerat, nec dixit, et continuatur ad viii dies.—f. 203.

## XLIV.

A.D. 1476.

Incontinence.

*Sancti Jacobi Clerkynwell.*—Henricus Holden et Elena invicem cohabitant et non sunt nupti: iv die Maii vir comparuit, et fatetur se desponsatum; et continuatur ad festum Nativitatis Sancti Johannis Baptiste ad reportandum litteram testimonialem: comparuit Henricus ii die Septembris et dimittitur.—f. 213.

## XLV.

*Sancti Sepulcri.*—Robertus Close fornicavit cum quadam Johanna Lacy, et eam tenet tanquam in uxorem: Robertus comparuit octavo die Maii, et fatetur, quod contraxerat cum Mariona Bryght, et matrimonium inter eos fuerat solempniatum; et postea contraxerat cum Johanna Lacy, nullo divorcio habito; et remittitur ad consistorium.—f. 213 b.

Confession of bigamy.

## XLVI.

*Albani Wode-strete.*—Robertus Thoroghgoode fregit fidem Roberto Syam, in non servando convencionem de serviendo eidem per unum annum integrum: citatus erga xvii diem Maii, et continuatur usque ad diem Lune sequentem; illo die fuit continuatus ad diem Veneris, illo die Thoroghgoode non comparuit, ideo suspensus; comparuit Thoroghgoode ii die Julii, et continuatur usque ad diem Veneris sequentem; comparuit Robertus Syam iv die Julii, et continuatur usque ad diem Lune, propter absentiam partis Thoroghgoode; comparuit viii die Julii et purgare se, negavit fecisse fidem, super quo purgare se die Mercurii se trina manu.—f. 215 b.

Breaking faith.

## XLVII.

Breaking faith. *Sepulcri.*—Johannes Bryten fregit fidem cuidam Galfrido Damys, promittendo fide sua media, quod non prosequeretur eum in Curia temporali usque ad festum Pentecostes: Johannes comparuit ii die Julii, fatetur quod non fregit fidem, set lapso termino, fecit eum condempnari, et continuatur ad diem Veneris; comparuit eodem die Bryten et continuatur ad octo dies.—f. 223.

## XLVIII.

Not keeping feast-days, &c. *Andree Bernetts Castell.*—Johannes Crow seutor non servat dies festivos, et etiam custodit communem meritricem in domo sua: citatus fuit viis et modis xxvii die Julii: quia non comparuit, suspensus; quinto die Julii dimittitur, in forma pauperis; comparuit Johannes Crow xix die Augusti coram domino commissario, et produxit duos testes fide dignos, [viz.] Johannem Belle et Patricium Samson, qui jurati deposuerunt, quod noti fuerunt † celebrationem matrimonii apud Newcastell inter eum et Agnetem uxorem suam.—f. 225 b.

## XLIX.

Breaking faith. *Sepulcri.*—Ricardus Wyllyngton fregit fidem Ricardo Brown, in non restituendo pignora sibi deliberata, non obstante quod idem Ricardus sepius obtulit ei pecunias, pro quibus impignoravit eadem: comparuit Wyllyngton quinto die Augusti, et fatetur se semper fuisse paratum ad restituendum pignus, si solvisset pecunias; die Veneris sequente partes comparebunt; nono die mensis Augusti, Ricardus Wallyngton dimittitur, quod pars non prosequitur.—f. 228.

## L.

Irregularity in performing service. *Michaelis Bassynsaw.*—Dominus Johannes . . . capellanus matutinalis in loco benedictionis ante sextam lectionem, alta voce dixit, intus et exterius, cum lingua lycke me inferius: citatus fuit ad xvi diem Augusti, quia [non] comparuit, suspensus. Comparuit xix die Augusti et optinuit absolucionem, et juratur peragere penitentiam ei injunctam, xxvi die Augusti dimittitur.—f. 231 b.

## LI.

Symon Merche xxi die Augusti in loco officii constituit Appointment of Proctors.  
Magistros Johannem Berthum, Bladlowe et Brown, procuratores suos conjunctim et divisim, cum clausulis consuetis juxta formam Registri in presentia Gilberti Horne et Thome Yonge testium requisitorum.—f. 232.

## LII.

*Andree Corn[hi]ll.*—Magister Willielmus Spyam Preaching without license of the Rector. predi-  
cavit in ecclesia Sancte Andree sine licencia rectoris ejusdem Baptizing a child who had been previously baptized, and Exposing his person.  
ecclesie, vel ejus locum supplentis, et hoc solempniter; etiam baptisavit puerum, qui preantea fuerat baptisatus, ab obstetrice; et tenet mulierem que nominatur Isabella Dunwyche; in domo ejus mulier qualibet nocte jacet. Et etiam predictus Magister Spyam nude transivit, in vinculo Sancti Petri, apud Olford, demonstrando cunctis hominibus sua secreta: citatus fuit Dominus Willielmus ad quartum diem Septembris, quia non comparuit suspensus; comparuit iv. Willielmus (et) xi die Septembris, et negavit omnes articulos predictos; comparuit Magister Willielmus Spyam xv die Septembris et 5 purgavit se se et dimittitur.—f. 232 b.

## LIII.

*Augustini ad portam.*—Dominus Johannes Harpam non Refusal to swear obedience to Rector.  
vult prestare juramentum obediencie Rectori suo, nec vicem ejus gerenti: comparuit dominus Johannes Harpam xxxi die Augusti et pendet in manibus commissarii.—f. 233.

## LIV.

*Marie Muntar (Mounthaw).*—Rector ecclesie Sancte Marie Swearing, Exercising games at unlawful times.  
Muntaur communiter jurat per corpus et membra Christi, exercendo ludum alearum temporibus illicitis, contra prohibitionem juris, et super hoc laborat fama per totam parochiam, et ad exhibendam pluralitatem: citatus fuit rector ad quartum diem Septembris; dimittitur.—f. 233 b.

## LV.

*Marie Orgar.*—Willielmus Wynche septimo die Septembris Oath to perform penance.  
prestavit corporale juramentum de supplendo penitentiam sibi injungendam per eum vel per dominum; et postea

commissarius precepit eidem, die dominico proximo ad viii dies deliberet capellano parochiali, cum transiturus sit ad pulpitum pro oracionibus dicendis x s.; et capellanus exponet parochianis causam si dedit.—f. 234 b.

## LVI.

Not fulfilling  
penance.

*Sepulcri.*—Thomas Hall alias Bray serviens in pandoxatorio apud Cervum album non implevit penitentiam suam juratam, et citatus ad xiii diem Septembris prætentum ad audiendum obiciendum eidem; quo die non comparuit, et idem Thomas publice dixit Henrico Lowe de eadem, I defy ye comyssary, and seyd yt yer was no good prest in Inglond, but euerychone wher horeferderys: xxiii die Septembris certificamur per clericum, quod littera erit publicata; tamen predictus Thomas non de eadem parochia.—f. 235 b.

## LVII.

Woman not  
purified, &c.

*Martin Atwych.*—Alexander defamatus non venit ad ecclesiam suam, tempore Pasche, et uxor ejus non erat purificata in ecclesia parochiali, set in domo sua, per fratrem, et crastino duxit ad ecclesiam crismatorium et denarium: citati fuerunt vir et mulier xx die Septembris viis et modis xxiv die Septembris qui certificarunt quod littera fuerat executata, et continuatur ad diem Martis proximum, quarto die Octobris, quia non comparuerunt vir neque mulier ideo suspensi; comparuerunt vir et mulier septimo die Octobris et continuatur usque ad diem Mercurii proximum, quia non comparuerunt ideo suspensi.—f. 236.

## LVIII.

Refusal to pay  
ecclesiastical  
dues.

*Johannis Walbroke.*—Johannes Sely recusat solvere ad onera ecclesiastica viz. exhibicionem clerici, luminis trabis, et aliorum onerum, prout taxantur per assessores per eum electos: Citatus Johannes Sely ad quintum diem Octobris; quia non comparuit, suspensus; comparuerunt assessores septimo die Octobris et allegarunt concordatum.—f. 239.

## LIX.

*Christoferi.*—Johannes Fryer et Ricardus Fryer recusant



solvere iconimis ecclesie de Hakkeney vii s. viii d., pro sepultura Thome Fryer patris eorum, cujus executores ipsi fuerant, et vi s. et octo denarios pro torchiis.—f. 239 b.

Refusal to pay churchwardens for burial.

## LX.

*O. S. Magn. (All Saints the Great.)*—Thomas Undyrwode carter communis rixator cum vicinis suis, et etiam vocavit clericum ejusdem ecclesie hereticum, et etiam dixit quod omnes presbiteri, ex Salvatore nostro essent heretici, quam oppinionem hereticus crematus post festum Natalis Domini tenebat: citatus fuit vir ad xvi diem Octobris, quia non comparuit suspensus: comparuit Thomas xxii die Octobris et negavit prefatos articulos in die Veneris proximo purgare se se 5; illo die venit cum vicinis et dimittitur.—f. 240 b.

A brawler with his neighbours, Speaking against priests, &c.

## LXI.

*Martini Otewych.*—Dominus Thomas Ysakyр demonstrat secreta sua pluribus mulieribus in eadem parochia.—f. 253.

Demonstrat secreta.

## LXII.

*Matfelon.*—Robertus Coke committit incestum cum filia sua propria: comparuit xxx die Januarii negavit articulum in die Jovis purgare se se i. illo die purgavit se et dimittitur, et in juramento viri dimittitur.—f. 257.

Incest.

## LXIII.

*Matfelon.*—Willielmus . . . . juratus subire penitentiam propter obprobriosa verba contra Dominum et totum officium.—f. 258.

Oath to perform penance.

## LXIV.

*Martini in Vynteria.*—Nicholaus Haukyns non audit divina, set jacet in lecto in tempore matutinarum et misse de die dominica in dominicam, citatus fuit Nicholaus ad vii diem Marcii, quia non comparuit, ideo suspensus.—f. 264.

Lying in bed during matins.

(Non fiat processus.)

## LXV.

*Botulphi Bysch.*—Johannes Bere diffamavit vicinos et credit in sortilegio: comparuit Johannes xiii die Marcii et

Believing in sorcery.

negavit prefatos articulos ; in die Lune proximo purgare se se 5 ; illo die vir purgavit se se et dimittitur.—f. 265 b.

## LXVI.

Refusal to pay  
legacy.

*Marie Wolchyrch*.—Johanna Smewen recusat solvere fraternitati Sancti Nicholai septem nobilia legata per Edmundum Smewen maritum predictæ Johanne, cujus executrix ipsa fuit Johanna: comparuit xiiii die Martii; dicit quod solvit vii nobilia plus quam deberet; et continuatur usque diem Martis proximum sequentem; illo die ex consensu partium Johanna dimittitur.—f. 265 b.

## LXVII.

A. D. 1477.

Not confessing  
to his own  
priest, &c.

*Jacobi Garlyc hygth*.—Johannes Warsam skynner non erat confessus a proprio sacerdote per duos annos, et recusat solvere decimas ad summam iiii*s*. Comparuit Johannes xxix die Marci, et fatetur se debere tres solidos, et pro isto anno confessus fuit in ecclesia cathedrali Sancti Pauli; et continuatur processus usque ad diem Martis proximum sequentem; illo die quia Johannes non comparuit, ideo suspensus; Johannes xxii die Aprilis et continuatur usque ad diem Jovis proximum sequentem; illo die continuatur usque ad diem Sabati proximum sequentem; xxix die Aprilis de consensu continuatur ad festum Pentecostes: non comparuit, ideo suspensus: xx die Decembris allegatur concordia, ideo dimittitur.—f. 268 b.

## LXVIII.

Refusal to fulfil  
oath.

*Margarete Lothebyry*.—Johannes Pynchebeke funder, prestatit juramentum coram majore de observando ordinationes artis pistorie, et recusat perimplere juramentum; citatus fuit vir ad xv diem Aprilis, comparuit vir illo die et continuatur usque ad diem Jovis proximum futurum: super isto dimittitur.—f. 272.

## LXIX.

Not hearing  
service in Lent,  
&c.

*Petri Poure*.—Johanna Bobet non audivit divina servicia in propria ecclesia parochiali per totos dies dominicos quadragesimæ et nunquam vel raro venit propriam ecclesiam; xxiii die Aprilis mulier dimittitur.—f. 273.

# ACTA HABITA

CORAM

MAGISTRO DOCTORE JANE,

COMMISSARIO

LONDON. INFRA CIVITATEM LONDON.

Pro correctione delinquentium a primo die consecracionis  
Reverendi in Christo patris et domini domini Ricardi  
Dei gratia Londonien. Episcopi factæ xv die mensis  
Novembris anno Domini millesimo cccclxxxix.

---

## LXX.

*Marie Hill.*—Johanna Corbett sortilega et utitur sorte- Sorcery.  
legiis: purgavit se cum vicinis et dimittitur.—f. 6.

## LXXI.

*Christophori.*—Lodwicus Ambrose adulteravit cum Elisa- Adultery.  
betha Reynold: citatus ad xi diem Januarii, illo die non  
comparuit, ideo suspensus; xxii die comparuit et fatebatur  
crimen, et solvit pro redempcione penitencie iis. iiii*d.*; unde Redemption of  
apparitor habuit pro feodo suo xd., pro dimissione vid. et penance.  
sic restat pro domino iis., et habet ad solvendum iis. et iiii*d.*  
infra mensem.—f. 10 b.

## LXXII.

*Michaelis Cornehill.*—Petrus Manyfeld communis pronuba Pronuba.  
et presertim fovet lenocinium inter Jacobum Grenebarow  
Estirling et diversas alias mulieres suspectas, et idem Petrus  
violenter et furtive rapuit quandam Aliciam Burle contra  
voluntatem suam extra domum patris et matris ejusdem  
Alicie, et tenuit eandem in Camera sua per longum tempus  
committendo cum eadem crimen fornicacionis, et postquam  
saciatus erat de eadem, vendidit eandem cuidam Esterlingo in  
le Stiliard: citatus ad xii diem Januarii, illo die comparuit et

fatebatur crimen et iterum veniat; non comparuit ideo suspensus.—f. 13.

## LXXIII.

Incontinence.

*Katerine Cristchirch.*—Johanna Avys fornicavit cum Roberto Bentley, et dictus Robertus custodivit quandam Katerinam vel uxorem suam per spacium duorum annorum, et matrimonium non erat solemnisatum inter eosdem in facie ecclesie: ambo citati ad xviii diem Januarii, illo die non comparuerunt ideo suspensi; ii die Marcii dicta Johanna et dictus Robertus comparuerunt et confessi sunt crimen, et solverunt pro redempcione penitencie vis. viii*d.*—f. 19.

## LXXIV.

Words concerning the mass.

*Katerine Cristchirch.*—Juliana Wilkyns dicit, quod quilibet presbiter potest celebrare duas missas cum una hoste omnibus diebus in anno: dimittitur in forma pauperis.—f. 41.

## LXXV.

Perjury.

Johannes Hall baker, perjurator et perjuravit se Roberto Dod et Johanni Ingram arbitratoribus inter Johannem et Ricardum Smyth baker; non comparuit ideo suspensus.—f. 57.

## LXXVI.

Administering goods without authority of the ordinary.

*Magni.*—Johannes Pye administrat certa bona viz. sex libros M. Oliveri Antony sine auctoritate ordinarii, ad summam viii*l.* iiis. iii*d.*; xxviii die Marcii comparuit et negavit articulum et purgavit se 4 manu die Jovis proximo; quo die comparuit et purgavit se cum vicinis viz. M. Ricardo Belle, Edwardo Hanson, Johanne Demy, Johanne Atkynson, et Thoma Kapis, et solvit feoda; dimittitur.—f. 58 b.

## LXXVII.

Perjury.

*Michaelis Quenehith.*—Willielmus Wodelake perjurator et perjuravit se xii hominibus, quod non vexaret Willielmum Petit.—f. 60 b.

## LXXVIII.

A. D. 1490.

Primo die mensis Aprilis anno Domini millessimo cccclxxxx

coram Magistro Doctore Jan commissario &c. comparuit Johannes Gunton civis et dier London, et tactis per eum sacrosanctis Dei Evangeliiis ad ea corporaliter juravit, de fideliter satisfaciendo et solvendo Johanni Bellawe et Ricardo Milard, ad usum Elizabethe Medigo, cum qua commisit adulterium et eandem imprignavit, et in recompensacionem ejusdem dilicti, solveret *iiii l.*, forma sequente, viz. vi die mensis Junii proximo futuro *xx solidos*; in festo Assumpcionis beate Marie Virginis tunc proximo sequente *xx solidos*; in festo Omnium Sanctorum tunc proximo sequente *xx solidos*; et in festo Sancti Johannis Baptisti tunc proximo sequente *xx solidos*.—f. 64.

Oath to make payment in recompense for commission of adultery.

## LXXIX.

*Mildrede Pultre*.—Uxor Willielmi Symson communis diffamator vicinorum, et presertim diffamavit Johannam Rede, sic dicendo de eadem, quod sponsus ejusdem Johanne esset fatuus, quod crederet aliquid verbis vel dictis prefate Johanne uxoris sue, eo quod eadem Johanna est communis meretrix, et quod jacuit ad le Stewisside ibidem, ad Vulterando; et eciam dum eadem Johanna erat ibidem, quidam ciphus argenti, precii *x l.* furatus erat, pro recompencione cujus, dicta Johanna dedit pronube ejusdem domus apud le Stewissid, unum pecium le velwet, et eciam pro ea intencione quod dicta pronuba celaret suum consilium; et vult probare, quod omnia predicta sunt vera, quare offert se producere unum hakeneyman, a quo dicta Johanna conduxit unum equum, super quo illo tempore equitavit versus Crome.—f. 66 b.

Diffamation.

## LXXX.

*Olavi Silver-strete*.—Johanna Barowe nuper uxor et executrix Thome George, non perimplevit voluntatem dicti Thome, set differt de die in diem perimplere eandem, et saltem non solvit *xs.* pro cera empta, et expensa, in funeralibus dicti Thome George; et eciam non solvit *vis. viii d.* legatos arti sue, ut clare patet in testamento dicti Thome, ac eciam *vis. et viii d.* legatos coexecutoribus dicti Thome George. Citata ad *xxvi* diem Aprilis; illo die non comparuit ideo suspensa.—f. 75.

Executrix not fulfilling will.

## LXXXI.

“Temeraria”  
administration  
of goods.

*Margarete Brigestrete.*—Officio intimatur, quod Thomas Strete plummer sua temeritate ministrat et in proprium et nepharium usum pervertit bona, res, debita, Jocalia et catalla ejusdem Henrici Wiser, dictarum parochie civitatis et dioc. dum vixit defuncti etc.—f. 97.

## LXXXII.

Sorcery.

*Botulphi Bishop.*—Johanna Benet alias Warde sortelega et utitur sortelegiis: Citata ad x diem Junii: et dicta Johanna vult accipere longitudinem hominis et facere in candelam ceri et offerri coram imagine, et sicut candelam consumit, sic debet homo consumere. Citata ad xi diem Junii; illo die non comparuit, ideo suspensa.—f. 106.

## LXXXIII.

Expulsion of  
wife from his  
house.

*Anne infra Aldriche.*—Hugo Manton expulit uxorem suam a domo habitacionis sue, nec vult permittere eam secum habitare, nec debita conjugalia ei impendere; xxvi die Julii emanavit littera viis et modis, quia non potuit apprehendi, illo die non comparuit, ideo suspensus.—f. 131 b.

## LXXXIV.

Suspicion of  
heresy.

*Botulphi Algate.*—David Chirke notatur suspectus de eresī, quia vagat tempore divinorum, nec ad aliquam ecclesiam venit diebus festivis.—f. 135.

## LXXXV.

Subtraction of  
tithe for house.

*Algate Stepnyth.*—Thomas Colby recusat solvere suo curato secundum ratum domus sue, viz. xiiis. iiiid. et hoc est per annum xvid., et est a retro per vii annos, et hoc ascendit ad summam ixs. iiiid.: ultimo die Septembris emanavit littera viis et modis, quia non potuit apprehendi; vii die Octobris emanavit littera suspensionis.—f. 155 b.

## LXXXVI.

Promise to  
restore certain  
“vasa electri.”

iiii die Octobris anno Domini millesimo cccclxxxx Willielmus Wright promisit fide sua media, in manu mei Johannis Bellaw, quod satisfaceret Ricardo Smyth pistori

certa vasa electri, quas uxor janitoris de Haliwell deliberavit uxori dicti Willielmi ad custodiendum, citra festum Simonis et Jude; et produxit Matheum Chambir, et ipse Chambir promisit nomine dicti Willielmi eundem promissum.—f. 163.

## LXXXVII.

*Marie Matfelon.*—Henricus Whitehors procurat et sollicitat Pronuba. juvenculas, et servientes diversorum virorum, ad committendum crimen fornicacionis; et eciam duxit quandam Margaretam apud le Stewsside, et ibi eam vendidit cuidam pronube.—f. 176 b.

## LXXXVIII.

xxix die mensis Novembris coram domino commissario Promise to abide by arbitration. Willielmus Saywell et Jacobus Fynall compromiserunt in Rogerum Hawell, Thomam Fordem, Magistrum Johannem Rede, et Willielmum Milborn in omnibus causis inter eosdem motis, saltem, pro diversis bonis in custodia, ut asseritur, dicti Jacobi Fynall, quæ nuper fuerunt, ut Saywell asserit Johanne Lynman alias Janakyn Lynman, nuper uxoris Frank Lynman defuncti, dum vixit de Henvylde; qui quidam Frankus indebitatus erat dicto Willielmo Saywell, tempore mortis sue, ut idem Willielmus asseruit, in summa xx*l.* pro brasio, ab eodem Willielmo empto per dictum Frank; super quibus omnibus et singulis dicti Willielmus et Jacobus, fide sua media promiserunt in manu Johannis Bellaw, et uterque eorum promisit ad standum laudo et arbitrio dictorum arbitratorum in alto et basso, ita quod ferant laudum citra festum Epiphanie proximum futurum vel in eodem, sub pena xls. viz. xxs. officio et xxs. ad vetus opus ecclesie Sancti Pauli; sin autem iterum comparebunt coram dicto domino commissario in proxima curia, post dictum festum Epiphanie, ad audiendum voluntatem ejusdem etc.—f. 189.

## LXXXIX.

*Stephani Colman.*—Johanna Foster vi oppressit in lecto Stifling infants. suo duos infantes, viz. unum eorumdem Johannis Paris, et alterum erat suum: Materia continuata est, usque dicta Johanna peperit puerum suum; comparuit.—f. 201.



## XC.

*Fidis.*—Willielmus Stamford, alias Paynter apparitor archidiaconi London fornicavit cum quadam juvencula vocata in domo sua penultimo die Decembris mensis instantis, occasione cujus M. Ricardus Spencer uxor ejus et alii ex clamore dictæ juvenculæ audiverunt magnam vocem etc. Idem Pronuba. Willielmus notatus est pronuba inter Margaretam Tanfeld et dominum Gotcham et alios presbiteros et diversos homines suspectos a die in diem, per dies et noctes.—f. 201 b.

## XCI.

*Olavi Silver.*—Margareta Heywod, communis meretrix, eciam conversatur cotidie cum presbiteris, et nonnullis aliis laicis sinistrae opinionis et mali nominis: x die Februarii comparuit dicta Margareta et negavit articulum et purgavit se cum vicinis, viz. Katerina Russell, Elisabetha Hunte, Emmela Brewer, et solvit feoda et dimittitur.—f. 207.

## XCII.

*Nicholai Coldhar.*—Dominus Patricius presbiter parochiæ ibidem, commisit incestum cum quadam Rosa Williamson filia sua spirituali, et cotidie conversatur cum eadem nimis suspiciose in camera sua. Vir citatus ad x diem Februarii; illo die comparuit, et negavit articulum, et purgavit se propria manu et dimittitur.—f. 221.

*Nicholai Olde.*—Dominus Johannes celebrans in eadem ecclesia pro anima Magistri Snoring adulteravit cum dicta Rosa Williamson. Vir citatus ad x diem Februarii, illo die comparuit, et negavit articulum, et propria manu, et dimittitur.

*Nicholai Olde.*—Dominus Thomas Goose adulteravit cum dicta Rosa Williamson, et eciam quidam Dominus Thomas Deye tenet eandem. Dominus Johannes Goose citatus ad xxi diem Februarii.

*Nicholai Old.*—Dominus Henricus Stocton adulteravit cum eadem Rosa, et erat deprehensus cum eadem, eo signo

etiam quod prefata Rosa erat custos canis sui per multa tempora.—f. 221.

*Nicholai Olde.*—Johannes Godwyn adulteravit cum eadem Idem. Rosa Williamson et erat deprehensus cum eadem per aliam mulierem et habet uxorem satis venustam.

*Nicholai Olde.*—Johannes Warwick quondam clericus Adultery, and killing his own wife. parochie ibidem adulteravit cum eadem Rosa Williamson et ob amorem illius mutilavit, et quasi interfecit uxorem propriam.—f. 221 b.

## XCIII.

*Marie att Hill.*—Johanna Yche communis perjuratrix et Perjury. juravit super librum, quod Willielmus Brown nunquam carnaliter cognovit eandem, et dictus Willielmus fatebatur crimen, et eciam adulteravit cum Johanne Maskatt, et dictus Willielmus Smyth postea fugiit et recessit extra jurisdictionem.—f. 229.

## XCIV.

*Leonardi in Foster-lane.*—Magister Lodowicus Kaerleon in Begetting children in contempt of all laws. maximum obprobrium Christianorum imprignavit Margaretam servientem suam, et misit eam ad patriam ibi expectando quousque edidit partum, et post reversationem ad domum suam. Et iterum eam imprignavit; et similiter misit eam extra civitatem et adhuc est prignans, nec curat de Deo nec de domino Rege, cui servit, nec de lege, nec de ministris legis; et habet uxorem juvenem, quæ certa est de istis, et omnes vicinos suos.—f. 237 b.

## XCV.

xix die mensis Marcii comparuerunt coram domino com- Claim of debt. missario judicialiter sedente Thomas Palmar et Alicia Palmer uxor Thome Palmer, qui acclamarunt xiiii. *vid.* sibi deberi, ab Alano Atkynson nomine mutui, ad quod debitum probandum introduxerunt tres testes, in forma juris juratos, scil. Ricardum Palmer, Willielmum Whattson, et Willielmum Varley, et Thomam Huntley, qui deposuerunt tactis sacrosanctis evangeliis, eos audivisse predictum Alanum Atkynson

predictum debitum, et summam ante ejus accessum ad mare sponte recognovisse pro servicia pane et aliis.—f. 243 b.

## XCVI.

A.D. 1491.  
Adulterer and  
blasphemer.

Johannes Milles controuller de le costomhowse commisit fornicacionem cum una Magistra Philippa, et suscitavit unam prolem vel duos, eciam est communis adulter et eciam blasphemator Dei et detractor ecclesie. xxv die Aprilis comparuit et negavit articulum et purgavit se propria manu, coram domino commissario, in ecclesia sancti Pauli; set nichil solvit pro feodis curie.—f. 245 b.

## XCVII.

Refusal to pay  
obit.

*Martini in le Vyn tre.*—Johannes Gowse recusat satisfacere domino Johanni Ryvallo salarium suum pro celebracione animæ patris sui a retro existente per dimidium anni viz. v. marcas: xi die Aprilis certificare curie quod partes sunt in tractatu, et ideo continuatur per quindenam.—f. 249 b.

## XCVIII.

Incontinence.

*Andree Cornhill.*—Cecilia

moram trahens apud

le Pewterpote fornicavit cum Johanne Beucham. Citata ad xii diem Aprilis illo die comparuit mulier, et negavit articulum, et dominus injunxit ei ad purgandum se se 5 manu die Jovis proximo futuro; illo die comparuit cum purgatoribus suis, viz. Alicia Dale, Elisabetha Donwich, Johanna Eggecote, et Emma Lancelate; dictus Beucham coram domino commissario recognovit, et dixit se contraxisse matrimonium cum dicta Cecilia, et dominus super eodem eos examinavit, et mulier fatebatur quod hinc ad ii anno[s] elapsos, unde dilexit dictum Beucham, et in mente sua erat determinata eum habere in virum suum, et ea intencione eum diligebat et non aliter, nec pro aliqua alia causa; set dicit quod jam non ita bene eum diligit, pro eo quod prodigaliter se habet se in suis expensis, et in illicitis ludis expendit pecunias suas, viz. at the dise et the cardis.—f. 251.

Reasons given  
for breaking  
marriage-  
contract.

## XCIX.

*Bartholomei Parvi.*—Lovns de Movenda fornicavit cum Johanna More. Vir citatus ad xv diem Aprilis; illo die

comparuit et negavit articulum et purgavit se se propria manu et non vult solvere feoda curie, ideo suspensus; comparuit et negavit articulum et purgavit se propria manu et dimittitur.—f. 255. Non-payment  
of fees of court.

## C.

Notatur officio quod Edmundus Aldred tenet in adulterium Adultery.  
Johannam Stoack: xxviii die Aprilis vir comparuit et fatebatur crimen, et allegavit se contraxisse matrimonium cum Contract.  
eadem muliere; set notatur officio quod habuit aliam uxorem superstitem, et hoc instanter negavit, et purgavit se super eodem, viz. cum Johanne Bulphan, Thoma Fowler, Willielmo More et Willielmo Petyt.—f. 261.

## CI.

*Omnium Sanctorum Majoris.*—Jenycott Gaskon non erat confessus, nec recepit sacramentum heucaristiam a suo curato, Not confessing  
or receiving.  
set sine licencia ejusdem curati eandem ut dicitur recepit, in ecclesia Sancti Martini in le Vyntre: citatus ad xxix diem Aprilis; illo die non comparuit ideo suspensus.—f. 262.

## CII.

*Stephani Colman.*—Alicia Nicolson communis diffamator Diffamation.  
vicinorum suorum et presertim diffamavit uxorem Johannis Mody in Anglicis hore et prestes hore: xxvi die Maii comparuit dicta Alicia Nicolson et negavit articulum et purgavit se 5 manu die Sabati proximo futuro, et prefata Mody habet ad probandum verba predicta eodem die: illo die comparuit dicta Mody cum purgatoribus suis Johanna Corbett, Gilmyn Badcoke, Johanna Webbe; eodem die comparuit Purgation.  
Nicolson, cum purgatoribus suis, viz. Johanna Straford, Johanna Lenne, Elizabetha Alison, et Johanna Coo; illo die comparuit Mody et introduxit duos testes, scilicet Aliciam Witnesses  
sworn and  
depose.  
Cottisbroke et Johannem Bedill, ad probandum verba diffamatoria predicta contra Aliciam Nicolson, quæ tactis sacrosanctis evangelis, illa predicta Cotisbroke deposuit se audivisse Aliciam Nicolson hujusmodi verba protulisse; quidam presbiter nomine Ricardus misit pro prefata Mody trina vice in uno die, et finxit se egrotum; et quod visitaret eundem, et ibi perstaret cum eo per tres horas continuas: partes compro-

Compromise. miserunt in Johannem Pares et Simonem Lorimer, ita quod ferant laudum citra festum Sancti Johannis Baptiste proximum, et ad hoc sunt jurati; sin autem, iterum comparebunt.—f. 267.

## CIII.

Sabbath breaker. *Christofori*.—Willielmus Turnour violator Sabatorum, et Not confessing or receiving. etiam non erat confessus a suo curato, nec recepit sacramentum in ecclesia sua parochiali, nec vult audire divina in dicta ecclesia.—f. 270 b.

## CIV.

Disturbing service, &c. *Johannis Walbroke*.—Thomas Nash perturbator divinorum et objurgator, et suscitator, viz. proferens verba preterita in die Sancti Petri et in festo Epiphanie Domini, in Anglicis, what be you but horis, harlatts, et bawdes.—f. 277.

## CV.

Haunting taverns. *Fidis*.—Henricus Persey inhoneste adheret multis tabernis, et ibidem custodit malam gubernacionem, viz. inter suspectas mulieres et malos homines.—f. 284 b.

## CVI.

Not confessing previous to marriage. *Mathei Friday*.—Johannes Wynter non erat confessus antequam erat maritatus; comparuit et fatebatur crimen, et Dominus Commissarius injunxit sibi penitentiam publicam, et perimplevit penitentiam sibi injunctam et dimittitur.—f. 290.

## CVII.

Adultery. *Hospitalis Sancti Bartholomei*.—Magister Johannes Belle adulteravit cum quadam Margareta Sanfeld, et detinuit eandem per septem annos publice in civitate Eboraci, per tres annos, quæ peperit tres proles per eundem. Item predictus Magister Bell tanta levitate et voluptate inductus et affectus, cum predicta Margareta nuper esset in comunicando de contrahendo matrimonio, ex adverso veniens eam sic est conjuratus. Fy on the harlott, what hast thou but of me, nother hose, nor shoo, nor kirtill, nor gown, but all of me; if I see the speke eny more with hym, I shall kutt of thi nose, pretextu quorum verborum predicta Margareta est extra se jam posita et totaliter demens effecta.—f. 292 b.

## CVIII.

*Margarete Lothbury.*—Nicholaus Calff et Radulphus Austen communes susurones, conspiratores, et libertatum ecclesiasticarum contradictores, violatores, ac eciam in quantum possunt eversores, nomina sinistra sacerdotibus imponentes Anglice, horson prestis et horemongeris; eciam sic dicendo, I wold ther wer never a prest in Ingland. xxviii die Junii comparuerunt et expresse negaverunt, et dominus dimisit eos quia honesti sunt.—f. 293 b.

Conspirators  
vilifying  
priests, &c.

## CIX.

xxi die mensis Junii anno Domini millesimo cccclxxxx primo coram domino commissario comparuit quedam Matildis Blankett, quondam ut asserunt uxor legitima cujusdam Johannis Blankett, sibi intimavit et demonstravit, quod eadem Matildis dictum Johannem virum suum ab ejusdem Matildis consorcio conjugali per tempus et tempora xviii annorum et ultra jam ultimo preterito, absentem expectavit, et jam nuper de ipsius obitu verissimas habuit presumptiones, Robertum Tod et Hugonem Manton civitatis London, coram nobis publice in judicio tanquam testes, ad perhibendum testimonium de et super obitu prefati Johannis mariti sui produxit sibi, humiliter supplicans, quatenus eosdem Robertum Tod et Hugonem Manton de et super obitu ejusdem Johannis viri sui diligenter examinare curaret. Dictus dominus commissarius supplicationi suæ hujusmodi inclinans, eosdem Robertum et Hugonem de et super obitu prefati Johannis mediantibus primitus juramentis suis corporalibus diligenter examinavit, qui sic examinati deposuerunt, quod prefatus Johannes apud pontem civitatis London, tempore quo le Bastard Fawkynbrigge jam ultimo insultum fecit, ibidem interfectus erat, et hoc dicunt se scire pro eo quod fuerunt et sunt consanguinii dicti Johannis nuper defuncti, et bene ipsum noverunt, et viderunt eundem Johannem mortuum super pontem predictum.—f. 294.

Witnesses to  
prove the death  
of husband.

## CX.

*Georgii Botulph lane.*—Lodowicus Contreyve contemptor curiæ pro eo et ex eo quod idem Lodowicus injuste vexavit,

Contempt of  
court in arrest-



ing an apparitor.

ac arestari fecit, Jacobum Patenson apparitorem juratum, nullam justam causam habens, set ex causa odii et propter execucionem officii sui et mandati judicis, eum ut presertim vexavit et turbavit minus juste, in magnum contemptum curie, ac in non modicum dampnum et prejudicium dicti Jacobi; cujus pretextu et occasione vexacionis et turbacionis predicti, nonnullas expensas fecit et exposuit ad summam xxxs. Citatus ad xx diem Julii, illo die non comparuit ideo suspensus.—f. 308.

## CXI.

Not confessing  
nor receiving.

*Marie at Naxe.*—Simon Paviour non fuit confessus tempore quadragesime, nec recepit sacramentum heucariste in tempore Pasche: Citatus ad xx diem Julii, illo die non comparuit ideo suspensus: vi die Augusti emanavit littera excommunicationis.—f. 309 b.

## CXII.

Pronuba inter  
presbiteros, &c.

*Sepulcri.*—Johanna Cuttyng communis pronuba, et presertim inter presbiteros, fratres, monachos et canonicos, et eciam inter Thomam Peise, et quandam Agnetam, et eciam inter Johannem Pynd et dictam Agnetam. Citatus ad xx diem Julii.—f. 311 b.

## CXIII.

Vexatiously  
prosecuting.

*Dunstani in Occidente.*—Galfridus Curst injuste vexavit Johannem a Boron, pro eo quod dictus Curst prosequeretur eundem, coram domino commissario pro violacione fidei; qui quidem Johannes nunquam fidem fecit eidem Galfrido, pro solucione alicujus summe pecuniarum, propterea idem Johannes petit expensas ab eodem Galfrido sibi adjudicari, et eciam pro eo et ex eo quod dictus Curst defecit in prolacione non tantum condemnari in expensis, set eciam pro sua injusta vexacione puniri. Citatus ad xx diem Julii, illo die non comparuit ideo suspensus: xxvii die mensis Julii dictus Curst produxit duos testes, viz. Willielmum Markeham et Johannem Catson et tactis per eos sacrosanctis evangeliis, ad ea jurarunt et uterque eorum juravit, quod presentes erant ubi et quando dictus Boron fecit fidem dicto Curst.—f. 312.

Witnesses to  
prove the  
contrary.

## CXIV.

*Botulphi Aldriche.*—Johannes Mannyng communis usur- Communis  
 pator, pro eo quod prestavit Ricardo Turnor *xiii*d. super usurpator.  
 unam kirtelam, et dictus Johannes vendidit dictam kirtelam  
 pro summa *vs.*, et non vult tradere dicto Ricardo kirtelam  
 suam, nec residuum pecuniarum: Citatus ad xv diem Julii,  
 illo die non comparuit ideo suspensus.—f. 312 b.

## CXV.

xxvi die mensis Augusti anno Domini millesimo cccclxxxxi  
 Willielmus Jamys certificavit se citasse Robertum Pykyn  
 ad comparendum, ad hos diem et locum; viz. in ecclesia  
 parochiali Sancte Ethelburge infra Bisshoppisgate civitatis  
 London: illo die ex mandato judicis, dictum Robertum voca-  
 tum, preconisatum et diucius expectatum, nullo modo com-  
 parentem, dominus commissarius pronunciavit contumacem;  
 et in penam contumacie sue hujusmodi, ab ingressu ecclesie  
 eam suspendidit in scriptis: eodem die, tunc et ibidem, coram Suspension for  
 domino commissario, et in presenciam mei Johannis Bellawe, non-appear-  
 notarii publici, Iconimi ecclesie parochialis sancte Ethelbrige ance upon  
 predictae comparuerunt et produxerunt Thomam Egerton [et] citation.  
 Stephanum Freman; qui tactis per eos sacrosanctis Dei  
 evangeliiis corporaliter jurarunt, et uterque eorum juravit,  
 deposuerunt et uterque eorum deposuit; qui presentes erant  
 in quadam camera, situata infra rectoriam ecclesie paro-  
 chialis sancti Botulphi, extra Bishoppisgate; ubi et quando  
 audiverunt quendam M. Johannem Pykyn, tunc rectorem Detaining  
 ejusdem ecclesie, illo die quo obiit, legasse et condonasse, legacy left to  
 ecclesie parochiali Sancte Ethelburge prefate, the Church. *iiii* marcas  
 legalis monete Angliæ; dictis tempore et die comparuerunt  
 Johannes Jerby, Johannes Frye et Johannes Reynold, qui  
 eciam, tactis sacrosanctis evangeliiis, juraverunt, et quilibet  
 eorum juravit, quendam Robertum Pykyn, prefati M. Johan-  
 nis Pykyn executorem, dixisse, affirmasse prefatum M.  
 Johannis Pykyn, legasse et condonasse predictas *iiii* marcas;  
 et idem Pykyn, ut executor testamenti dicti M. Johannis  
 Pykyn, concenciit eandem summam *iiii* marcarum perim-  
 plere: vi die Septembris continuatur materia in eodem statu  
 in quo est usque adventum domini commissarii.—f. 321 b.

PRIMO die mensis Octobris anno Domini millesimo quadringentesimo nonagesimo secundo, Venerabilis vir Magister Ricardus Blodywell, legum doctor, primo suscepit officium Commissariatus London: et sequuntur Acta Correctionum Delinquentium, infra civitatem London, habita coram dicto domino commissario, incipiente die et anno supradictis.—f. 1.

## CXVI.

A.D. 1492.  
Contempt of  
court.

Vicarius de Shordyche contemptor curie, eo quod dominus monuit eidem ad comparandum coram eo, certis die et loco, et non comparuit, ideo contumax.—f. 2.

## CXVII.

License to  
rector.

V die mensis Octobris anno Domini millesimo cccxc secundo dominus commissarius licenciavit M. Willielmum Lathis, rectorem ecclesie parochialis Sancti Georgii juxta Estchepe, Botolphe lane, civitatis London; celebrare divina, in quacumque ecclesia infra dioc. London, vel extra, per annum integrum, sua cura bene servata.—f. 5.

## CXVIII.

Prosecuting,  
notwithstand-  
ing promise to  
the contrary.

*Edmundi in Lumbarð strete.*—Ricardus Hely ii die instantis mensis Octobris promisit M. Davido Keys curie Cant. procuratori generali de non prosequendo accionem suam, quam temptavit, contra Johannem Aborow servientem ejusdem Davidi: xxiiii die mensis Septembris ultimo preterito coram vicecomite dicte civitatis computatorio de le Pultre ejusdem civitatis, premissis non obstantibus scienter et directe contra promissum suum antedictum, eandem causam prosecutus est et prosequitur, in animæ suæ grave periculum, dictique Magistri Davidi prejudicium non modicum et gravamen: xii die Octobris emanavit littera viis et modis quia non potuit apprehendi: xxvii die Octobris dominus presidens assignavit Trape procuratori Hely, quod idem Hely personaliter compareret coram domino commissario die Mercurii proximo futuro, ad respondendum certis articulis, sibi ministrandis.—f. 9 b.

## CXIX.

*Andree Undirshate.*—Dominus Willielmus Johnson contemptor curie, pro eo et eo quod ubi [et] quando apparitor curie obtulit sibi litteram suspencionis ad exequendum eandem in eadem ecclesia, penitus recusavit eandem recipere; dicendo sub forma sequente in Anglicis, I defye yow knavis, I will not execute the letter, nowthir for thee, nor for thi maister, et violenter percuciebat apparitorem super pectus, in magnum contemptum curie.—f. 10.

Contempt of court ; refusing to execute mandate.

## CXX.

xvii die Octobris anno Domini millesimo ccccxcii Thomas Swayne bladesmyth et Johannes Cutler cives London juramentum corporale coram domino commissario prestiterunt ac fide iusserunt, nomine Simonis Tarre, civis et cutler, London; quod summam xls. quam idem Simon recepit a Johanne Snape, ex dono Johannis Bayly, dum vixit de parochia Sancte Brigide, cuidam Avicie Bayly illo tunc infanti; viz. tempore mortis ejusdem Johannis Bayly, cum ille infans ad etatem legitimam pervenerit, quod tunc illa summa eidem deliberetur, sub pena xls.; quorum xxs. converterentur ad usum sive ad opus Sancti Pauli London, et xxs. ad officium commissariati London.—f. 11.

Promise to pay money left to a minor, under penalty of forfeiture, to charitable purposes, &c.

## CXXI.

ix die Novembris anno Domini millesimo ccccxcii M. Ricardus Laukiston juravit corporaliter super evangeliiis, coram domino commissario, ad perimplendum certam penitentiam; et pro prima parte penitentie, dominus monuit sub pena majoris excommunicacionis, quam judex tulit nunc pro tunc et tunc pro nunc, ad deliberandum vel deliberari faciendum, Margarete Geffrey viduam, duas murras, ad valorem per estimacionem v marcarum et iiii solidorum, si judex ita estimaverit infra octo dies; reliquam partem penitentie judex sibi reservavit: et quoad dictam Margaretam Geffrey quæ simili modo tactis evangelii[s] Dei juravit de peragendo penitentiam sibi per dictum dominum commissarium injunctam, tribus dominicis etc.—f. 21.

Oath to perform penance.

## CXXII.

Contempt of  
court in causing  
persons to be  
vexed for a  
secular matter.

*Laurencii Veteri Judaismo.*—Willielmus Machyn contemptor curie, quia procuravit Henricum Grene, Thomam Jakeson et Thomam Randes vocari, ac vexari in curia seculari, occasione ac pretextu, [et] citacionis sue ad curiam ecclesiasticam et lite inter eosdem in illa curia ecclesiastica pendente et nondum decisa iudice eciam omnibus partibus inhibente.—f. 27 b.

## CXXIII.

Heresy and  
sorcery.  
Obtaining  
money under  
pretence of  
procuring a  
husband for  
the woman.

Fama publica referente, nostro est detectum officio, quod quidam Ricardus Laukiston de parochia Sancte Marie Magdalene in Veteri Piscaria, et Margareta Geffrey vidua, nuper de parochia Sancti Bartholomei Parvi, de et super certis articulis crimen heresie tangentibus et sorserie; viz. quod idem Ricardus anno Domini millesimo cccclxxx mensibus Januarii, Februarii, Marcii, Aprilis, vel in aliquo mense predictorum, viz. quod idem Ricardus protulit ista verba vel eis consimilia, predictæ Margarete in Anglicis, Thow arte a poore widow, and it wer almes to helpe the to a mariage, and if thow wilt do any cost in spendyng any money, thow shalt have a man worth a thousand pounds. Tunc respondebat predicta Margareta vidua, How may that be? Tunc dixit Laukiston, My wif knoweth a connyng man, that by his connyng can cause a woman to have any man that she hath favour to, and that shalbe upon warrantise; for she hath put it in execucion afore tyme, and this shall cost money. Tunc dixit predicta Margareta, I have no good[s] save ii masers for to fynde me, my moder, and my children, and if thei wer sold and I faile of my purpose, I, my moder, and my children wer undoen. Tunc dixit dictus Ricardus Laukiston, Delyver me the masers, and I wille warant thyn entente shalbe fulfilled. Tunc predicta Margareta deliberavit sibi ii murras ad valorem v marcarum et xs. in pecuneis. Super quibus dicti Ricardus et Margareta coram nobis Ricardo Blodiwell legum doctore in iudicio comparuerunt et iurati, tactis sacrosanctis evangeliis, de fideliter respondendo predictis articulis; et eorum cuilibet fatebantur hec omnia esse vera, prout hic suprascribuntur. Tunc iudex, tactis evangeliis, de penitentia utrique parti injungenda perimplendo,

injunxit penitentiam predictis Ricardo et Margarete; viz. quod predictus Ricardus restituat, seu restitui faciat predictas ii murras, vel eorum valorem, dicte Margarete, sub pena excommunicationis majoris infra viii dies; quam tulit iudex nunc pro tunc et tunc pro nunc; residuam partem penitentie iudex sibi reservavit usque in crastinum diei Andree tunc proximum sequentem, et iudex injunxit dicte Margarete publicam penitentiam, viz. tribus dominicis, nudis pedibus capite flammiola nodata cooperta kirtela, manu sua dextra deferentem candelam precii unius denarii crucem processionaliter precedat.—f. 29 b, 30.

## CXXIV.

*Nicholai Acon.* — Dominus Simon presbiter parochialis ibidem conabatur se in quantum potuit, Margaretam Bond servientem cum Johanne Feld eam rapuisse, et pro eo quod noluit in eum consentire, voluit eam suffocasse cum suo flammiolo, prout liquet per vestigia in collo suo remanentia. viii die Decembris, dictus Dominus Simon comparuit, et post communicationem habitam inter dictam mulierem et ipsum, dominus monuit eundem dominum Simonem, ad comparandum coram eo, die Lune proximo, et eciam dominus interim suspendidit eum a celebratione divinorum; et negavit articulum, et purgare se v manu, die Veneris proximo; illo die comparuit cum purgatoribus suis, viz. M. Johanne Pyne, M. Johanne Walran, domino Johanne Malen, et domino Wilhelm Glover, presbiteris, et dominus presidens declaravit eundem legitime purgatum, et dimittitur.—f. 33 c.

Attempted  
rape and stran-  
gulation.

## CXXV.

Notatur officio Thomas High, Georgius Dikeson et Johannes Cowper dioc. London vacabundi, quod sunt communes adulteratores, fornicatores, et diffamatores populi domini regis; et presertim cujusdam Hugonis Vawghon, sic dicendo; quod ipse Hugo fuit de consilio quorundam virorum, qui clam et furtive subtraxerunt certos equos, cujusdam viri capitani dicti Hugonis.—f. 34.

Vagabonds and  
diffamers.

## CXXVI.

Simon Barowe in Silverstrete, keper of Barbors hall,

Prohibition of  
banns.



[citatur] quia in nomine suo et de ejus mandato, Ricardus Maluorne prohibuit bannas editas inter Johannem Hed parochie Sancti Johannis Evangeliste, et Agnetem Daniel de parochia Sancte Katerine in Crechurch : vii die Januarii. comparuerunt partes.—f. 38 b.

## CXXXVII.

Contemning  
the bishop, &c.

*Omnium Sanctorum in Muro.*—Dominus Johannes Roow ibidem rector dixit die dominica ultima in domo Wellys, in presencia parochianorum hec verba sequencia in Anglicis ; viz. I will not lerne of my lord of London nor none of his officers ; for I ame as well lernyd as the best of them all, et vilipendit ordinarium. Item idem rector non servat consuetudinem laudabilem, per omnes ecclesias London ab antiquo observatam ; viz. aquam benedictam aspergendo in parochianos suos divina audientes in ecclesia sua diebus dominicis etc.—f. 57 b.

Not sprinkling  
the holy water  
on the parish-  
ioners.

## CXXXVIII.

Striking  
woman, and  
causing the  
birth of a dead  
child.

*Sanctus Nicholaus yn Masselyn.*—Johannes Russell percussit Aliciam Wanten et ex percussione predicti Roberti, ipsa Alicia erat deliberata puero existente mortuo. xv die Februarii comparuit et negavit articulum et ad purgandum se vi manu.—f. 58 b.

## CXXXIX.

Burying the  
same child, &c.

*Sanctus Nicholaus yn Macell.*—Agnes Coge sepilivit puerum in Pardon chircheyarde, ex precepto Margerie Midwyff que non est de jurisdictione nostra. Nomina [earum] que concenserunt ad sepulturam pueri [sunt] Margareta Plummer et Agnes Kempley : comparuerunt et negaverunt articulos, et purgavit se et dimittitur.—*Id. f.*

Fatebatur crimen.

## CXXX.

Blasphemy,  
&c.

*Clementis Est[c]hep.*—Perys Tailour communis adulter, et communis blasphemator Omnipotentis Dei, et vivit in adulterio cum quadam meretrice nuncupata Amy Tagon, et indies idem crimen committit : comparuit et negavit articulum et postea comparuit et purgavit se vicinis : solvit feoda.—f. 68 b.

## CXXXI.

*Marie Wulchirch.*—Johannes Hauforde communis violator Perjury.  
fidei et perjurus, eo quod purgavit se vicinis et tactis evangeliis,  
juravit, quod non fuit culpabilis, in crimine fornicacionis cum  
eadem Alicia [viz. Alicia Alewoman] et ex majori evidencia  
ac cognicione repertus est culpabilis, ideo perjurus: com-  
paruit et fatebatur articulum et purgavit se vicinis.—f. 72.

## CXXXII.

*Sancti Swythini.* — Thomas Wodewarde—Judex monuit Not to make  
any other con-  
tract of mar-  
riage till his  
cause is dis-  
cussed.  
ipsum, sub pena excommunicationis majoris, quod non pro-  
cederet ad aliquem contractum matrimoniale cum aliqua  
muliere, quousque primitus examinetur, et plene discussiatur  
causa illa matrimonialis que adhuc pendet indecisa, inter pre-  
dictum Thomam et Elisabetham Kyrkeby.—f. 73.

## CXXXIII.

*Michaelis Cornehill.*— curatus ibidem usurpavit Usurpation of  
the ordinary's  
authority.  
officium ordinarii absque auctoritate, in sequestrando bona  
cujusdam nuper defuncti ejusdem parochie.

Item idem curatus commisit administracionem omnium  
bonorum auctoritate sua privata sequestrum cuidam

Eciam dixit nuncio episcopi jurato, quod mallet promovere Sworn to  
obedience.  
archidiaconum et ejus officarios, quam episcopum et suos.  
Comparuit et negavit articulum et juratus e[s]t obediencie,  
et dimittitur ex gracia.—*Id.* f.

## CXXXIV.

A. D. 1493.  
ii die mensis Aprilis comparuit Robertus Warde de Threat to cause  
a person to  
carry a fagot,  
as heretics do.  
parochia Sancte Anne civitatis London et fatebatur se dixisse  
in Anglicis verba sequentia Johanni Boking, I shall make  
the to bere a fagot, the which heretyks (as thow arte one off  
theme) were wont to bere; eodem die comparuit Johannes  
Boking coram domino cancellario presentibus Hugone Peynt-  
wyn officiali et me Ricardo Blodywell commissario, in ecclesia  
cathedrali Sancti Pauli et tunc [et] ibidem dominus cancel-  
larius monuit eidem Johanni Boking, quod compareret coram  
eo in loco consistoriali, die Jovis proximo post dominicam  
in qua cantatur *misericordia Domini*, personaliter ad re-  
spondendum certis articulis et pro personali comparacione

ejusdem fidejusserunt Johannes Tailor, Robertus Cooke, Johannes Lewes, . . . . sub pena xl librarum.—*Id.* f.

## CXXXV.

Heresy.

*Sancte Anne.*—Johannes Bowkyn cobbeler, foveat opiniones hereticas, tenendo candelam in manu sua et dicendo coram testibus viz. Roberto Warde, Johanne Merefeld [et] Gyles Patenson, as this candill doyth vaad and gooth out, lykwyse my soolle shall goo and assend to hevyn. Penultimo Marcii comparuit et negavit articulum, et habet ad purgandum se die Lunæ proximo sequente, septima.—f. 73 b.

## CXXXVI.

To answer to articles of contempt of court.

*Omnium Sanctorum Stanyng.*—Bartholomeus Spott et Birch wulpacker citentur ad respondendum certis articulis contemptum hujus curie concernentibus, primo quia postquam emanavit littera excommunicationis contra Johannem Petyt dicte parochie propter suas multiplices contumacias sigillata cum sigillo nostri officii iidem Bartholomeus et Birch in obprobrium vilipendium et contemptum curie et jurisdictionis litteras nostras confuscarunt vino rubio ita quod curatus non potuit easdem perlegere, quousque recensiones facte cum igne, et cum viderent quod curatus posset easdem perlegere, ipsi easdem litteras in iiii partes frugerunt, unacum sigillo prout manifesto a[p]paret. Preterea predicti gardiani verba obprobriosa in contemptum curie sonantia protulerunt viz. in Anglicis verba sequentia; it shall cost us xx*l.* rathir than the Bisshopspis excommunication shalbe executid here by the prest agaynst eny man. Comparuerunt, negaverunt articulum, solverunt [pro] dimissione et dimittuntur.—f. 76.

Tearing up letters of excommunication.

Opprobrious words used by churchwardens.

## CXXXVII.

A scandalizer.

*Marie Abchurch.*—Elena Dalok communis skandilizatrix vicinorum suorum et istis articulis sequentibus:

An enchantress.

Item in primis quasi incantatrix et dicit quemcumque anatimatizat semper migrat ab hoc seculo.

An anathematizer, &c. &c.

Item quia ipsa dicit quod anatimazavit quamplures qui nunquam postea in hoc seculo vitam duxerunt.

Item quia ipsa dicit quod si habeat celum in hoc seculo, non curat de celo in seculo futuro.

Item ipsa utinizavit se fuisse in inferno quamdiu Deus erit in celo, ut potuisset uncis infernalibus vindicare se de quodam Johanne Gybbys mortuo.

Item ipsa scandilizavit quandam honestam mulierem viventem, et quia non potuit vindicare in ea vivente, modo theranice vellet vindicare in ipsam mortuam.

Item quia diabolice semper agit, et nunquam Deifice.

Item quod ipsa nunquam fuit confessa suo proprio sacerdoti, in tantum quod sacerdos ejus parochie non novit vitam ejus spiritualem, ut asserit.

Item quia ipsa dixit, quod si mandaverit pluviam pluere, ad mandatum ejus pluit.

Item quia dicit, quod habet unum librum, qui dicit sibi omnia futura.—f. 81.

## CXXXVIII.

*Sancte Fidis.*—Detectum est officio, quod Johannes Barkeby personis diversis quibus non prebuit idem Johannes aliquem favorem, solebat ac hucusque solet potum venenosum prebere, et precipue illum potum veneni ministravit consanguinio suo viz. Poll Barkeby ut facilius posset eum privare vita, et ei succedere in hereditates.—f. 87 b.

Ministering food to deprive of life, and succeed in heirship.

## CXXXIX.

vii Junii comparuit dominus Henricus Walman et dominus injunxit eidem penitentiam viz. tribus dominicis precederet processionem nudis pedibus, cum longa toga et cum quodam baculo, quo percucit et quo verberavit dominum Johannem Kendale presbiterum, et manus in eum violenter injecit.—f. 89 d.

Penance.

## CXL.

*Marie Wulchirch.*—Parochiani ibidem quorum nomina patent per quandam cedulam per gardianos ejusdem parochie in curia exhibitam quia detinent certa jura ecclesiastica Deo et ecclesie debita viz. pro stipendio clerici aquibajuli ibidem et pro lumine vocato beme Lyght in eadem ecclesia.—f. 91.

Subtraction of ecclesiastical rights.

## CXLI.

*Alphegi.*—Johannes Oste Pandoxator, apud signum Galli, quia dicit quod illo die quo vidit presbiterum, est infirmus,

Rejoicing at seeing priests in trouble.

et cum seipso malecontentus, gaudet quoque cum et quando videt, vel audit, aliquem presbiterum in aliqua tribulacione seu vexacione : ultra dicit, quod fuit conscius indictatorum plurium ex eis. Et quod vellet ire lx miliaribus pro uno presbitero indictando, vocando que eos, ac in presencia plurium precando Horsyns Prestis they shalbe indyted as mony as comys to my handeling. xix Junii comparuit et negavit articulos; et habet ad purgandum se [die] Veneris proximo sequente, quinta manu : quo die comparuit et purgavit se, Roberto Stevins, Willielmo . . nande [et] Alexandro Richardson et dimittitur.—f. 91.

## CXLI.

Impeding  
matrimonial  
banns, &c.

*Magdalene.*—Willielmus Tailor et ejus uxor et Margareta filia eorundem impedivit banas matrimoniales inter Thomam Morseyt de parochia Sancte Marie Magdalene, et Margaretam Phillips de parochia Marie Strond, eo quia averit, quod prefatus Thomas prius contraxit matrimonium cum prefata Margareta filia dicti Willielmi Tailour: xi Junii comparuerunt partes et jurarunt mutuo ad sancta Dei evangelia per eos corporaliter tacta, quod prefata Margareta dictum Thomam Morfayt aliquo de cetero modo non perturbaret, neque eum impedire et quoquo modo procuraret, nec procurari faciat, sub pena perjurii et dimittitur.—f. 91 b.

## CXLI.

Not serving  
cure properly,  
&c.

*Mildredis.*—Dominus Symon curatus ibidem non servat recto modo curam sibi commissam, in dicendo missam et alia divina solempnia, horis debitis et consuetis, prout de jure tenetur. Eciam idem dominus Symon publice in judicio, iudice sedente, dixit, ac verba sequencia protulit; quod dicta N. fuit capta de domo J et ducta ad Cownter. Et immediater ad instanciam et rogatum magistri Fawkys procuratoris dictæ N. iudice requirente quod sua confessio judicialis inactitetur: vii Maii comparuit et fatebatur, quod dixit dicta verba de M., et ea voluit probare, et affirmare; et eciam dixit, quod ipsa causavit eum spoliari, et eum spoliavit; et mulier dictam primam objectam negavit: et dominus assignavit sibi ad purgandum se, die Lune proximo sequente <sup>v<sup>ta</sup></sup>, et monuit dictum dominum Simonem presentem

ad dicendum contra purgationem hujusmodi, si suum putaverit et adulterium cum eodem interesse : quo die comparuit, et in presenciam domini Simonis, nihil dicentis, purgavit se cum Elisabetha Parker, Laurencia Freman, et Margareta Fowler : et quantum ad articulum spoliacionis, dictus dominus Simon dixit ; quod voluit hoc probare quod viz. eum spoliavit ; tunc dominus remisit eos ad consistorium London.—f. 93.

## CXLIV.

*Laurentii Juri.*—Willielmus Augustyn comparuit coram domino in quadam causa effusionis sanguinis in pugnando in ecclesia Sancti Laurentii, et habet ad comparendum in crastino, responsurum hujusmodi articulis.—f. 102 b.

Effusion of blood in church.

## CXLV.

*Trinitatis Vetere Piscarie.*—Nan Hoper violator fidei et perjura eo quod contraxit matrimonium cum Thoma Polardson calcifice, coram testibus fidedignis fide media ; bannas matrimoniales per tres dominicas continuas legitime inter eosdem editas premissis non obstantibus jam renuntiat et recusat hujusmodi matrimonium. Et ut dicitur per suasionem Johannis Norfolke, qui eandem in concubinam tenet, sic exortata est : et pluries apud stufas pernoctat. Et contumatrix curie, qui dicit et dixit curse and bliss, I sett not a straw by the cursing ther. Citata ad v Julii, non comparuit, ideo suspensa.—f. 104.

Perjury in not fulfilling marriage when the banns had been asked.

## CXLVI.

*Andreni.*—Dominus Galfridus curatus ibidem perjurus, eo quod juravit coram domino, quod evitaret consortium ac colloquium Margarete Bird, nisi fuerit in presentia plurium, ac hoc non obstante, fuit et vivit cum eadem, in taberna Cardenallishate extra Newgate, et ejus amore dixit sue sorori naturali, Ego te interficiam, si amplius et de cetero michi allocutus fueris, seu me mutares a societate sive familiaritate dicte Margarete Bird ; et postquam xxii Julii sequente iterum potavit cum ea, in taberna, viz. Bullished, et sic de die in diem habet conversacionem cum ea, in malum regimen et perniciosum exemplum plurimorum : iii Augusti comparuit mulier et .—f. 113 b.

Perjury in not shunning the company of a woman according to his promise.



## CXLVII.

Perjury re-  
specting will.

*Botulphi Algate.*—Johannes Taverner perjurus homo, eo quod tactis evangeliis, juravit quod testamentum Reginaldi Fremot verum, plenum et fidele erat, hoc non obstante contra effectum et tenorem ejusdem jam obstat et differt et ad suum posse impedit. Citatus ad xxii Septembris, non comparuit, ideo suspensus.—f. 125 b.

## CXLVIII.

Decree for cita-  
tion to say why  
he ought not  
to be excom-  
municated.

xvii die mensis Augusti dominus decrevit Hillarium Jonson parochie Sancti Dunstani in Occidente, alias propter suam contumaciam in non comparendo coram nobis Reverendi in Christo patris, et domini domini Ricardi Dei gracia Londoniensis Episcopi commissario speciali, in hac parte deputato, citandum fore in domo officii ad v post ad allegandum causam quare sua excressente contumacia, excommunicari non debeat; et commisit potestatem citandi eundem Hillarium, Ricardo Forster, Henrico Jonson ac eorum cuilibet conjunctim et divisim: xxii die dicti mensis comparuit Henricus Jonson, et certificavit se, tactis evangeliis, peremptoriter citasse eundem Hillarium xx die instantis mensis in parochia Sancti Jacobi ad hunc diem, quo die adveniente prefatum Hillarium publice preconisato diuque expectato, et nullo modo comparente, dominus pronunciavit contumacem, et in penam contumacie sue hujusmodi, excommunicavit eum in scriptis xxix<sup>mo</sup>.—f. 126.

## CXLIX.

Not certifying  
of execution  
of mandates.

*Bartholomei Parvi.*—Dominus Johannes divina celebrans in ecclesia parochiali ibidem in non certificando ipsum executisse nostra mandata, in litteris excommunicationis, qui quidem dominus Johannes ha[b]uit in eisdem litteris hunc diem Martis, viz. xxiiii Septembris, ad certificandum dicta nostra mandata, prout contineantur in hujusmodi litteris nostris excommunicationis, quas tulimus in scriptis in et contra Laurencium Bonevyse, prout liquet in cedula, quem dominum Johannem in nostris litteris monitum, preconisatum diuque expectatum et nullo modo comparentem pronunciamus contumacem; et in pena contumacie sue, decernimus fore vocan-

dum, ad allegandum causam, quare non debet pronunciari pro contemptore hujus curie.—f. 136.

## CL.

*Benedicti Powliswharf.*—Matilda Goore alias Cooke Overlaying infants. oppressit duos infantes diversis vicibus.—f. 142.

## CLI.

*Magdalene Fish-strete.*—Johannes Steward detectus officio Heresy. de crimine heresim sonante sive tangente, in presencia plurimorum Christianorum bonorum, ubi et quando dixit, videlicet in Anglicis verbis: I set nothing by cursse yff I be ones on horssebake, and my fete within the stiropis. Et sic vilipendit claves ecclesie, in maximum contemptum ecclesie: xv Octobris comparuit curatus et certificavit se peremptorie citasse prefatum Steward, die Dominico erga diem Mercurii proximum sequentem, secundum tenorem et effectum littere viis et modis: xvi Octobris comparuit et dominus monuit eundem ter sub pena excommunicationis prefatis articulis responsurum, qui respondit in Anglicis, Will ye commaunde me any service, for I can gyff yow non aunsver, without my counsell, et sic contumaciter et per judicem ut prefertur Contumaciously refusing to answer without council. monitus recessit. et dominus judicialiter sedens ipsum excommunicavit in scriptis: xxiii Octobris comparuit et negavit articulum; ad 2 articulum ad purgandum se die Lune proximo v manu. Et propter manifestum contemptum, curie, submitit se correctioni judicis et dominus monuit eidem die Lune proximo ad recipiendum penitentiam.—f. 142 b. Excommunication.

## CLII.

Master Thomas Moresse de parochia Sancte Syth. Rogerus Violation of Grove de parochia Sancti Stephani Gardiani violarunt seques- sequestration. trationem domini Reverendi in Christo patris London Episcopi, de bonis Roberti Maunde factam, et auctoritate sua sequestratis, eo quod post mortem dicti defuncti, fregerunt hostiam et appreciari fecerunt. viii Novembris comparuerunt, et dominus assignavit easdem ad comparendum coram eo et subeundum examinationem in crastino, hora octava; quo die viz. ix die Novembris dominus judicialiter sedens, de-

crevit prefatum Thomam Moresse et Ricardum Grove citandum fore; ad diem Mercurii proximum ad subeundum examinationem die Mercurii proximo sub pena excommunicationis majoris; et commissit potestatem Henrici Jonson et Foster conjunctim et . . . citandum et certificandum. f. 146 b.

## CLIII.

Immodest  
behaviour of  
curate.

*Andreui.*—Dominus Galfridus curatus ibidem after he had shryvyn yong women at Estere in the vestry, and asoyled them, thenne he wolde camen with theme, and kysse and put his handis under theyr clothis, and camen with theme to have poynted with them, where he and they myght mete to do syne with theme, and specially with Johan, the servaunt of Agnes Nele.—f. 157 b.

## CLIV.

Excommunica-  
tion for sacri-  
lege.

*Sancti Martini Ludgate.*—Johannes Hyl ibidem excommunicatus pro eo quod commisit crimen sacrilegii, calicem in ferendo de ecclesia Sancti Martini in Vintre, et condempnatus per judicem secularem et satisfecit pro eo . . . . . penultimo die Decembris comparuit et fatetur se condempnasse, per duodenam, et solvit iiiil. cuidam Graunt nomine ecclesie Sancti Martini in Vinetria predicta, et habet die Veneris ad dicendum causam quare non debet excommunicari.—f. 158.

## CLV.

Not being  
obedient to the  
bishop, &c.

*Sepulcri.*—Dominus W. Nutte capellanus parochialis ibidem non est obediens episcopo London, ut tenetur neque ejus ministris. Item idem capellanus erat monitus per commissarium modernum, et injunctum eodem, quod obediret certis mandatis ipsius commissarii, quia contravenit et directe facit contra ea.

Item prefatus capellanus omittit exequi mandata domini episcopi, et ejus commissarii, et publice predicavit et dixit certis nunciis domini sic in Anglicis, I am trobeled and vexyd dayly with suspencions, and lettere of the bisshop of London, ye gete of me neyther peny, nor hal[f] peny, go pley yow. [Citatur] ad penultimum diem Decembris, quo die non comparuit, ideo suspensus.—f. 158 b.

## CLVI.

Dominus Thomas Stokes est pessimi regiminis sedendo in tabernis et potando horis inconsuetis, et violenter percussit dominum Robertum Godderd presbiterum in domo cujusdam Johannis Cooke in Silverstrete et projecit quandam ollam ad caput dicti domini Roberti et fregit ollam.—f. 161 b.

Drinking at  
unaccustomed  
hours, &c.

## CLVII.

*Laurencii Jure.*—Dominus Johannes Smyth communis perturbator et perturbat divina et dat occasionem litigandi ministris in ecclesia ibidem tempore divinorum. xxiii Januarii comparuit et partes concordati sunt et dimittitur.—f. 165.

Disturbing  
divine service.

## CLVIII.

*Marie Abchurch.*—Johannes Daloke debet pro stipendio clerici ibidem iii quateria anni et perturbator divini servicii, eo quod alta voce in festo natalis Domini, infra ecclesiam parochialem infestavit presbyterum et clericum divina cantantem, et communis diffamator vicinorum suorum; et preterea . . . vocavit gardianos ecclesie infra ecclesiam false knavys and horsonys.—f. 170.

Idem.  
Detaining  
clerk's salary,  
&c.

## CLIX.

*Botulphi Aldrishgate.*—Johannes Spencer communis usurarius et precipue commisit usuram cum . . . manente in domo ipsius Spencer ab eo conducta ubi solitus fuit annuatim pro pensione can . . . ipse tamen exigit xs. et sic commit . . . usu . . . —f. 177.

Usury.

[A portion of the leaf is lost by damp, so that little more can be ascertained from it.]

MIDD. ET BARKINGE DECANAT.

## LIBER CORRECTIONUM,

Tempore JOHANNIS PERROT, Commissarii,

1496, 1497\*.

## CLX.

Antenuptial  
incontinence,  
and marriage  
to canon.

*Ikenham*.—Elisabetha Payne notatur quod concepta fuit cum prole antequam maritata fuit, et tunc nuptata fuit cuidam canonico, et habuit maliloquium, Domino Johanni Enskypp in ecclesia et choro ecclesie predictae divina perturbando: x Januarii comparuit et fatetur articulis, et dominus eam jurari fecit, de peragendo penitentiam per eum sibi injungendam.—f. 7 b.

## CLXI.

Not treating  
wife with  
affection.

*Kensyngton*.—Nicholaus Elyott notatur officio quod non tractat Margaretam uxorem suam maritali affectione: Citatus ad primum Februarii; quo die comparuit in presencia uxoris sue. Tunc dominus assignavit eidem Margarete ad introducendum convicinos suos die sabbati proximo, de et super hujusmodi articul[um], et assignavit prefato Nicholao ad comparendum eodem die, quo die comparuerunt multi vicini suorum et allegarunt, quod fama est, et laborat super premissis: tunc dominus monuit eum ad rehabendum uxorem suam citra diem Lune etc.; alias ad comparendum die Jovis proximo, ad allegandum causam quare non debeat excommunicari. Quo die comparuit, et nil erat actum propter diversas causas. xi die Februarii iterum comparuerunt, et prefatus Nicholaus promisit recipere eam, si eum ab actione quam contra eum habet relaxaret; tunc dominus assignavit eis ad comparendum coram eo xvii Februarii ad certificandum eadem, an rehabuerit eam vel non.—f. 8 b.

Proceedings  
thereon.

\* The title of the book is in a more recent hand on the cover.

## CLXII.

*Ikenham*.—Detectum est officio quod cimiterium ibidem violatur et verritur per porcos et alia pecora, et non est circum clausum prout deberet: Citatus est Johannes Jasper gardianus ad iii Marcii; quo die comparuit et asseruit quod Johannes Osmond tenetur manutenere hujusmodi sepem, et quod M. Haines asportavit ramos ad hujusmodi sepem faciendam ordinatos. Tunc dominus decrevit eos citandos fore ad diem Martis, et monuit prefatum Johannem Jasper ad comparendum eodem die; quo die comparuerunt Jasper et Johannes Osmond, quem Jasper dominus monuit ad claudendum hujusmodi cimiterium, citra festum Pasche, sub pena vis. viiid., operibus ecclesie applicandum.—f. 13.

Violation of cemetery by cattle.  
Citation of church-wardens.

Monition to inclose.

## CLXIII.

*Berking*.—Vicarius ibidem notatur, quod dum pergeret ad visitandum egrotos, sacramentum circa eum gerendum, excitavit porcos extra cimiterium, et alio tempore baculo quem in manibus suis habuit, fregit ollas situatas in fenestra cujusdam inhabitantis ibidem. Citatus ad viii Marcii, quo die comparuit et negavit articulum, et dominus indixit sibi purgacionem die Martis proximo: quo die comparuit et purgavit se domino Johanne Geve, domino Willielmo Semar, Johanne Raulens et Ricardo Webstar.—f. 13 b.

Behaviour of clergyman.

## CLXIV.

*Heston*.—Thomas Gape notatur quod diebus dominicis, etiam festis principalibus, intendit operibus servilibus molendini, et alia opera vetita exercenda; et quod asseruit publice sibi liceret hoc facere, saltem post vespervas dictas. iii Aprilis comparuit coram domino commissario, et fatetur quod in festo Epiphanie Domini ultimo preterito post vespervas, et circiter horam ix<sup>nam</sup> in nocte, molebat brasium in molendino suo, propter quod erat prius vocatus coram officiali domini Archidiaconi Midd. et alia contenta in articulo negat expresse. Et ulterius dicit, quod dominus Robertus Ormesey, curatus de Heston, usurpavit jurisdictionem domini, et injunxit sibi propter premissa penitentiam publicam, viz. quod incederet ante crucem in camisia sua. Unde dominus

Working on Sundays and feast-days.



commissarius decrevit eum citandum ad diem Veneris proximum, responsurum super premissis; quo die comparuit, et dixit M. Millett commisit sibi potestatem, ad injungendum penitentiam publicam pro hoc, ante festum Purificationis: comparuit etiam Gape et pro primo articulo allegavit . . . et residuum negavit; et dominus assignavit domino Roberto, ad probandum hujusmodi negotium die Jovis proximo.—f. 14.

---

ACTA CORRECTIONUM de Patria introductorum  
post Festum Pasche, anno Domini mccccclxxxvii, &c.  
—f. 15.

## CLXV.

Exercising  
office of apparitor  
without  
license.

*Edelmeton.*—Thomas Turnell notatur quod exercuit officium apparitoris, sine auctoritate, et quedam, viz. tria testamenta manu sua reservavit domino et suis officiariis ex hoc ignorantibus. xvii Aprilis dominus monuit eum, ad comparendum coram eo, die proximo ad respondendum hujusmodi articulo, et aliis sibi ministrandis.—f. 15 b.

## CLXVI.

Taking turf  
from church-  
yard.

*Stebenhiith.*—Ricardus Foster notatur officio, quod abstulit a cimiterio ejusdem de terra sancta, quasdam turfes, alias vocatas, flagges: differtur ad diem Veneris proximum: differtur ad feriam post festum Trinitatis; comparuit et absolutus est et dimittitur.—f. 17.

## CLXVII.

Taking causes  
from the com-  
missaries court  
to that of the  
archdeacon.

*Sancti Andree, Baynardes Castell.*—Dominus T. Wil-  
l[i]ams, rector ecclesie parochialis ibidem, notatur officio,  
quod ex sua malicia, et contra juramentum suum, in prejudi-  
cium sui diocesani, abstraxit et distulit diversas causas, a curia  
commissarialitatis dicti sui diocesani, ad curiam archidiaconi;  
presertim promovit officium domini archidiaconi de testa-  
mento cujusdam capellani defuncti et preveniendo de istis, re-  
cusavit exequi mandata sibi directa. ix Maii comparuit idem

rector, in capella de Stratford, et dictos articulos objectos instanter negavit, et tunc dominus commissarius assignavit eidem ad purgandum se, super eisdem articulis crastino Trinitatis sequente, vii<sup>ma</sup> manu, viz. tribus presbiteris et iii<sup>bus</sup> laicis. Quo die comparuit et fatebatur quod non debiter certificavit se executum esse litteras suspensionis sibi directas, et desuper submitit se correctioni domini. Tunc dominus eum jurari fecit, de peragendo penitentiam, sibi per dominum London, vel eum injungendam.—f. 19 d.

## CLXVIII.

*Fulham.*—Vicarius ibidem notatur officio quod contempnit dominum et ejus jurisdictionem, in non exequendo mandata sibi a domino directa, viz. contra Emmam Colby et Katerinam Lewes reatum perjurii et contemptum curie incurrendo. xxii Augusti in ecclesia de Fulham comparuit, et fatebatur quod non executus est mandatum, nec eo die voluit, nec pro domino London, neque ejus commissario, quia fuit eodem die in eadem ecclesia quidam pardonarius, quem asserit, majorem auctoritatem domino London aut ejus commissario habere. Et dixit quod licet eodem mulieres excommunicate fuissent, dummodo pardonarius ibidem fuit, reciperet eas in ecclesiam eodem die. Tunc dominus monuit eum, ad comparendum coram eo, in domo officii, ultimo Augusti certis articulis, etc. —f. 25 d.

Contempt in  
not executing  
mandates.

Greater autho-  
rity alleged in  
excuse.

## CLXIX.

*Edelmeton.*—Thomas Baty notatur quod asseruit se nolle comparere pro citatione mandatarii, nisi visa primitus ejus auctoritate. xiiii Octobris comparuit et fatebatur et submitit se et juravit de perimplendo penitentiam, etc. et continuatus usque ad adventum domini London.—f. 29.

Refusal to  
appear without  
seeing the  
mandatory's  
authority.

## CLXX.

*Fulham.*—Ricardus Vaughan notatur quod perturbavit jurisdictionem domini, et libertatem ecclesiasticam, in arrestando Walterum Burn. Citatus ad istam curiam xvii die Novembris, comparuit et fatebatur quod arrestavit dictum Burn, sed dicit quod ignoravit, tempore arrestationis eum citatum fuisse, et submitit se correctioni, et juravit de peragendo penitentiam sibi injungendam.—f. 31.

Disturbing  
jurisdiction.

## CLXXI.

Suspension.

iv Octoberis. In Dei nomine, amen, Nos Johannes Alen etc. vicarium de Yelyng London dioc. ad hos diem et locum citatum, preconisatum diuciusque expectatum, et non comparentem, pronunciamus contumacem, ac in pena contumacie sue suspendimus hiis scriptis.

Foster primo certificavit se peremptorie citasse vicarium de Yelyng celebrantem in ecclesia sancti Andree in Estchepe, in eadem ecclesia, die Lune ultimo ad hos diem et locum etc.

To prove not  
having a  
plurality.

Dominus etiam monuit dominum Simonem Curatum ecclesie sancti Thome Apostoli, ad probandum coram eo crastino, quod non habet aliud beneficium ecclesiasticum.—f. 32 b.

## CLXXII.

Sickness  
pleaded in  
excuse for not  
attending.

xi Decembris coram dicto commissario comparuit Johannes Creke et asseruit Aliciam Creke citatam fuisse ad hunc diem, et asseruit quod propter egritudinem corporis et periculum ejusdem non potest venire: tunc desuper facta fide super premissis, per dictum Johannem, idem Johannes promisit . . . . . ad sistendum eam in judicio, coram domino, die L[un]e proximo post festum Epiphanie.—f. 33.

## CLXXIII.

Power to cite  
granted, and  
other duties of  
a sub-appa-  
rator.

xiii Januarii Nycholaus Comynson comparuit, et dominus commisit sibi potestatem citandi, et certificandi, quoscumque delinquentes infra decanatum Midd., et executores testamentorum etc. ac sequestrandi bona ab intestato decedentium, et cetera faciendi, que ad subapparitoris officium spectant etc.—f. 34 b.

## CLXXIV.

Inquisition to  
ascertain truth  
of a report of  
adultery.

Inquisicio capta in ecclesia de Estham per dominum commissarium xviii Januarii, de et super fama sequente, quod dominus Willielmus Pontifex curatus ibidem tenet et adiu tenuit Christinam Danyell in amplexibus adulteriis, super quo detectus est.—f. 35.

[*The depositions of the witnesses follow.*]

## CLXXV.

*Wuxbrig.*—Johannes Wynchecombe et Hugo Wood recusant reddere compotum administracionis bonorum fraternitatis beate Marie, infra capellam de Wuxbrige fundate; cujus fraternitatis gardiani sive iconomi existunt.—f. 38.

Administra-  
tion of goods  
of a fraternity.

## CLXXVI.

*Haringey.*—Alicia Moxley communis et gravis scolda, et suis objurgationibus perturbat divina temporibus et diebus festivis. Citata ad sextum Februarii non comparuit, ideo suspensa et sic denunciata; et certificare xxi Februarii.

Disturber of  
service, &c.

Notatur eciam quod in die Purificacionis beate Marie ultimo obstinaciter asseruit, se nolle candelam suam in manus presbiteri offerre; sed destinavit hujusmodi candelam per prolem suam: secundo Marcii comparuit et absoluta et negavit articulos: tunc dominus indixit sibi purgare isto die ad septimanam se vita manu vicinorum proximam: quo die comparuit et purgavit se Margeria Wilde, Margareta Hanwod, Elisabetha Vincent, Agnete Lynton; et habet ad solvendum feoda citra xv<sup>nam</sup>.—f. 39.

Not offering  
candle to the  
hands of the  
priest.

## CLXXVII.

*Southmymes.*—Willielmus Nicholl notatur officio quod est communis violator promissi et fidei, et quod male sapit de fide, quia raro accedit ad ecclesiam suam parochialem. Et cum venerit, nullas preces Deo fundit, et creditur, quod nescit orationem Dominicam, Salutacionem Angelicam, neque Simbolum Apostolorum. Citatus ad primum Marcii: quo die comparuit et habet ad purgandum se vii Marcii.—f. 41 b.

Breaker of  
promise.

Not knowing  
the prayers.

## CLXXVIII.

*Hanworth.*—Dominus David Jonis notatur quod non obediit mandatis domini, propter eo quod recusavit denunciare quandam Isabellam Corbet, secundum tenorem mandati: ix Aprilis comparuit Jonis et negavit articulum, et dicit quod recepit litteras suspensionis cum reverencia, et posuit super altare ante missam, et incontinentem fuit ares-

Refusal to  
denounce.

tatus ab altari, et propter hoc non potest denunciare illam : Dominus assignavit sibi ad comparendum die Mercurii proximo, ad dicendum causam quare non debet puniri pro contemptu : quo die dominus pronunciavit contumacem et reservavit sibi penam usque crastinum Georgii.

Incontinence  
of rector.

*Hanworth.*—Dominus David Jonis rector ecclesie parochie de Hanworth predictae, notatur nobis et nostro officio, fama publica referente [quod] incontinenter viveret cum nonnullis mulieribus, et presertim cum quadam eciam quod ipse quemdam A. B. in domum suam cum suis bonis reciperet, et postea eum a domo sua expelleret, omnia sua bona penes ipsum injuste retinendo, prout retinet in presenti; et quod sepius et vicibus repetitis beneficia sua permutaret, et tanquam simoniacus ipsa beneficia successive adepta, emeret et venderet; et pro eis cum patronis et aliis interesse habentibus symoniace pangeret.

Simony.

Suspicion of  
felony.

Item notatur, ut supra, quod vehementer est suspectus super feloniam; et quod semel fuit captus, et carceribus mancipatus, propter feloniam, et demum desuper convictus, et a comitatu quo deliquit propterea expulsus.—f. 44.

#### CLXXIX.

Pronuba.

*Yelinge.*—Margeria Lawrence communis pronuba inter diversas personas : Citata ad diem Mercurii xviii Julii; quo die non comparuit, ideo suspensa : primo Augusti comparuit maritus dicte Margerie et allegavit infirmitatem : tunc dominus commisit potestatem curato ibidem, ad absolvendum eam et habet ad comparendum post partum.—f. 50.

Committal of  
power to  
absolve.

#### CLXXX.

Assault by  
priest in  
church.

*Berkyng.*—Dominus Galfridus Kyng vicarius ibidem notatur officio propter eo quod iniecit violentas manus in Willielmum Benyngham infra dictam ecclesiam : Citatus ad diem Lune xiii Augusti, quo die comparuit et continuavit causam in statu est usque diem Jovis, viz. in Vigilia sancti Bartholomei; comparuit vicarius et negavit articulum. Dominus Willielmus Barton et Ricardus Webster jurati sunt ad dicen-

dum veritatem in hac parte; postea dominus indixit vicario ad purgandum se die Jovis proximo se iiii manu et Beningham eodem die se iiii manu; postea vicarius submitit correctioni.—f. 52 b.

## CLXXXI.

*Fulham*.—Dominus Commissarius judicialiter sedens, comparuit vicarius ibidem et juratus est ad penitentiam propter eo quod posuit equum suum in cimiterio ibidem, et dominus continuavit causam usque adventum Domini.—f. 53 b.

Vicar sworn to penance for putting a horse in the churchyard.

## CLXXXII.

In Dei nomine, amen, Nos Johannes Perott etc. commissarius Margaretam Crew de parochia de Shordich nostre jurisdictionis, ad hos diem et locum, certis articulis meram anime sue salutem et correctionem concernentem, sibi ex officio nostro mero objiciendis, personaliter responsuram, rite et legitime citatam, preconisatam, diutiusque expectatam, et nullo modo comparentem, pronunciamus contumacem; ac ipsam in penam contumacie sue hujusmodi suspendimus in hiis scriptis.—f. 55 b.

Form of suspension.

## CLXXXIII.

*Harringey*.—Willielmus Francis notatur officio, quod violavit parcum domini episcopi London; viz. in capiendo certam silvam de eodem: ix Januarii comparuit et fatebatur articulum, et submitit se correctioni, et habet ad recipiendum penitentiam crastino Purificationis, si pax non fiat interim cum domino seu officiariis suis.—f. 57.

Violation of bishop's park.

## CLXXXIV.

*Hyllingdon*.—ix die mensis Januarii emanavit commissio curato ibidem, ad recipiendum purgationem Roberti a Lanton, super crimine eo quod idem Robertus spoliaret dimidium quarterii frumenti extra orreum Willielmi Austyn, et quod certas pecunias haberet extra bursam dicti Willielmi, in domo Johannis Norton, ac etiam quod occideret duos porcos dicti Willielmi; ad citandum reclamatores ad comparendum iiii post etc. certificatus per curatum se purgavisse Willielmo

Commission to curate to receive penance.



Penard, Johanne a Chambre, Edwardo Dary, Christofero Pope, Laurencio Trykette, Willielmo Alyn : detinet feoda.—f. 57.

## CLXXXV.

*Stebenhyth.*—Robertus Drewe Benedicti et ejus uxor notantur officio quod foveant lenocinias . . . [&c.]

Overlaying  
infant.

Item detecti sunt officio quod oppresserunt filium suum naturalem. Eodem die comparuerunt et negaverunt articulum, tunc dominus indixit sibi ad purgandum se eodem, viz. viro se v manu, et mulieri se v manu; eodem die comparuerunt et dominus assignavit mulieri ad comparendum crastino se iii manu; Veneris viii Februarii comparuerunt Laurencius Trew, de parochia Sancte Marie Magdalene, Alicia Trewe, Agnes Trewe de eadem et jurate sunt de fideliter respondendo quando examinati, et dicunt secundum vim juramenti sui quod dictus puer decessit in malis et quod ipse nec mater erat occasio.—f. 57 d.

## CLXXXVI.

Receiving fine  
and detaining  
part from the  
commissary.

*Stratford at Bow.*—Dominus Thomas Alkynson notatur officio quod recepit Elisabethe Newlond iii*li.* vis. viii*d.*, pro fine correctioni ejusdem, et solvit domino commissario xls. xxvi Aprilis comparuit et negavit quoad xls. vis. viii*d.* tunc dominus indixit sibi ad purgandum iiiii Maii se vii manu.—f. 60 b.

## CLXXXVII.

Refusal to  
administer  
sacraments.

*Stebenhyth.*—Dominus Thomas curatus ibidem notatur officio quod recusavit ministrare sacramenta et sacramentalia parochianis ibidem. Citatus ad diem Mercurii xviii Aprilis, quo die non comparuit, ideo suspensus.—f. 62.

## CLXXXVIII.

Destroying  
tythe oats.

*Berkynge.*—Philippus Stoddard notatur officio quod destruxit xv acras avenarum decimarum ad summam iii*li.* s. viii Augusti comparuit et negavit articulum, et habet ad comparendum die Veneris viz. crastino Assumpcionis.—f. 62 b.

## CLXXXIX.

*Berkyng.*—Johannes Lydes et Thomas Noke communes <sup>Sabbath breaking.</sup> violatores Sabbati, in operando et piscando diebus dominicis et aliis festis: Citati ad diem Jovis xix Septembris, non comparuerunt, ideo suspensi; xxvi Septembris comparuerunt et absoluti sunt; [die] Veneris xxvii Septembris comparuerunt et submiserunt se correctioni, et jurati sunt ad penitentiam: unus eorum solvit feoda pro redemptione penitentie iis., die Jovis, viz. xi die Octobris proximo; v Novembris comparuit Bytor et solvit pro Lydes domino commissario xii*d.*; inde solutus dicto Bytor iii*d.* et remanet ix*d.* in custodia M. Commissarii; postea solvit pro domino in toto pro fine Lydes xii*d.* [die] Mercurii xx Novembris comparuit Noke et promisit solvere pro fini[*bu*]s penitentie et dimissionis iis. vi*d.* isto die ad mensem, vel interim solvere domino xii*d.*—f. 67.

## CXC.

*Hendon.*—Johannes Smyth notatur in fornicatione cum Johanna Smyth, &c. . . .

xxvi die mensis Septembris anno Domini millesimo quingentesimo in domo officii juxta Poulischayn, Johannes Smyth <sup>Marriage contract.</sup> et Johanna Smyth predicti contraxerunt matrimonium, in presentia Ricardi Forstar, Ricardi Crome, Willielmi Halsnoth, et Edwardi Fox; dicendo verba in Anglicis sequentia, I John take the Joan to my wife, et mulier similiter, et tunc vir dedit mulieri grossum et mulier dedit viro denarium.—f. 80 b.

---

ACTA CORRECTIONUM infra civitatem London delinquentium tempore commissionis M. PEROT, qui onus commissionis sue tercio die mensis Novembris anno Domini millesimo cccclxxxvi<sup>to</sup> in se assumpsit.—f. 1.

## CXCI.

*Omnium Sanctorum Stanyng.*—Johanna Dyaca notatur quod <sup>Throwing the paxbread on the ground.</sup> projecit le paxbrede ad terram, in ecclesia, ea occasione

quod alia mulier ejusdem parochie osculavit ante eam. Citata ad xvi Novembris, quo die non comparuit, ideo suspensa; xi Februarii comparuit et absoluta est, et habet ad solvendum feoda post meridiem, et fatebatur quod negligens fuit, et propter ea submisit se correctioni domini, quam ipse dominus jurari fecit, de peragendo penitentiam sibi per eum injungendam; et monuit eam ad recipiendum penitentiam hujusmodi; die Lune proximo comparuit et solvit; xiii Februarii et habet ad solvendum iis. pro feodis curie, citra dominicam in Ramis Palmarum; et injunxit sibi quod emat novum paxbrede, et det eidem ecclesie: comparuit et solvit feoda.—f. 11.

## CXCII.

Banns of marriage said only twice, through the fault of the clerk.

*Mildredis Pultre.*—Robertus Stanley aquebajulus ibidem, notatur quod certificavit curato ecclesie parochialis de Arcubus, quod banna fuerunt edita trina vice inter Radulphum Westwode dicte parochie et aliam mulierem de parochia beate Marie de Arcubus, London; cum in rei veritate bina vice tantum, in eadem ecclesia sancte Mildredis, edita erant inter eosdem; cujus pretextu matrimonium solemnissimum inter eosdem, in dicta ecclesia de Arcubus, absque dispensacione, trina bannorum edicione de jure requisita minime precedente. Citatus ad primum Decembris, quo die comparuit et fatebatur articulum, et dominus eum jurari fecit de peragendo penitentiam sibi per eum injungendam et assignavit sibi ad comparendum coram eo die Sabbati proximo, et recipiendum hujusmodi penitentiam; quo die comparuit, et dominus ex gratia continuavit usque diem Veneris proximum, viz. crastinum Conceptionis.—f. 16.

## CXCIII.

Chaplain assaulting curate.

*Mildredis Pultre.*—Dominus Simon Grene capellanus ibidem notatur officio, quod injecit violentas manus in dominum Johannem Whyte curatum ibidem, et eum ad summum altare predicte ecclesie violenter percussit; et citra illud tempus divina scienter celebravit irregularitatem incurrendo. Secundo Decembris comparuit coram domino, judicialiter sedente, comparuit et negavit articulum, et dominus indixit sibi purgare die Lune proximo se vi<sup>ta</sup> manu vicinorum, trium

viz. presbiterorum, et trium laicorum ejusdem parochie honestorum; et decrevit proclamacionem fieri in eadem ecclesia interim, et eandem proclamacionem curatus ibidem emisit. Quinto die Decembris comparuit curatus et certificavit proclamacionem executam fuisse Dominica precedente: quo die comparuit et continuata est materia usque post meridiem; in quo termino comparuit, et me absente nihil est actum. xx Decembris dominus decrevit eum de novo citari, ad diem Jovis; quo die comparuit Willielmus Jamis apparitor juratus; et certificavit se peremptorie citasse ad xxii Decembris, quo die comparuit.

*Mildredis Pultre.*—Dominus Johannes White notatur officio Idem. quod violenter percussit dominum Simonem capellanum ecclesie predictae, et citra illud tempus divina officia scienter celebravit, irregularitatem incurrendo.—f. 17.

## CXCIV.

*Antonini.*—Dominus Ricardus frater professus in domo fratrum in villa Gloucestrie celebrat sine licencia domini, in prefata ecclesia Sancti Antonini: Citatus ad vii Decembris, quo die comparuit et fatebatur. Tunc dominus assignavit sibi ad comparandum coram eo, die Veneris proximo; et monuit eum ne celebret divina interim. Qui habet ad solvendum pro tolleracione vis. viii d.; viz. quolibet termino proximo incipiente xx d., unde solvit pro terminis Natalis et Pasche iiii. d.—f. 17 b.

## CXCv.

*Mildrede Pultre.*—Dominus Simon Grene capellanus Heresy. matutinalis ibidem notatur super crimine heresie, videlicet tenendo et docendo sacramentum altaris tantum fore panem materialem, et eadem verba uxori Thome Byrt ejusdem parochie predicando; prout declaratum fuit per predictum Thomam Byrt, M. Cutsoold officiali archidiaconi in ecclesia parochie predictae pariter et affirmatum circiter unum vel duos annos elapsos.—f. 17 b.

ACTA CORRECTIONUM de termino post festum Nativitatis Domini, anno Domini millesimo cccclxxxvi<sup>to</sup> ejusdem Domini; tempore M. JOHANNIS PEROTT, Commissarii London.—f. 25 b.

## CXCVI.

Theft.

*Clementis Estchepe*.—Margareta Hall notatur super crimine furti, et quod recepit de sirto [*i. e.* certo] Glasier, certam summam pecunie viz. *x d.*: Citata ad ix Januarii, quo die comparuit et negavit articulum, et dominus indixit sibi penitentiam die Mercurii proximo sequente iii manu vicinorum: sunt concordēs.—f. 26.

## CXCVII.

Seduction  
under promise  
of marriage.

*Andree Cornhill*.—Cristoforus Kechyn notatur fama publica referente, quod est communis deceptor et violator puellarum plurimarum, et communis adulter; et deludit sacramentum matrimonii, contrahendo matrimonium cum pluribus mulieribus, et presertim cum Agnete Moyne, Alicia Drystac de parochia predicta, et cum Margareta Brok de parochia Sancti Dionisii; et inter ipsum et eandem Margaretam Brok banna procuravit edi, et desuper matrimonium solemnisari facere intendit, ymmo verum prophanari, non obstantibus contractis inter eum et prefatam Agnetem et Aliciam, et eorum utramque, primitus factis. Citatus ad x Januarii, quo die comparuit et negavit articulos, et dominus indixit sibi purgare die Jovis proximo se viii manu vicinorum suorum. Quo die comparuit, et dominus propter certas causas continuavit usque diem Jovis proximum; postea composuit ut dicitur coram honestis personis et cum prefata Alicia Dristac; dedit *xls.* [*mem. pro puellis.*] Citatus iterum ad ix Februarii; quo die non comparuit, ideo suspensus.—f. 26 b.

## CXCVIII.

Marrying  
without banns.

*Sepulchri*.—Dominus Simon Robinson notatur quod solemnisavit matrimonium inter Robertum Grene et Elisabetam Whalley, parochianos suos; bannis non editis. xviii Januarii

comparuit et fatebatur; tunc dominus eum jurari fecit de peragendo penitentiam et obediendo juri et stando mandatis et eum ab sententiis, quas incurrit, absolvit, viz. a sententia excommunicationis et ab irregularitate etc.: postea comparuit et solvit domino pro parte penitentie iis.—f. 31 b. Absolution.

## CXCIX.

*Andree in Hoborn.*—Dominus Johannes capellanus matu- Adultery.  
tinalis ibidem notatur officio quod tenuit et in amplexibus adulterinis tenet Johannam London ejusdem parochie, Kate-  
rinam Neve, nuper de parochia Sancti Albani in Woodstrete, nunc de parochia Sancte Margarete in Lothbury,  
uxorem Cole et uxorem Glene, de parochia Sancti Stephani in Colmanstrete: Citatus xvi Januarii infra paro-  
chiam Sancti Sepulchri ad xviii ejusdem, qui incontinenter post hujusmodi citacionem iniecit manus violentas in manda- Assaulting  
mandatory.  
tarium, et eum projecit, dicens, tell me why thow cytist me, and for what mater, and what my name is, or y shall make the, in contemptum curie etc.; quo xviii die comparuit et negavit articulos correctionis. Tunc dominus assignavit sibi ad plenius respondendum crastino. Et quoad contemptum etiam negavit, tunc dominus assignavit sibi, et eum jurari fecit, de introducendo fidejussores crastino, viz. xix Januarii ad fidejubendum, quod non recedet a jurisdic- Security not to  
depart from  
the jurisdic-  
tion.  
tione domini, quousque determinetur, an cecidit in contemptum curie vel non: quo die comparuit, et dominus monuit eum ad comparendum coram eo, die Sabbati, ad videndum testes produci super contemptum, et ad audiendum voluntatem suam super articulis correctionis. Quo die comparuit et allegavit quod non potuit venire propter solemnisationem matrimonii habendam in ecclesia parochiali predicta. Tunc dominus duxit deliberando donec proximam septimanam; eodemque die comparuit Thomas Bens et obtulit se paratum ad producendum testes super contemptu, viz. Martinum Cook et Johannem Durgeon.—f. 32.

## CC.

*Higate, parochie de Haryngey.*—Johannes Traford notatur Perjury.  
super crimine perjurii, eo quod non solvit M. R. Spencer, quos promisit solvere, ad certum diem influxum fide



sua media. Citatus ad xx Januarii, quo die non comparuit, ideo suspensus: habet comparere ultimo Januarii, quo die non comparuit, ideo excommunicatus.—f. 32.

Excommuni-  
cation.

## CCI.

Subtraction of  
ecclesiastical  
dues.

*Katerine Crechurch.*—Henricus Laurens notatur quod subtrahit jura ecclesiastica, prout patet per wardam sigillatam, sub sigillo Johannis Broun grocer, Johannis Broun chandeler, Willielmi Godfrey, et Johannis Dunwych, examinatorum hujusmodi compoti; iii Februarii comparuit et allegat quod non fuit evocatus ad hujusmodi compotum. Tunc dominus decrevit hujusmodi arbitros et gardianos citandos fore ad ix Februarii; et assignavit sibi ad comparendum eodem die. Quo die comparuerunt Willielmus Godfrey, Johannes Broun, Johannes Broun, et Johannes Dunwich, et exhibuerunt wardam; et tunc comparuerunt dominus Christoforus curatus, Johannes Stace, Thomas Bumsted, Johannes Messengear, et Thomas Horne, et testificarunt etc. quod Willielmus Hierd et Henricus Lawrens compromiserunt ut patet per wardam in consistorio.—f. 33 b.

Citation of  
church-  
wardens.

## CCII.

Giving bad  
counsel to his  
neighbours at  
confession.

*Olavi Silverstrete.*—Dominus Robertus Godard curatus et rector ibidem notatur quod e[s]t malus conciliator parochianorum suorum, eos in eorum confessionibus, ad commitendum crimen adulterii cum eodem, desiderans: xvi Februarii comparuit, quem dominus monuit ad comparendum coram eo crastino, certis articulis etc. responsurum post meridiem.—f. 37 b.

## CCIII.

Diffamation.

*Johannis Walbrook.*—Henricus Brewstar communis diffamator vicinorum suorum et presertim diffamavit dominum Thomam Appulby, rectorem ecclesie predicte, dicendo quod procuravit quosdam de parochianis suis adire Newman, de parochia Sancti Thome Apostoli nuper abjuratum, de et super heretica pravitate; ad inquirendum ab eodem, an prefatus Henricus teneret opiniones, quas idem Newman ante abjuracionem suam tenuit, vel de ejus affinitate aut secta fuisset. Citatus ad diem Jovis, viz. xxiii diem Fe-

Heresy.

bruarii; quo die comparuit idem Henricus et rector predictus, et idem rector remisit sibi delictum.—f. 39.

## CCIV.

*Margarete Patens.*— rector ibidem notatur Solicitation to prove wills.  
quod sollicitat parochianos suos ad probandum testamenta ibidem decedendo coram officiali archidiaconi, in prejudicium domini etc. Citatus ad iii Marcii, quo die comparuit et dominus monuit eum ad introducendum litteras ordinum suorum una cum institutione et inductione suis; et ad prestandum juramentum obedire etc. die Lune proximo; quo die non comparuit, ideo suspensus. vii Marcii comparuit et absolutus est et juratus est ad obedienciam.—f. 45.

## CCV.

Notatur quod verberavit mandatarium in contemptum curie et jurisdictionis.

Thomas Hardy juratus de fideliter respondendo, interrogandis interrogatoriis. Primo, an scit jurisdictionem domini? Fatetur. Interrogatus ulterius, an post citationem Sibille uxoris sue factam in domo sua, xv Februarii, injecerit violentas manus in mandatarium, eum percutiendo et an occasione hujusmodi citationis fecerit; vel an pro eo quod mandatarius noluit referre sibi causam hujusmodi citationis? negat set dicit, quod interrogavit mandatarium, ex qua causa uxorem suam citavit; et mandatarius respondit, What ys that for the; et eadem occasione eum percussit; et propterea submitit se correctioni domini: Quem dominus monuit ad comparandum coram eo crastino, ad allegandum causam quare non debeat excommunicari; quo die comparuit, quem dominus pronunciavit eum contumacem et gravem contemptorem curie, ac in penam contumacie excommunicavit eum.

Interrogatories upon contempt.

Excommunication.

In Dei nomine, amen, Nos Johannes Perott in sacris canonibus baccallarius, reverendi in Christo patris et domini domini Thome permissione divina London episcopi, in civitate London ac decanatu Midd. et Berkyng, commissarius generalis, te Thomam Hardy de parochia Sancti Alphegi civitatis London nostreque jurisdictionis, coram nobis judicialiter comparentem, et te violentas manus in Ricardum Williamson mandatarium et apparitorem nostrum juratum, eum violenter

Proceedings on striking the apparitor.

Excommuni-  
cation.

percutiendo, prout coram nobis es confessus injecisse, confitentem; habentemque hos diem et locum ad allegandum causam, quare propter hujusmodi violenciam in mandatarium ut premittitur factam, contemptum domini ac ejus jurisdictionis incurrendo, non debeas excommunicari, coram nobis ut premittitur judicialiter comparentem causam que in hac parte sufficientem minime allegantem, pronunciamus contumacem manifestum, ac domini et ejus jurisdictionis contemptorem; teque in penam contumacie tue hujusmodi, excommunicamus in hiis scriptis. xviii Februarii comparuit, et absolutus est et submisit se correctioni, et dominus eum jurari fecit de peragendo penitentiam sibi per eum injungendam, et assignavit sibi ad recipiendum penitentiam die Martis proximo.—f. 46.

## CCVI.

Contempt of  
the cross.

*Michaelis Bassing.*—Thoma Shelley notatur officio, fama publica referente, quod super quoddam transitum, viz. le Style, fabricavit quandam crucem, et quandam mulierem super eandem nudis natibus, *ii d.* precio conduxit et sedere fecit; et postea dixit cuilibet, hujusmodi crucem osculanti, quod haberet xi dies indulgencie; figuram crucis vilipendendo et contempnendo: ix Marcii comparuit et negavit articulum, et dominus indixit sibi purgare die Jovis proximo se viii manu vicinorum; *iiii<sup>or</sup>* viz. honestorum in parochia de Ware commorantium; et *iiii* vicinorum suorum London commorantium: postea comparuit et fatebatur quod fecit predictam mulierem mingere super hujusmodi crucem; et ei propterea denarium obtulit, sed mulier asseruit hujusmodi denarium nullius valoris fuisse, et ideo sibi reliberavit: tunc dominus eum jurari fecit, de peragendo penitentiam, sibi per eum injungendam; crastino, viz. x Marcii comparuit, et dominus injunxit sibi quod precedat processionem in ecclesia Cath. S. P., sequentem le vergears, crucem ligneam manu ejus deferendam et secularem predicatorem usque crucem, et ibidem maneat, quousque sermo finetur, crucem hujusmodi manus ejus tenendam; ipso hanc penitentiam peragere annuente et consentiente; et assignavit sibi ad comparendum coram eo, die Martis proximo, ad recipiendum residuum penitentie: postea ex mandato domini continuata est causa statu quo est, die Martis post dominicam in Albis.—f. 47.

Penance.

ACTA CORRECTIONUM habita et introducta, post festum Pasche, anno Domini millesimo cccclxxxvii<sup>mo</sup>.—f. 53.

## CCVII.

*Marie Magdalene*.—Johannes White notatur quod in pa- Exercising the magic art.  
rochia Sancte Marie Magdalene in Oldefisshestrete, exercuit  
artem magicam et prohibitam per psalterium, et Clavem,  
dicendo certos usus psalterii, et per dictam artem quesivit pro  
uno cocliare argente, de bonis Johannis Ryan; et per dictam  
artem accusavit Elisabetham Doland tanquam ream super  
ablacione dicti cocliaris; cujus pretextu maritus dicte Elisa-  
bethe eam expulit a domo et ejus consorcio, et eam verbe-  
ravit: xxvi<sup>to</sup> Aprilis comparuit dictus Johannes White, et  
fatebatur quod conductus fuit per uxorem Johannis Ryan  
pro viii<sup>d</sup>. ad querendum pro dicto furto cum psalterio et  
clave, dicendo versuram si videbat furem, imponendo nomen  
dicte Elisabethe, et quia vertebat clavis cum libro cum dicto  
nomine, judicavit iste Johannes dictam Elisabetham ream.  
—f. 58.

## CCVIII.

*Wuxbrige*.—Willielmus Gor notatur quod separavit oleum Separating the holy oil.  
sanctum die Parasseues ultimo.—f. 60.

## CCIX.

*Fanchirche*.—Ricardus Clerk notatur quod procuravit ma- Procuring marriage with- out banns being duly asked.  
trimonium solemnari inter eum et Ceciliam Hogdon, bannis  
prius bina vice tantum editis: ix Maii in capella de Stratford  
comparuit et ad dictum articulum respondet, et fatetur, quod  
procuravit hujusmodi matrimonium solemnari, bannis pri-  
mitus bina vice tantum editis, et pro terciā obtinuit dispen-  
sacionem a M. Cutfold, pro qua solvit eidem iis., et ejus Dispensation.  
clerico viii<sup>d</sup>.—f. 61 b.

## CCX.

*S. Johannis Zacarie*.—Dominus Johannes Bonham alias Bonor Drunkenness.  
super articulis cedula quod est ex consuetudine ebrius, et quod

violenter in sua hujusmodi ebrietate iniecit manus in presbiterum, et ipsum percussit ad effusionem sanguinis: Citatus ad xxvi Maii; comparuit etc.—f. 63.

## CCXI.

Refusal to  
minister sacra-  
ments without  
payment, &c.

Keeping com-  
pany with  
women of bad  
fame.

*Omnium Sanctorum in Muro.*—M. Willielmus Edward curatus ibidem notatur officio, fama publica referente, quod recusat ministrare sacramenta ecclesiastica egrotantibus; nisi prius habitis pecuniis pro suo labore: etiam quod in die Pasche ultimo, recusavit ministrare diversis parochianis suis sacramentum euchariste. Idemque sacramentum voluntarie profudit ad terram, tunc [et] ibidem: notatur ulterius quod diverse mulieres, male fame et extra diversas wardas civitatis London indictate, habent quotidianum accessum ad cameram suam, et ibidem temporibus illicitis, et nocturnis, idem dominus Willielmus cum eisdem mulieribus sedens et bibens, per quosdam parochianos dicte parochie suspiciose repertus fuit: comparuit et negavit articulis, et dominus assignavit ad purgandum se, cum vii manu, die Martis proximo; quo die proclamacione prima [facta?] dominus admisit eum ad purgacionem; qui purgavit se Waltero Wellys, Thomas Shogesborg, Laurencio Wylson, Johanne Fostar, Willielmo Kendall, Thoma Fisscher, domino Willielmo Halisdon, domino Johanne Copar, et domino Roberto Walker, quam purgacionem dominus admisit, et restituit eum bone fame etc.—f. 70.

## CCXII.

Wearing the  
hermit's dress,  
not being pro-  
fessed.

Sworn not to  
depart from  
jurisdiction,  
&c.

Heremita Sancti Spiritus.—Ricardus Sutton notatur officio quod adiu, viz. per xii annos, usus est amictu heremite, prout in presenti utitur, cum talis non fit nec unquam fuit professus in heremitam: notatur etiam quod adiu tenuit, prout in presenti tenet, quandam Agnetem Beverlay in amplexibus fornicatoribus, asserendo coram populo, eam fuisse suam filiam: ultimo Julii comparuit et fatebatur articulum, et juratus de comparendo quandocumque evocatus fuerit, et de non recedendo a jurisdictione sine licencia.—f. 78 b.

## CCXIII.

Contemning  
judge and  
jurisdiction.

*Dunstani in Occidente.*—Johannes Flemyng notatur officio quod vilipendit dominum et ejus jurisdictionem, viz. quia

mandatarius sequestravit bona cujusdam defuncti, et sigillare ostium ejusdem voluit; dixit in Anglicis verba sequentia, Thow shalt seale no door her. Go thy way, stynkyng knave; ye be but k[n]aves and brybors, everych one of yow. Citatus ad secundum Augusti, quo die comparuit et negavit articulum, tunc mandatarius asseruit hujusmodi verba prolocuta fuisse, in presencia domini Simonis curati ecclesie Sancti Sepulchri; quem dominus decrevit citandum fore, testimonio veritati in hac parte perhibitum.—f. 79.

## CCXIV.

*Fidis.*—Dompnus Henricus Golde monachus Using secular priest's vestments.  
de Colne, utitur amictu secularis presbiteri, apostasiam incurrendo; xix Augusti comparuit et fatebatur et asseruit se vocatum fuisse coram domino cancellario pro hujusmodi causa; et dicit quod secum dispensatur auctoritate apostolica; que quidem auctoritas restat in manibus collectoris domini pape.—f. 84.

## CCXV.

*Jacobi Clerkenwell.*—Dominus Thomas vicege- Usurpation of jurisdiction.  
rens curati ibidem notatur officio quod usurpat jurisdictionem domini, eo quod introduci fecit coram eo fidejussores, pro quadam muliere suspensa de parochia sua, promittendo de sistendo eam in judicio coram M. Commissario, die in litteris denunciationis specificato, acceptando in se auctoritatem domini commissarii, et sic exequi mandatum, contra eam, sibi directum recusavit.—f. 89 b.

## CCXVI.

*Marie at Nax.*—Dominus Robertus rector ibidem notatur Using sorcery to defame persons.  
officio quod est communis diffamator plurimarum personarum per artes suas sortilegicas; et presertim diffamavit Aliciam Hall, dicendo quod furtive surripuit duos annulos cujusdam Roberti Draper, prout patet per billam, manu sua scriptam; habet ad diem Sabbati proximum, ad respondendum articulis.—f. 103.

## CCXVII.

*Dunstani in West.*—Dominus Mauricius Johnson curatus Taking causes out of the commissary's court  
ibidem. Citatus ad diem Lune proximum, viz. xi Februarii,



into that of the archdeacon. ad exhibendum litteram ordinum; et eciam notatur officio quod ex sua malicia, et contra jurisdictionem commissarii, abstraxit et distulit diversas causas a curia commissarialitatis, ad curiam archidiaconi etc.: habuit maliloquium apparitoris domini in Anglicis ut sequitur, Go thy wey, knave, or ells y schall make the go: xii Februarii comparuit et dominus assignavit sibi ad exhibendum litteram ordinum crastino; quo die comparuit, et exhibuit litteram ordinum; postea dominus eum jurari fecit, de sancta Dei evangelia.—f. 103 b.

## CCXVIII.

Payment of money owing from a churchwarden.

viii<sup>vo</sup> Marcii coram domino commissario in domo officii comparuit personaliter Henricus Somer, de parochia Sancti Botulphi juxta Billingesgate, alias debens ecclesie Sancti Magni, super compoto gardianatus officii, quod in eadem parochia Sancti Magni gessit, v marcas et xs. prout reperitum fuit, super audicione compoti, per auditores deputatos, in hac parte; et ut continetur in billa auditus predicti exhibita et eidem ostensa etc. Et constituit M. Reed procuratorem in hac causa cum clausa subscribendum; presentibus M. Dunmow et Ricardo Foster.—f. 107 b.

## CCXIX.

Heresy.

*Petri in Cornhill.*—Eden Walkers detecta est officio super crimine heretice, eo quod non est confessata in xl<sup>ma</sup>, neque recepit ad festum Pasche corpus Domini.—f. 115 b.

## CCXX.

Bigamy.

*Martini in Vintria.*—Ricardus Bodname notatur adulter propter eo quod habet duos uxores viventes: Citatus ad diem Lune iii Septembris, quo die comparuit et fatebatur articulum, tunc dominus eum jurari fecit ad penitentiam; et habet ad comparendum post meridiem, ad recipiendam; quo die comparuit, et dominus injunxit sibi, quod precedat processionem quolibet dominico, donec devorsium habeatur inter secundam uxorem et ipsum, cum candela cerii, precii unius oboli etc.—f. 136 b.

## CCXXI.

Refusal to solemnize

*Marie Magdalene.*—

curatus ibidem notatur officio propter eo quod recusavit solemnizare matrimo-

nium inter Stephanum Gaffney et Marge[r]iam] Roloryke, marriage with-  
quousque habet pro hujusmodi solemnisatione iiis. viii*d.*—  
f. 157 b. out fees.

## CCXXII.

*Berking.*—Vicarius ibidem notatur officio quod solemn- Marrying a  
non-parish-  
ioner without  
certificate of  
banns.  
savit matrimonium inter Robertum Masse, de parochia pre-  
dicta, et Johannam Breton, de parochia Sancti Johannis in  
Walbroke, sine cert. etc.: Citatus ad xix Decembris, quo  
comparuit et habet ad comparendum in crastino Epiphanie.  
—f. 160.

## CCXXIII.

*Marie Hil adhuc causa purgationis Bell cum Benkis.*—Die Proclamation  
of purgation.  
Lune xvii die mensis Decembris in ecclesia predicta, com-  
paruit Magister Johannes Redy curatus, et certificavit auctori-  
tate mandati per eum exhibiti, proclamasse purgationem dicti  
Bell haberi in pulpito, intra divinorum solemnia, et citasse  
ibidem omnes opponere volentes tam in genere quam in  
specie, juxta formam mandati per eum exhibiti; super quo  
fecit fidem. Et tunc comparuit Johannes Bell, et facta pro-  
clamacione, et nullo comparente contradictorie, purgavit se  
cum Johanne Palmer, Willielmo Grove, Christofero Hobe,  
et Willielmo Sylk; quem dominus pronunciavit bene pur-  
gatum, et male diffamatum; et restituit eum fame pristinae  
etc.—f. 160.

## CCXXIV.

*Benedicti Poulis-wharfe.*—Edwardus Newton notatur officio Keeping bad  
rule in his  
house.  
quod est vir male disposicionis, malum regimen in domo  
sua fovendo, eo quod permittit male fame viros intrare in  
domum suam, in tempore illicito: xix Januarii comparuit et  
negavit articulum; habet ad purgandum se, die Marcurii se  
iiii manu; eodem die emanavit proclamacio etc.: Die Mar-  
curii xxiii comparuit rector ibidem, et certificavit auctoritate  
mandati, per eum exhibiti, proclamasse purgationem dicti  
Newman et ejus uxoris haberi in ecclesia predicta, intra di-  
vinorum solemnia, et citasse ibidem omnes opponere volentes  
tam in genere quam in specie, juxta formam mandati per  
eum exhibiti, super quo fecit fidem. Et tunc comparuit  
Newton, et facta proclamacione, et nul[l]o comparente con-

tradictorie, purgavit se Thoma Curson, Henrico Tyle, et Johanne Smyth, quem dominus pronunciavit bene purgatum, et male diffamatum, et restituit eum fame pristine: solvit et dimittitur.—f. 164.

## CCXXV.

Making offering in the adjoining parish church.

*Clementis*.—Martina Good notatur officio quod offerat candela suam in ecclesia beate Marie apud Strond die purificationis, eo non obstante [quod] est parochie Sancti Clementis predictae: Citata ad istum diem, quo die continuatur usque crastinum, quo die non comparuit ideo suspensa; viii Februarii comparuit et absoluta est et habet ad respondendum articulo isto die ad xv<sup>nam</sup> quo termino continuatur usque colloquium habeatur cum domino.—f. 168 b.

## CCXXVI.

Simony.

*Nicholai ad Macellas*.—Dominus Johannes Kelby, capellanus ibidem, notatur officio quod commisit crimen simonie propter eo quod vendidit resignacionem capelle Sancti Leonardi in Forasta, pro v marcis: Citatus ad diem Sabbati proximum, quo die continuatur ad petitionem Dininge, usque diem Lune proximum.—f. 176 b.

## CCXXVII.

A.D. 1499.

Responsiones personaliter facte per Henricum Clythrowe de parochia Sancte Brigide de et super interrogatoriis concernentibus contemptum eo quod injecit violentas manus in apparitorem.

Answers to interrogatories upon striking an apparitor.

Henricus Clythrow juratus et examinatus de et super interrogatoriis, etc.

Ad primum interrogatorium fatetur contenta in eodem.

Ad secundum interrogatorium credit quod Thomas Bewes est apparitor reverendi patris episcopi London et ejus commissarii, sed antequam istum juratorem citavit, non novit, scivit vel audivit aut suspicionem aliquam habuit iste juratus, quod idem Thomas taliter officio fungebatur, ut dicit, in vim juramenti sui.

Ad iii interrogatorium fatetur contenta in eodem, et quod istum juratorem citavit cerciter septimanam elapsam ut dicit.

Ad <sup>iiii</sup> articulum respondet negative, ad singula contenta in eodem.

Ad quintum interrogatorium dicit quod post citacionem huic juratori factam per prefatum Thomam, iste jurator quesivit quis eum citavit; cui mandatarius respondit, That dyd y, if thow wilt eny thing with it: Tunc iste jurator projecit a digito suo illud instrumentum vocatum le Thymmylle, quod videns, apparitor extraxit gladium; tunc iste jurator arripuit sibi virgam suam Anglice his yead, et sequebatur mandatarium in publicum stratum; et ibi post multiplicacionem ictuum tandem iste jurator fregit mandatario capud, et tunc accedentes vicini, eos separabant; et dicit quod hoc fecit, defendendo seipsum ut dicit.

Ad sextum interrogatorium fatetur contenta in eodem, et dicit quod priusquam incipiat terminus, iste pretextu premissorum intendit et vult prosegui dictum mandatarium in foro temporali; et hoc tam assidue, quam dictus mandatarius modo eum prosequitur, in curia spirituali.

xxviii<sup>o</sup> Marcii in vestibulo divi Sancti Pauli recognicione coram domino commissario facta in presencia mei Edmundi George etc. Dominus monuit eum ad comparendum, die Lune proximo post dominicam in Albis, ad audiendum voluntatem suam super confessatis.—f. 179.

### CCXXVIII.

Lune in proxima septimana post festum Pasche anno Domini millesimo cccclxxxix<sup>no</sup>.

*Dunstani in Occidente.*—Thomas [al. Georgius] Goston notatur officio super certis articulis heresim concernentibus; viz. quod idem Thomas dedit cuidam juvenculo, civitatis London, oleum sanctum, de causa quod idem juvenculus daret cuidam puelle hujusmodi oleum, et occasione assumptionis ejusdem olei, idem juvenculus impetraret amorem illius puelle. Et ulterius idem Georgius deposuit manum suam in fontem baptismalem, sic dicendo, This may I doo, as well as the preste. Citatus ad istum diem, quo die comparuit et negavit articulos: tunc dominus indixit sibi, ad purgandum se, die Mercurii proximo se viii manu: quo die comparuit personaliter, et submitit se correctioni, et juratus est ad penitentiam, habet ad recipiendum quando vocetur per

Heretical  
behaviour.

dominum, vel M. commissarium; xxx die mensis Januarii comparuit personaliter dictus Thomas, et dominus monuit eum ad comparandum die Veneris proximo, ad recipiendam penitentiam sibi injungendam.—f. 179 b.

## CCXXIX.

Refusal to receive the holy oil. *Margarete Patyns.*—Dominus Thomas notatur officio quod non vult recipere olium sanctum, in vigilia Pasche ultimo preterito.—f. 180 b.

## CCXXX.

Detaining goods of the Church. *Benedicti Fynke.*—Johannes Skypwit[h], draper, Willielmus Willoby pewterer notatur officio quod detinent bona et jocalia dicte ecclesie per spacium v vel sex annos et non vult reddere compotum; necnon quod nolunt solvere aquibajulo ibidem ut taxantur.—f. 206.

## CCXXXI.

Diffamation. *Sepulcri.*—Johannes Forest communis diffamator vicinorum suorum etc. \* \* \* Citatus ad diem Martis, quo die non comparuit ideo suspensus: absolutus est et dimittitur ex gratia.

[*A memorandum on a slip of paper states:—*]

Abuse of priests. Johannes Forest has bene suspendyd ii tymes ovt of y<sup>e</sup> chyrch, & he sayeth, that y<sup>e</sup> pryst ys curst for God schall a soyell hym agayne; forthemor he sayes that alle the prystys and doctrys are but harlet mongers.—f. 212.

## CCXXXII.

Contracting marriage with divers men. *Omnium Sanctorum Berkinge.*—Margareta Nicholasson fama publica referente quod est communis deceptrix, et violatrix hominum plurimorum, et deludit sacramentum matrimonii contrahendo matrimonium cum pluribus hominibus; presertim cum Simone Baker, qui eam carnaliter cognovit: Citati ambo ad xix Augusti; quo die comparuit Simon, et negavit articulum, et habet ad purgandum se, die Veneris proximo se iiii manu vicinorum; et mulier negavit articulum correctionis, cui dominus indixit purgare die Veneris proximo se, iiii<sup>ta</sup> manu vicinorum; et quoad con-

tractum, mulier fatebatur quod compulsa per M. suum, et non sponte, nec voluntarie contraxit cum Simone Bartilmewe; et sub ista conditione, quod si hujusmodi contractus placeret sibi, in adventu matris ejusdem Margarete, quod tunc staret pro efficaci, et si non, pro nulla haberetur: mulier purgavit se Mariona Pagett, Alicia Rawlyns, et Agnete Barley; vir continuatur usque diem Martis proximum, comparuit et purgavit se Rogero Hartewe, Johanne Galawnt, et Roberto Gethe, solvit feoda et dimittitur.—f. 215 b.

## CCXXXIII.

Ultimo die mensis Augusti emanavit littera dispensa- Dispensation  
cionis inter Ricardum Glossop de parochia Sancti Augustini for banns.  
et Aliciam Babam de parochia Sancti Stephani in Walbroke, pro bannis matrimonialibus bina vice editis directa curato ecclesie parochie Sancti Stephani predicti sive ejus locum tenenti, cuicumque etc. Solvit pro domino xii*d*.—f. 220.

## CCXXXIV.

*Mari Fanchirch*.—Johannes Whaplod notatur officio quod Eating flesh  
commedit carnes in die Sancti Marci ultimo: citatus ad diem on St. Mark's  
Marcurii proximum: comparuit et continuatur usque diem day.  
Jovis proximum: comparuit et fatebatur articulum quod  
commedit in parochia Sancti Dunstani in Oriente et dimittitur.—f. 221.

## CCXXXV.

*Olavi in Sylverstreet*.—Radulphus Levesey alias Capper Adultery.  
notatur officio, quod detinet uxorem Henrici Lygen in amplexibus adulteriis: xiii Septembris comparuerunt partes, et dominus monuit eos ad comparendum, die Lune proximo, coram domino officiali, [in] ecclesia cathedrali Sancti Pauli, London, loco consistorii ejusdem etc.—f. 224.

## CCXXXVI.

*Sepulcri*.—Thomas Berno in Chyklane auceps notatur Sabbath  
quod violat Sabbatum, et non audit divina, sed vadit aucu- breaking.  
pando tempore divinorum, et est suspectus de herisi.—f. 226.



## CCXXXVII.

Burial fees. *Andree Undershaft.*—Thomisinus Seno notatur officio, quod non solvit debita Petri Pymond defuncti; viz. pro sepultura ejusdem: citatus ad diem Veneris proximum, non comparuit, ideo suspensus; v Octobris comparuit, et absolutus est.—f. 228.

## CCXXXVIII.

Usury. *Michaelis ad Bladum.*—Thomas Hall notatur officio quod est communis violator fidei; ac notatur de et super crimine usarrie pravitatis, eo quod quidam Thomas Forstar impingnoravit sibi quoddam plegium, viz. zonam pro iiiis. Idemque Thomas Hall ultra hujusmodi sortem principalem, intendit et vult habere xiid., crimen usarrie in hac parte committendo: citatur ad diem Jovis proximum; non comparuit, ideo suspensus.—f. 231.

## CCXXXIX.

Non-payment of clerk's wages. *Marie Somerset.*—Johannes Scheridon notatur officio quod non solvit salarium aquibajulo et gardianis ibidem. Citatus ad diem Marcurii proximum; quo die comparuit et habet ad comparendum die Veneris proximo.—f. 240 b.

## CCXL.

Communes pronubæ. *Aldermanbury.*—Robertus Clyffe et ejus uxor notantur officio, fama publica referente, quod sunt communes pronube presertim inter Elisabetham Mountayn famulam suam et diversos mercatores, et per iii vel v annos elapsos vendiderunt quandam Agnetem Smyth juvenculam tunc servientem ipsius Roberti Lumberdes pro xl li. etc.—f. 254 b.

## CCXLI.

A.D. 1500. *Ethelburge.*— notatur officio, quod violavit libertatem domini episcopi London, in sagittando et ludendo infra pasturam vocatam [*Here it breaks off.*]—f. 260 b.

Violation of bishop's park.

## CCXLII.

*Margarete Patens.*—Isabella Wheler notatur officio, quod <sup>Detaining</sup> detinet certa bona Alicie Horewode; viz. ii ollas ejus: citata <sup>goods.</sup> ad istum diem, quo die comparuit et negavit articulum, et habet ad purgandum se die Mercurii proximo se, v manu, Margareta Bell, Margareta Knyght, Alicia Martyn, Johanna Whyniard non jurata: citata de novo ad secundum diem Junii, quo die comparuerunt, et compromiserunt, in Clementem Waterman, et rectorem ibidem, si feratur citra festum Sancti Johannis Baptiste proximum.—f. 263 b.

## CCXLIII.

*Margarete in Brigstret.*—Avicia Godfrey notatur officio <sup>Taking a book</sup> quod subtraxit quendam librum, vocatum a *premar* <sup>from the</sup> *Elisabetha* <sup>church.</sup> Sekett serviente cum Willielmo Ward extra ecclesiam, sententiam majoris excommunicationis incurrando. Citata ad diem Jovis proximum, quo die comparuit et negavit articulum, sed tamen dicit, quod invenit hujusmodi librum in Podinglane; tunc habet ad purgandum se die Lune, crastino Trinitatis proximo se iii manu: dimittitur quia pauper.—f. 270.

## CCXLIV.

*Omnium Sanctorum Berkyng.*—Johannes Lumpney notatur officio quod est perturbator divinorum: comparuit et <sup>Disturbing</sup> fatebatur articulum, et juratus est ad penetentiam, et habet <sup>divine service.</sup> ad recipiendum die Sabbati proximo: non comparuit ideo suspensus: xxii die comparuit et absolutus est, et dominus injunxit sibi penetentiam, viz. quod offerat candelam, precii unius oboli, genu flectendo ante imaginem Omnium Sanctorum ibidem, quando cantatur Te Deum, dicendo v Pater Noster, et v Ave Maria et Credo.—f. 272.

## CCXLV.

*Brigide.*—Johannes Hamond notatur officio quod recusavit <sup>A.D. 1501.</sup> <sup>Detaining</sup> solvere curato Sancti Clementis extra Barres mortuarium, <sup>mortuary.</sup> viz. togam de le violet: citatus ad istum diem iii Aprilis comparuit et negavit articulum, tunc habet ad purgandum se die Lune proximo se iiii manu vicinorum suorum.—f. 296 b.

## CCXLVI.

Plurality of  
benefices.

*Nicholai ad Macellas.*—Magister Galfridus Morgan tenet duo beneficia absque dispensa . . . viz. unum apud Oxsay, Sarum dioc. et ecclesiam Nicholai . . . xxvi die Januarii comparuit: habet ad ostendendam licentiam . . . die Sabbati proximo dimittitur, quia dispensatus.—f. 2.

## CCXLVII.

Marriage of  
non-parishion-  
ers at undue  
hours.

*Nicholai ad Macellas.*—M. Galfridus Morgan vocatur quod solemnisari fecit per quendam ignotum capellanum matrimonium inter parochianos alienos eciam ante lucem, viz. in hora secunda post mediam noctem, januis clausis; viz. inter uxorem nuper et relictam Thorp de Hakney; et quendam Hargrave nuper com. Lincoln.—f. 2 b.

## CCXLVIII.

Jactitation of  
marriage.

*Haryngey.*—Margareta Heyn jactitat se matrimonium contraxisse cum Thoma Risley, cum sic non contraxerit, in prejudicium alterius contracti matrimonii, inter se et alium. Quinto die Februarii, ambo comparuerunt, et inquisita mulier per dominum de contractu respondebat, quod hec erant verba; if ye be willing to have me, I plight you my trowth. Interrogatus vir, an hujusmodi verba prolata erant? simpliciter negavit; ulterius interrogatus, an aliqua verba matrimonii insimul habuissent? respondit talia verba fuisse prolata, in coquina Johannis Heyns de Higate, infra parochiam de Haryngey, circiter duos annos elapsos, viz. Marget will ye have me? respondit sic,—ye[a], in presencia Ricardi Yerdley dicentis vulgariter, ther is a bargin; que verba judicavit dominus non sufficere, ad impediendum contractum matrimonialem, secundo loco rite et legitime initum, ex parte dicti Thome Risley, cum quadam Anna Wedd, verbis prolatis contractum matrimonialem de presenti importantibus; viz. Ego Thomas Risley, capio te Annam, in meam, et illa eadem verba protulit, capio te in meum, testibus ibidem presentibus, Willielmo Heyn et ejus uxore, Johanne Smyth et uxore ejus, Nicholao Agate et uxore ejus, cum nonnullis aliis. Et sic dominus judicavit prefatam Margaretam liberam

esse a prefato contractu, et contrahere posse cum quocunque cessante aliquo alio jure etc.—f. 8.

## CCXLIX.

*Dunstani in Occidente.*—Johannes Meny recusat observare obsequia conjugalia, expellendo uxorem suam: citatur ad diem Mercurii, quo die non comparuit, ideo suspensus; decimo die comparuit et absolutus etc. et habet ad solvendum feoda die Lune proximo.—f. 8 b.

Expulsion of wife.

ACTA CORRECTIONUM infra civitatem London delinquentium, tempore commissionis Magistri WILLIELMI MORS, qui onus ejusdem in se assumpsit xxii die mensis Februarii anno supradicto.—f. 12.

## CCL.

*Omnium Sanctorum in Muro.*—Thomas Hurlok notatur officio, fama referente, super crimine sacrilegii, pro et ex eo quod a vestuario ecclesie sue parochialis surripuit unam naviculam argenteam, ponderantem viii uncias et quarterium argenti: Citatus xviii die Marcii, infra eandem parochiam. ad xix ejusdem; quo comparuit et fatebatur se habuisse prefatam naviculam extra ecclesiam, cui dominus injunxit quod restituat eandem naviculam, citra festum Pasche, sub pena excommunicationis; alioquin habet ad comparendum proximo die juridico post eundem festum se excommunicari auditurum. Et postea dimittitur.—f. 18 b.

A.D. 1502.

*Michaelis in Querne.*—Clericus parochie ibidem notatur, quod non pergit in processionibus generalibus ut tenetur, juxta antiquum morem: citatus ad xxi Aprilis.—f. 25 b.

Not going the processions.

## CCLII.

*Michaelis in Bassyngshaw.*—Dominus curatus ibidem notatur quod solemnnavit matrimonium inter

Darby Marrying persons notwith-

standing pre- contract. parochianos suos, non obstante precontractu. Citatus ad xxiii Aprilis.

Non-residence. Item quod absentat se ab vicaria de Kyngston, et non residet in eadem.—f. 27 b.

## CCLIII.

Striving in church.

*Fidis.*—Uxor cujusdam Lawnd notatur quod litigavit in eadem ecclesia, et percussit quandam Gough: Citata ad x diem Maii, quo die comparuit, et dominus monuit eam ad prestandum juramentum, de fideliter respondendo certis articulis anime sue salutem tangentibus, ex officio suo objiciendis. Et ipsa recusavit aliquod juramentum prestare. Et deinde objectum articulum eidem negavit, asserens quod dicta Gough semel percussit istam examinatam; et tunc dominus eam monuit ad comparendum coram eo crastino ad prestandum hujusmodi juramentum, de fideliter respondendo hujusmodi articulo, sub pena excommunicationis: xiii Maii comparuit et dominus eam jurari fecit de parendo juri etc. et eam absolvit; et injunxit eidem, quod peragat processionem in ecclesia sua parochiale, ut moris est, duabus dominicis proximis.—f. 33.

## CCLIV.

Proceedings upon obedience to rector.

*Marie Magdalene in Fiss[s]trete.*—Willielmus Norfok notatur quod [non] vult dare obedientiam rectori dicte ecclesie, juxta constitutiones et injunctiones Regis; quod non perimplevit fidem suam factam cuidam Johanni Browne, modo defuncto: citatus xx die mensis Maii ad xxi ejusdem; xx die Maii coram domino commissario, M. Willielmo Mors in loco consistorii London judicialiter sedente, in presencia mei Willielmi Crabbe notarii publici comparuit personaliter dictus Willielmus Norfolk; et objectum sibi per eundem dominum commissarium articulum primum supradictum, instanter negavit, asserens se semper ut debuit obedivisse dicto rectori, et cuicumque curato domini infra eandem ecclesiam, tempore quo stetit aquebajulus ibidem celebrans. Et tunc dominus commissarius ex officio suo procedens, et quandam constitutionem provisam pro similibus casibus salubriter editam, executioni debite volens demandari, eundem Willielmum Norfolk, tactis per eum evangeliis jurari fecit; quod

rectori dicte ecclesie moderno, et cuicumque curato in eadem, pro tempore existente; omnibus et licitis mandatis; prout in dictis constitutionibus plenius habetur decetero pro tempore suo parens et obediens erit. Presentibus tunc ibidem venerabilibus M. Willielmo Lichefeld legum doctore, Thoma Lane in artibus M. et pluribus aliis.—f. 35.

## CCLV.

*Omnium Sanctorum Berkyng.*—Vicarius ibidem recusavit sepelire corpus Jacobi Jonson nisi prius habito et extorto mortuario, quamvis nullum in hoc casu sibi debeatur, juxta consuetudinem in civitate London.—f. 36 b.

Refusal to bury without receiving mortuary.

## CCLVI.

*Martini Orgar.*—Curatus ibidem notatur quod recusat exequi mandata sibi auctoritate curie directa. Citatus xxiiii die Maii infra eandem parochiam, ad xxv ejusdem: quo die comparuit, et fatebatur quod non debite certificavit, de et super executione litterarum, et eciam penes se retinet eandem directam contra Willielmum Hide, parochianum suum; et tunc dominus monuit eundem, quod debite exequetur litteram predictam, contra eundem Willielmum, et desuper certificet die Mercurii proximo; vel ad dicendam causam quare non debet denunciari pro suspensio.—f. 37.

Refusal to execute mandate.

## CCLVII.

*Magni.*—Dominus Johannes Lownslatt capellanus notatur quod impregnavit quandam monialem de Kilborn: fatebatur articulum et solvit pro fine viii s.—f. 37 b.

Fornication with a nun.

Fine thereon.

## CCLVIII.

*Cristoferi ad Stokk.*—Dominus Thomas Robynson cantarista in eadem ecclesia, notatur quod tenet quandam monialem, domus monialium de Kilbourn.

Incontinence with a nun.

Item quod fuit eciam in eodem lecto, cum domino Johanne Langesley in quadam magna camera infra monasterium de Kilbourn, circa festum Sancti Michaelis ultimum; cum inter eos, in eodem lecto, fuerat quedam monialis, ejusdem loci, eciam nuda, quedam Dapna Browne nunc impregnata et ipsa fere devenit partum: xxix die mensis Maii Kemp cer-



tificavit se peremptorie citasse dictum dominum Thomam, die Sabbati xxvii die ejusdem ad hos diem et locum, quo die comparuit; iii Junii comparuit, et purgavit se et dimittitur.—f. 38.

## CCLIX.

Vilifying the  
priestly order.

*Clementis in Estchepe*.—Willielmus Sevell aquebajulus ibidem, notatur officio, quod vilipendit et adnichilavit ac diffamavit dominum Thomam Warde, sic maliciose dicendo, Goo forth fole, and set a cockes combe on thi crowne, sacerdotalem ordinem nequiter contempnendo. Citatur xi die Junii in domo sua infra eandem parochiam ad comparendum, xiii die ejusdem; quo die comparuit et dimittitur, quia con[cor]dati sunt etc.—f. 42.

## CCLX.

Refusal to  
marry.

*Bartholomei Hospitalis*.—Alicia Webbester de eadem notatur officio quod negat matrimonium Edwardo Swerd: xi die Junii dominus decrevit eam citandum fore, ad dicendam causam quare ad hujusmodi matrimonium non debeat compelli: citatur ad xii diem Junii, quo die non comparuit, ideo suspensa: remittitur ad consistorium.—f. 43.

## CCLXI.

Suspension of  
priest for  
irregularities.

*Margarete in Lothury*.—Dominus Willielmus morowmas prest, notatur officio fama referente, quod incontinenens est et adulter cum quadam : citatur vir xiiii die Junii per Bewis, in ecclesia sua, ad comparendum die Veneris, xviii die ejusdem; quo die purgavit se, cum M. Roberto Penwyn, et Ricardo Baton; et dominus monuit eum quod comparebit coram [eo] die Lune xxi ejusdem, ad allegandam causam quare non debeat suspendi a celebratione divinorum pro et ex eo quod adheret personis et domibus suspectis. xxii die Junii dominus decrevit eum citandum fore, ut prius ad iii<sup>ium</sup> post; xxv die dicti mensis comparuit, quem dominus dimittit.—f. 44.

## CCLXII.

Pronuba, &c.

*Marie Matfelon*.—Cecilia Burton notatur officio, fama publica referente, quod est communis pronuba diversis personis,

et inducit in domum suam mulieres, per ponendum onus straminis super capita illarum, ne percipiantur. Citatur ad xiiii die Junii, quo die non comparuit ideo suspensa: xxv die Junii comparuit et petiit beneficium absolucionis etc. Et eam absolvit etc. negavit articulum et habet ad solvendum die Lune proximo et purgandum se; eodem die purgavit se forma eidem indicta et solvendum feoda isto die ad vii<sup>am</sup>.—f. 44 b.

## CCLXIII.

Thomas Roy notatur quod impedit jurisdictionem domini, inhibendo Elizabetham Barbour ne compareat coram domino commissario dicti domini:—xxiii die Junii idem dominus commissarius decrevit eundem Thomam citandum fore, ad iii<sup>cium</sup> post, ad allegandam causam quare non debeat puniri in debita juris forma; pro eo quod impedit hujusmodi jurisdictionem, et commisit potestatem viva voce Johanni Edwardes citandi et certificandi; primo die Junii Johannes Edwardes certificavit se peremptorie citasse eundem Thomam; xxviii die Junii in ecclesia cathedrali Sancti Pauli London ad hos diem et locum, quem dominus preconizari fecit, non comparentem pronunciavit contumacem; et in penam contumacie sue hujusmodi, ab ingressu ecclesie suspendit in scriptis.—f. 48 b.

Impeding the judge's jurisdiction.

## CCLXIV.

*Trinitatis Parve.*—Alienora Dulyne notatur quod ymaginavit quasdam artes divinatarias, ad interficiendum maritum suum, et intoxicare voluit: xiii<sup>o</sup> die mensis Julii, coram domino commissario in ecclesia cathedrali Sancti Pauli London comparuit dicta, et obtulit se paratam ad purgandum se super hujusmodi crimine etc. Et dominus eam ad hujusmodi purgacionem admisit etc. Et purgavit se cum Anna Mareys et Agnete Wenchecome, ad hoc admissis, et dimittitur.—f. 56.

Artes divinationis.

## CCLXV.

*Johannes in Walbrooke.*—Anna Miller notatur officio, fama publica referente, quod est communis diffamatrix vicinorum suorum, et presertim diffamavit Alianoram Dulyne, dicendo

Drugging medicine to intoxicate.

\* *Sic in orig.*

eam ministrasse quasdam medicinas ad intoxicandum maritum suum: xvi die mensis Julii coram M. Hall comparuit et dixit quod circiter medium annum elapsum, veniens Johannes Davely purcifand (a) cur\* religati sensiens se gravatum in stomacho, misit istam adtunc famulam, pro quibusdam speciis, ad Buclersbury, quo facto, iterum rediit domum et fecit illam medicinam; qua facta, Alianora uxor dicti Johannis imposuit quasdam res intoxicatorias, quibus noluit consentire, et proximo die extunc sequente in mane, idem Johannes vocavit pro ista medicina, cui respondit, sic dicendo, Sir, it hath leyn opyn all night, and I wat never fell yn it, therfore I will rather make you another; quibus sic dictis, dicta Alianora intravit, et dixit, Thou strong hore hast then shewed hym that I have put some yn it; tunc prefatus Johannes habens eam suspectam, pro eo quod sic dixit, fecit eam comedere de eadem; cujus causa infirmabatur, et intoxicata fuit; et adhuc non est sana, et dominus eam monuit ad comparendum die Jovis proximo: dimittitur quoad instanter.—f. 57.

## CCLXVI.

Ministering sacraments, &c. in another parish without license of the curate.

*Marie Ax.*—Dominus Ricardus Arthure subtrahit ecclesie Sancti Andree Undershaft decimas et mortuarios, et ministravit sacramenta et sacramentalia parochianis dicte parochie Sancti Andree, absque licencia curati ibidem: citatur penultimo die mensis Julii, ad primum diem mensis Augusti.—f. 62.

## CCLXVII.

Blasphemy, &c.

*Trinitatis Parve.*—Willielmus Dunkeham notatur officio quod est communis diffamator vicinorum, et fidei sue violator; nec[non] blasphemator Dei nominis, et presertim die Pasche ultimo: citatur ad xi Augusti.—f. 65 b.

## CCLXVIII.

Clandestine marriage.

*Westham.*—Robertus Kyng notatur officio quod procuravit matrimonium clandestinum inter se et Johannam Okellis in quadam capella infra turrim London situata solemnizari, bannis inter eosdem minime editis: xix die mensis Augusti, Willielmus Kidwyne apparitor juratus certificavit se peremp-

torie citasse prefatum Robertum, festo Assumpcionis beate Marie, ad comparandum istis die et loco; quo die comparuit et submisit se correccioni etc. Et dominus eum jurari fecit de parendo monitionibus, et perimplendo penitentiam; et dominus monuit eum quod non cohiat cum uxore sua, quousque causa in consistorio pendens fuerit discussa etc. Et ulterius dominus indixit eidem penitentiam, ut moris est, per tres dies etc.: xxix die mensis Augusti Johannes Stanton, Willielmus Stanton, et Ricardus Hunt, obligarunt se fide media, et eorum quilibet obligavit se Ricardo Spencer in x li. solvendis fabrice ecclesie cathedralis London, casu quo prefatus Robertus Kyng penitentiam subscriptam non perimpleverit, incipiendam die Dominico proximo.—f. 68 b.

Bond for performance of penance.

## CCLXIX.

Decimo die mensis Octobris anno Domini millesimo quingentesimo secundo, Indictione vi<sup>ta</sup> Pontificis sanctissimi in Christo patris, et domini nostri domini Alexandri, divina providencia pape vi<sup>ti</sup>, anno xi<sup>mo</sup>, venerabili viro M. Henrico Monpesson, per Ricardum Foster ex parte Reverendi patris, domini Willielmi London episcopi presentatus fuit commissio infra scripti tenoris:—Willielmus permissione divina Londoniensis episcopus, dilecto nobis in Christo Magistro Henrico Monpesson decretorum doctori, salutem, gratiam et ben[edictionem], ad corrigendum, puniendum etc. prout in Registro testamentorum in pergameni conscripto, quibus litteris respondentibus receptis et per me Ricardum Spencer perlectis; idem venerabilis vir onus commissionis hujusmodi, ob reverenciam domini committentis, in se assumpsit; et pro sua in hac parte jurisdictione, necnon juxta et secundum omnem vim, formam, et effectum ejusdem procedendum fore decrevit; presentibus tunc ibidem, Willielmo Crabbe notario publico, Thoma Bews Kirton et Thoma Kemp, ejusdem curie apparitoribus, juratis testibus etc.—f. 79.

Commission of a commissary.

## CCLXX.

xiiii die mensis Decembris M. Johannes Redy rector ecclesie parochie beate Marie Hill comparuit coram domino commissario, et certificavit se executum fuisse quasdam litteras suas excommunicatorias; attamen ut asserit quidam

Carrying off letters of excommunication from the altar.

M. Willielmus Bennyngton easdem litteras violenter a suo altari [detraxit?]; et ideo aliter non potest certificare.—f. 95.

## CCLXXI.

Disturbing service, &c.

*Marie Aldermanbury.*—M. Willielmus Bramston notatur officio quod perturbat divina servicia, et quod non adheret ecclesie sue parochie; ac quod non solvit decimas Deo et ecclesie debitas: xviii die mensis Januarii comparuit, objectis articulis per dominum, articulos eosdem negavit; cui dominus indixit purgare se vi<sup>ta</sup> manu, die Lune proximo; quo die comparuit et produxit Johannem Lewys de parochia Sancti Augustini, Gabrielem Nicholas de eadem, Johannem Faldington, Ricardum Walys et Willielmum Swerder de eadem, in compurgatores; et facta prius proclamacione, nullo allegante, seu objicienti contra purgacionem prefati M. W. Brompton, dominus pronunciavit eos contumaces; et in pena contumacie sue hujusmodi eundem ad purgationem admisit, in forma juris: tunc dominus monuit eum quod abstineat a garulacione et tumultu in ecclesia, sub pena xii[d.?]—f. 99.

Not to talk, &c. in church under penalty of 1s.

## CCLXXII.

Perjury and breaking faith.

*Brigida in Fletsret.*—Robertus Church notatur officio fama referente quod est communis perjurus, et presertim violavit fidem cuidam Johanni Tatam, in non solvendo eidem vs., quos promisit sibi, fide media ad terminum effluxum, pro toga de dicto Johanne empta: citatus ad diem Lune, x Aprilis, quo die comparuit, et continuatur in crastino die, inter ix<sup>am</sup> et x<sup>am</sup>; quo die non comparuit, ideo suspensus. [A note is added.] Deus Rex celestis, miserere anime sue, quia mortuus est, ideo dimittitur.—f. 118 b.

## CCLXXIII.

*Bartholomei parvi.*—Dominus Thomas Wysman notatur officio, quod fornicator et incontiens cum quadam Johanna Stubbys [&c.] \* \* \* \* \*

Penance.

Dominus indixit sibi penitentiam, viz. quod die Sabbati proximo, inter evangelium et elevacionem hostis, dum cantatur alta missa, coram singulis altaribus ecclesie predictae,

offerat unam candelam cere precii oboli, dicendo quinquies Pater noster, et quinquies Ave Maria et Credo: postea die Veneris proximo sequente coram ymagine crucifixi ex parte boriali Poulis, nudis pedibus, offerat similiter unam candelam cere precii oboli, dicendo quinquies Pater noster ut supra, et pariformiter coram ymagine beate Marie, vocato our Lady of grace, offerat ut prius: et quod compareat die Sabbati extunc sequente, ad certificandum utrum perimpleverit penitentiam predictam; xii Junii comparuit et solvit pro absolucionem, et composuit pro vi solidis viii*d.*, et dimittitur.—f. 119 b. Composition for penance.

## CCLXXIV.

A.D. 1508.

*Jacobi Clerkynwell.*—Johanna Cokes notatur officio super crimine fornicacionis cum Willielmo Cokes et eam tenet in uxorem: xxiii<sup>o</sup> die Februarii citata fuit ad comparendum die Mercurii proximo: dominus continuavit usque nupti sunt et dimittitur. Comparuit idem Willielmus Cokes et juravit nubere prefatam Johannam Cokes citra festum Nativitatis Sancti Johannis Baptiste proximum futurum. Ad subeundum solemnisacionem matrimonii.—f. 6 b. Fornication. Sworn to marry.

## CCLXXV.

*Sancti Edmundi.*—Johannes Byrcheley notatur officio per rectorem ibidem quod duobus ferialibus non utitur superpellicio suo etc. xvi<sup>o</sup> die Februarii comparuit, et dominus monuit eum, ut faciat servicium suum, debitum rectori prout incumbitur suo officio etc.—f. 7. Not using surplice.

## CCLXXVI.

*Sancti Petri Pauperis.*—Jacobus Awnsetor notatur officio, quod vivit in adulteriis amplexibus cum quadam Cristina Brown. Citatus fuit comparere; vii<sup>o</sup> Marcii comparuit, et dominus monuit eum, sub pena excommunicationis, quod tractaret decetero Aliciam uxorem suam, honesto modo, prout tenetur; ita quod ipsa non haberet causam conquerendi contra ipsum, indebite corrigendo ipsam; et quod non permitteret s[e]rvientibus suis reprobare predictam Aliciam, prout fecerunt in temporibus preteritis etc.: et quoad crimen cum prefata Cristina dominus assignavit ad pur-



gandum se die Veneris proximo iii manu: comparuit et fatetur articulum et submisit se ad penitentiam sibi injunctam. Pro redemptione partis penitentie sue, gratis obtulit ad solvendum operibus ecclesie Sancti Pauli xs.—f. 7 b.

## CCLXXVII.

Threatening  
apparitor.

*Petri Paulisworf.*—Dominus Willielmus capellanus notatur officio quod est diffamator, quia diffamavit dominum Patricium Harrison, rectorem ecclesie parochialis Sancti Petri Pauliswarfe; necnon notatur officio quod violavit apparitorem nostrum Thomam Kemp, dicendo hec verba in Anglicis sequentia, viz. By Godes body I shall make the, and that parson to for till repent, excepte thow tell me, who present this article ayenst me. Dominus assignavit sibi ad purgandum se, iiiia manu, cum tribus honestis presbiteris.—f. 9 b.

## CCLXXVIII.

A.D. 1509.  
Vilifying God's  
word.

*Botolphi extra Algate.*—Michel Moumford notatur officio, quod vilipendit curatum ecclesie parochialis Sancti Botolphi predicti; necnon vilipendit verba Dei, dicendo prefato curato, in hiis verbis in Anglicis sequentibus, videlicet, Leve thy prechyng, for it is nott worthe a ———, necnon multa alia verba conviciosa ac inhonesta sibi publice imposuit; atque die Dominica proxima sequente, ipso sedente in taberna servicia comedendo et bibendo, tempore predicacionis; necnon accepit sacramentum sanctum in manu sua, dicendo, quod potuisset legitime in manu accipere tam bene sicut curatus. Citatus fuit xxvi<sup>o</sup> Marcii, ad comparandum die Mercurii post: xxviii<sup>o</sup> Marcii comparuit et fatetur secundum articulum, et primum articulum negavit: tunc Dominus assignavit curatum ad producendum testes primo articulo die Veneris post; quo die comparuit et submisit se correctioni super utroque articulo: cui dominus injunxit penitentiam etc. et sic dimittitur.—f. 11 b.

Receiving the  
sacrament in  
his hand.

## CCLXXIX.

Contract of  
marriage.

*Sancti Swithini.*—Robertus Boverith ad instantiam Margarete Newbold in quadam causa matrimoniali: xxv<sup>o</sup> die Aprilis comparuerunt coram domino commissario, et pre-

fatus Robertus fatebatur, quod procuravit banna matrimoniali[a] inter eosdem edi; et quod dedit eidem Margarete diversa donaria, viz. unum nobilem, unum anulum aureum, et unum grossum Romanum; ea intencione pro contractu matrimoniali cum eodem celebrando; sed dicit quod non contraxit; tunc submisit se correctioni, et dominus fecit eum jurare de peragendo penitentiam sibi injungendam: quem monuit ut accedat ad curatum Sancti Michaelis, yn Cornell, die Dominica proxima, et requirat curatum ibidem revocare banna matrimonialia, ut prefertur Banns to be  
revoked. edita, dicendo eidem, quod procuravit hujusmodi banna edi nullo contractu matrimoniali rato nec habito; et simili modo die Apostolorum Philippi et Jacobi, in ecclesia Sancti Swythini, et ad certificandum die Mercurii.—f. 13 b.

## CCLXXX.

*Sancte Brigide.* — Dominus Johannes Wryght curatus Incest. ibidem notatur officio, super crimine incestus cum priorissa de Gilborn. Quinto die Maii comparuit et fatebatur articulum, et submisit se correctioni; quem dominus jurare fecit de fideliter peragendo penitentiam sibi injungendam, et assignavit sibi ad recipiendum die Veneris proximo; quo die comparuit, cui dominus injunxit penitentiam sequentem: Penance. quod portet crucem, in ecclesia parochiale predicta, coram processione die Dominica proxima: postea composuit, et habet ad solvendum iis. iiid. citra festum Nativitatis Sancti Johannis Baptiste.—f. 15.

## CCLXXXI.

*Sancti Petri le Power.* — Franciscus Bone notatur officio, Not attending  
church, nor  
paying dues. quod non frequentat ecclesiam suam parochialem diebus dominicis et festivis, missas et alia servisia audiendo et celebrando, et quod non fuit confessus a suo curato, neque sacramentum eucariste ab eodem recepit, neque solvit jura ecclesiastica predicto curato prout tenetur.—f. 21 b.

## CCLXXXII.

*Michaelis Woddstrete.* — Elisabetha Forest ad instanciam Compulsory  
contract. Petri Pek, in quadam causa matrimoniali citata fuit, ad com-

parendum die Mercurii, viz. xx<sup>o</sup> Junii, comparuit et fatebatur quod compulsa, contraxhit cum prefato Petro, sed dicit quod precontraxhit cum Ricardo Branden.—f. 24.

## CCLXXXIII.

Clerk's stipend  
taxed by the  
churchwar-  
dens.

*Sancte Fidis.*—Petrus Turnour notatur officio, quod negat solvere stipendium clerico parochiali, per gardianos et ejusdem ecclesie parochianos taxatum; licet per gardianos ejusdem fuerit diversis vicibus requisitus; et subtraxhit hujusmodi stipendium, per tres annos summam viz. iii<sup>or</sup> solidorum: quinto die Septembris comparuit, quem dominus monuit ad solvendum gardianis, citra istum diem ad octavum, sub pena juris; et ad certificandum die Mercurii proximo post festum Omnium Sanctorum proximum; quo die certificavit se satisfecisse dictam monicionem; quem dominus dimisit.—f. 38 b.

## CCLXXXIV.

Consulting a  
magician for  
stolen goods.

*Sancti Petri le Poer.*—Alicia Ancetyr notatur officio, quod est gravis vicinorum suorum diffamator, et presertim diffamavit Cristoferum Sandon, dicendo quod ipse asportavit de domo sua unum par preclarum le correll; et quod ipsa Alicia fuit cum quodam homine morante, in vico le Charterous, utente arte magica; qui retulit sibi per figuram artis sue, quod ipse vidit picturam et imaginem prefati Cristoferi in quodam speculo; dicendo quod ipse Cristoferus stans in fenestra vitrea, vidit prefatam Aliciam deponentem hujusmodi par preclarum in stramine lecti sui: et post recessum suum, ipse Cristoferus intravit cameram, et in lecto predicto invenit hujusmodi par preclarum, quod secum subtraxhit.—f. 41.

## CCLXXXV.

Refusal to per-  
form penance.

*Sancte Brigide, nuper Sancti Botulphi extra Aldrigate.*—Margareta Draper que diffamavit Margaretam Gustard, vocando eam Bawdy hoor, super quo articulo alias fuit vocata coram domino commissario, et confessus est coram eo articulum predictum; cui dominus injunxit penitentiam; a qua penitentia impetravit inhibicionem, a curia de Arcubus, a qua curia remissio facta fuit: tunc dominus commissarius de-

crevit eam citandum fore, ad comparandum coram eo, die Veneris, viz. xv<sup>o</sup> die Nove[m]bris, ad recipiendum penitentiam ut prius; quo die comparuit et expresse negaverit perimplere penitentiam atque contumaciam; quem dominus reputavit contumacem, et in pena contumacie sue hujusmodi excommunicavit in scriptis: xxix<sup>o</sup> die Novembris comparuit, et petiit beneficium absolucionis, quem dominus absolvit casu quo perimpleverit penitentiam sibi injungendam, sub pena residencie; viz. quod die Dominica proxima precedat processionem, in ecclesia parochiale Sancti Botulphi extra Aldrige, bajulans unum cereum in manu sua dextera, et par precularum in sinistra, et processionem fieri.—f. 46 b.

Excommunication.

## CCLXXXVI.

*Sancti Laurencii in Judaismo.*—Dominus Johannes Coton notatur officio quod noluit prestare juramentum ab curato ecclesie parochialis predicte in omnibus licenciatis, et presertim a stipendiariis requisitum: xv<sup>o</sup> die Decembris comparuit et prestitit juramentum curati predicti prout de jure tenetur.—f. 48 b.

Refusal to take the oath required from stipendiaries.

## CCLXXXVII.

*Sancti Evini.*—Willielmus Spencer notatur officio super crimine fornicacionis cum Alicia Forth de Hakney: ix<sup>o</sup> die Januarii comparuit, et fatebatur quod matrimonium fuit solemnizatum inter ipsum et prefatam Aliciam in ecclesia parochiale de Aldermay; bannis tribus vicibus in eadem ecclesia, et eciam in ecclesia conventuali fratrum minorum civitatis London: cui dominus assignavit ad probandum premissa die Jovis proximo; quo die produxit dominum Thomam Draper curatum ecclesie parochialis beate Marie Aldermay predicte; qui deposuit quod ipse solemnizavit matrimonium inter predictum Willielmum et Aliciam die Dominica proxima post festum Sancti Martini ultimum preteritum.—f. 50.

Banns published in two churches.

## CCLXXXVIII.

*Sancti Sepulcri.*—Dominus Johannes Clerk vocatus ex officio domini super contemptum pro eo quod literas domini nuper directas minime exequutus est, ac eas irreverenter

Contempt.

recepit, atque ipsas sub pedibus suis jactavit: xxiii<sup>o</sup> die comparuit et obiecto articulo negavit.—f. 51.

## CCLXXXIX.

Refusal to  
denounce.

*Sancte Brigide.*—Dominus Willielmus Priour, curatus ibidem notatur officio, quod noluit exequi literas denuntiatorias contra Margaretam Draper: xiiii die Februarii citatur ad comparandum die Veneris, quo die non comparuit, ideo suspensus a celebracione divinorum.—f. 53 b.

## CCXC.

Mortuary.

*Sancte Ethilburge.*—Henricus Malyng notatur officio quod subtraxit mortuarium cujusdam hominis extranei, infra domum suam decedentis, viz. unam tunicam le blankett gardet le velvett: octavo die Marcii comparuit, et quia ante accessum judicis pro tribunali sedentis recesserit, fuit reputatus contumax, et in pena contumacie, ad petitionem Johannis Lark rectoris ibidem, emanavit litera suspensionis; xviii<sup>o</sup> die dicti mensis Marcii comparuit, quem dominus absolvit in presencia rectoris predicti, et tunc monuit eum dominus, ad allegandum causam quare non debeat compelli ad solutionem mortuarii predicti die Mercurii proximo, quo die comparuit Mallyn, et produxit Aliciam Swisby, ad probandum quod predictum mortuarium fuit sibi donatum per Henricum Shyrclyff defunctum; quo die, ad ejus petitionem, testis predicta erat examinata: deinde xxii<sup>o</sup> die mensis dominus monuit prefatum Mallyn ad introducendum coram ipso tunicam predictam, ut prefertur, pro mortuario petitam die Veneris proximo sub pena excommunicationis.—f. 57 b.

## CCXCI.

A.D. 1510.

Contract.

*Omnium Sanctorum Major.*—Matildes Emery notatur officio quod contraxhit matrimonium cum Johanne Gerard, et banna fuerunt in facie ecclesie inter eos edita, et jam idem Johannes non curat subire solempnisacionem, et eciam quod tenet eam in amplexibus fornicatoriis: xxvi<sup>o</sup> die Aprilis citata per Kyrkham, comparuit et fatebatur, quod contraxherit matrimonium, quibus dominus assignavit ad subeundum solempnisacionem, citra festum Nativitatis Sancti Johannis Baptiste, et casu quo minime subiret hujusmodi solempnisacionem.

Injunction to  
marry.

nisacionem citra illud festum, tunc comparerent coram eo die Veneris proximo post festum predictum, ad respondendum sibi allegandis super premissis.—f. 58 b.

## CCXCII.

*Sancti Nicholai Acon.*—Johannes de Arvieto detectus est officio quod non audit missam, neque alia divina officia, diebus dominicis, et aliis festis duplicibus et principalibus; nec in festo pasche ultimo preterito, in ecclesia sua parochiale; nec receperit sacramentum euchariste; necnon subtrahit oblationes, summe altari dicte sue ecclesie debitas, et subtrahit decimas de jure debitas: xiii<sup>o</sup> die mensis Aprilis comparuit, quem dominus interrogavit, utrum recepit sacramentum? respondit in loco fratrum Augustinentium, viz. a quodam fratre Barn ord[inis] minorum: dominus assignavit ad producendum secum suum confessorem, fratrem Vernaldum de Salazan, ordinis Sancti Francisci, Fardinandum et alios duos testes quod receperit sacramentum euchariste, in loco fratrum Augu[s]tinentium: die Marcurii proximo habet ad comparendum: xviii<sup>o</sup> die Aprilis comparuit, et fatebatur quod recepit eucaristiam a quodam fratre Augustino, sed non habuit licenciam a curato suo parochiali neque petiit. Deinde dominus decrevit fratrem Barnardum Hatazan citandum ad comparendum iiii<sup>to</sup> post. Deinde Portlond accusavit contumacie Johannem de Arviet sine licencia recedentis, et in pena contumacie sue, ad petitionem M. Portlond, reputatus contumax, et in pena cont[um]acie sue suspendit ab ingressu ecclesie.—f. 59 b.

Not hearing mass, &c.

Subtraction of offerings, &c.

Receiving eucharist of a friar without license.

## CCXCIII.

*Sancti Augustini.*—Willielmus Agerlay ad instanciam gardianorum ecclesie predictae, in eo quod non vult solvere stipendium aquibajuli nostre ecclesie, secundum suum cessum et solitudinem, et habet ad comparendum die Marcurii proximo; quo die non comparuit, ideo suspensus.—f. 77.

Subtraction of stipend of aquibajulus.

## CCXCIV.

*Omnium Sanctorum Majoris.*—Patronilla Waterford conqueritur de viro suo Roberto Waterford, quod non custodit ipsam, ut tenetur, per fidem matrimonii: set expulsi ipsam

Expulsion of wife from his house.



a domo suo : citatus fuit prefatus Robertus, viii<sup>o</sup> Februarii comparuit, et interrogatus per judicem, quare expulsi uxorem suam a consorcio suo, et non impendit sibi obsequia conjugalia? respondet et dicit, quod uxor sua est male dispositionis, et inhoneste conversacionis, cum quodam domino Thoma Thatm capellano parochiali Omnium Sanctorum Majoris, civitatis London, et pro tali, diffamata per Thomam Borow et alios; et tunc decrevit ipsum Borow citandum fore, ad diem Lune, ad allegandum ca[u]sam quare non debeat excommunicari; quo die comparuit dictus Borows et promisit de comparendo die Veneris hora ix<sup>a</sup>: xiiii<sup>o</sup> die Februarii comparuit dictus Thomas Borow et recusat prestare juramentum canonicum, de fideliter respondendo articulis hujusmodi diffamacionem concernentibus; ideo dominus pronuntiavit ipsum contumacem, et in pena contumacie sue, monuit ipsum ad comparendum in crastino, circiter horam ix<sup>am</sup>, ad allegandum causam quare non debet excommunicari; xviii<sup>o</sup> Februarii comparuit et absolvitur, et submitit correctioni pro contumacia sua, cui jurato dominus injunxit dicere psalterum beate Marie; et habet ad comparendum die Martis ad quindenam, ad respondendum articulis etc.—f. 90.

## CCXCV.

Divorce.

*Sancti Thome Apostoli.* — Petrus Mason ad instantiam Elizabethe uxoris sue, in causa divorcii, quia allegat precontractum cum quodam Johanne Grey, qui eciam alteram mulierem duxit: xx<sup>mo</sup> Marcii comparuit dictus Johannes Grey, et habet ad producendum testes super hujusmodi precontractu; die Mercurii proximo xxvii<sup>o</sup> Marcii comparuit dicta Elizabetha, et dictus Johannes Grey, et confessi sunt quod circiter ix annos preteritos legitime ad invicem contraxerunt in domo signi Christoferi in Temestrete, presentibus tunc ibidem Johanne Richards et Ricardo Walshe adtunc moram facientibus, in parochia Sancti Thome Apostoli, civitatis London, per hec verba, vel eis consimilia, viz. dictus Johannes dicens, Elizabeth, and if ye may fynde in your hert to love me above all other, her, and afor God, I plight you my trouth; et dicta Elizabetha ad hoc affirmative respondendo etc.; qua confessione facta dominus jurari fecit de stando mandatis ecclesie, quibus sic juratis, dominus injunxit

Witnesses to  
prove contract.

dicto Johanni Grey, quod tempore matutinarum in ecclesia sua parochiali, dicat psalterum beate Marie, et quod procedat processione nudis tibiis et pedibus indutus lynthiamine cum cera in manu sua dextera posita, et ita ad manus celebrantis missam illam offerat penitenter; et istis factis, et missa celebrata, quod accipiant disciplinam a dicto celebrante missam etc.; ac etiam injunxit mulieri consimiliter etc.: dominus insuper xxvii<sup>o</sup> Marcii injunxit dicto Petro Mason, quod cum dicta muliere, ista causa pendente indecisa nullo modo intro-mittat, sub pena excommunicationis: primo die Aprilis comparuerunt et certificaverunt quod peregerunt penitentiam supra injunctam etc.; quo die dominus monuit eisdem ad comparendum die Veneris proximo; et decrevit dictum Petrum Mason ad comparendum eodem die Veneris, ad audiendum voluntatem judicis, propter suam rebellionem versus predictos peragendo penitentiam. iiii<sup>o</sup> Aprilis comparuit dictus Petrus Mason, cui dominus assignavit ad recipiendum penitentiam, ex occasione premissa cumque requisitis, eodem die comparet dictus Johannes Grey et super hujusmodi precontractu produxit testem unum solum, quem dominus non admisit, usque producat alteros, et dominus ex consensu dicti Petri Mason seq[ue]stravit mulierem, et commisit in custodiam: postea dominus injunxit et continuavit usque in diem Mercurii, quo [die] monuit ipsam mulierem ad comparendum die Lune proximo; quo die non comparet, ideo dominus pronunciavit ipsam contumacem; et in pena contumacie hujusmodi excommunicavit ipsam in scriptis etc.—f. 93.

To receive discipline from the priest celebrating mass.

## CCXCVI.

*Sancti Swithini juxta London-ston.*—Iconomii ibidem contra dominum Christoferum Lemyng capellanum stipendiarium, in eo quod recusavit celebrare ibidem, juxta convencionem habitam; vi<sup>to</sup> Aprilis comparuerunt partes, et dictus dominus Ricardus allegavit, quod non convenerunt quominus ipse recedere potest, ad placitum suum, cumque placabile servitium vel beneficium sibi offerri contigerit, cui sic alleganti dominus assignavit ad probandum die Mercurii proximo, quo die continuatur. xii<sup>o</sup> Aprilis comparuit, cui dominus assignavit ad celebrandum ibidem vel aliter ad providendum de alio capellano ibidem celebraturo, juxta convencionem suam,

Refusal to celebrate service according to agreement.

in presencia iconomorum promittencium ad contentandum ipsum, vel illum alium pro tempore ibidem existentem etc.—f. 94 b.

---

ACTA CORRECTIONUM in civitate Lon . . . tempore Venerabilis Magistri THOME BENET, Legum Doctoris, Commissarii Reverendi, etc. RICARDI FITZ-JAMES, etc. London Episcopi, ac mei ANDREE SMYTH deputati Magistri JOHANNIS CAUNCY, ab anno Domini millesimo quingentesimo xviii<sup>o</sup>.—f. 2.

---

v<sup>to</sup> Commemoracionis Pauli, viz. v<sup>to</sup> die mensis Julii anno Domini millesimo quingentesimo xviii<sup>o</sup> coram Magistro THOMA BENET, Commissario-Generali in loco Registrali.—f. 3 b.

#### CCXCVII.

A.D.  
1518—1526.  
Adultery.

Dower promised to the person who shall marry the woman.

Milo Gerard notatur officio, fama publica referente, quod vivit in adulterio cum Agnete Johns, serviente sua, ex qua procreavit duas proles: vi<sup>to</sup> Julii in domo residentie domini, comparuit dictus Milo, et fatetur articulum, et quod est jam, ut credit, iterum impregnata. Deinde voluntarie promisit fide sua media judici in A. J. (?) stipulanti quod dabit in dotem cum dicta Agnete xx*l*. sterlingum, quocumque maritaverit; et si dicta Agnes maritaverit consensu et consilio suis, quod dabit *xl*. sterlingum ei in dotem: deinde etiam protulit quod in quantum humana fragilitas patitur, abstinebit ab illicito consorcio dicte Agnetis: et deinde dominus oneravit eundem, de peragendo penitentiam sequentem, cui sic jurato dominus injunxit, quod faciat poni coram sancta cruce, ad portam borialem ecclesie cathedralis divi Pauli London, unum ce-reum ponderis ii<sup>arum</sup> librarum, et quod dabit quolibet die Dominica per annum *id.* in elimosina; et quod quinque diebus Sabbatis citra festum Michaelis proximum, dicet psalterum beate Marie Virginis, et dimisit eundem.—f. 5.

## CCXCVIII.

Die Lune, viz. xvi<sup>to</sup> die mensis Augusti, coram Magistro  
PETRO LYHAM Commissario, anno et loco predictis,  
[viz. in loco Registrali].—f. 9 b.

*Sancti Botulphi extra Aldersgate.*—Agnes Edwards notatur <sup>Ill treatment of husband.</sup> officio, fama publica etc., quod maletractat maritum suum, non prestando sibi obsequia conjugalia, prout de jure tenetur: citata xiii<sup>o</sup> die Augusti, ad hunc diem; quo die comparuit, quam dominus monuit, sub pena excommunicationis, quod bene tractet virum suum; et simili modo, dominus monuit Thomam Edwards, quod bene tractet uxorem suam.—f. 10.

## CCXCIX.

v<sup>to</sup> Conceptionis beate Marie, viz. xiii<sup>o</sup> die mensis Decembris, coram Magistro THOMA BENET, Commissario Generali, anno et loco predictis.—f. 22.

*Sancti Batulphi extra Algate.*— \* \* \*  
xvi<sup>to</sup> die mensis Decembris comparuit dictus Thomas Tru, <sup>Change of penance.</sup> et dominus mutavit penitenciam publicam, et injunxit eidem quod remanebit singulis vigiliis beate Marie in pane et potu, et quod offerat candelam ceree, valoris unius i*d.*, coram principali imagine ecclesie sue parochialis, et quod diceret omne die quinque Pater Noster et v Ave Marias.—f. 22 b.

## CCC.

A.D. 1519.

*Sancti Jacobi apud Clerkynewell.*—Thomas Bywater et Jo- <sup>Bigamy.</sup> hanna ejus uxor notatur officio, fama publica etc. quod sunt communes diffamatores vicinorum suorum, et etiam habet duas uxores. Citatus iiii<sup>to</sup> die mensis Aprilis ad hunc diem: quo die comparuit dictus Thomas et fatebatur quod habuit quandam Agnetem Canwell uxorem in Lilford, Lincoln dioc. <sup>Alleged divorce.</sup> cum qua vixit per xi annos, et dicit quod fuit divorciatus ab eadem auctoritate ordinaria; et quod postea duxit Johannam cui dominus assignavit ad probandum divorcium judici ecclesiastico etc. proximo Trinitatis.—f. 33 b.

## CCCI.

Leticia Wall habet ad recipiendum penitenciam; quo die <sup>Child-swearing.</sup> comparuit, et jurata de fideliter respondendo, fatebatur quod erat cognita a Doctore J. B. et a Georgio Lovekyn; et dicit in vim juramenti sui, quod nescit certitudinaliter an proles

suscepte sunt dicti J. B. vel dicti G. L., sed credit in conscientia sua, quod sunt potius suscepte ex dicto Georgio: deinde dominus injunxit eidem quod die Dominica proxima aperta facie, precedat processionem, nudis pedibus, cum candelâ cerea accensa in manu, quam tempore offitorii, offeret celebranti, et quod dicat psalterum beate Marie, in tempore misse; et ad certificandum die Lune proximo post meridiem.—f. 35 b.

## CCCII.

Contract of marriage with two persons.

To be discussed before the chancellor.

*Sancti Michaelis in Wodstret.*—Georgius Hart alias Joyce notatur officio, quod dicet se contraxisse matrimonium inter Johannem Constantyn et Aliciam Hart [contractum]: citatus xxv<sup>to</sup> die mensis Junii ad hunc diem; quo die comparuit dictus Georgius, et dicit quod contraxit matrimonium et in facie ecclesie cum dicta Alicia per decem annos elapsos et ultra, in presenciam Alicie confitentis hoc esse verum, et etiam in presenciam Johannis Constynne, dicentis quod ipse contraxit cum eadem Alicia in facie ecclesie, post festum Nativitatis proximum, eadem Alicia hoc ipsa confitente. Deinde dominus monuit dictos Georgium, Johannem, et Aliciam, quantum ad discutiendam causam matrimonialem, ad comparendum coram domino cancellario crastino die, et monuit dictam Aliciam ad comparendum vi<sup>to</sup> Commemorationis Pauli, ad recipiendam penitentiam.—f. 39 b.

## CCCIII.

Die Sabbati viz. x<sup>o</sup> die Septembris, coram Magistro WILHELMO BOWDELER, Commissario Generali, anno supra dicto et in longa capella ecclesie Sancti Pauli. —f. 47 b.

Divers accusations against a clergyman.

Dominus Robertus Newman accusatus est, a fama communi, quod fecit certificatorium, pro certa pecunie summa, de bannis editis inter quendam Magistrum Leche et quandam mulierem, cum de facto sic non fuit.

Interrogatus de fama et facto, et negat utrumque.

Incontinence.

Idem dominus Robertus accusatur quod vixit in incontinentia cum quadam juvencula, que est uxor alterius viri; qui juratus et interrogatus de fama, et fatetur eam.

Interrogatus de facto et negat factum, cui dominus assignavit tercium diem Mathei, viz. xxiii Septembris, ad purgationem faciendam cum quatuor honestis presbiteris.—f. 48.

## CCCIV.

*St. Magnus.*—vii<sup>mo</sup> Octobris in domo residentie domini comparuit Thomas Pynchester, et expresse renunciavit ap-<sup>Absolution on  
renunciation of  
appeal.</sup>pellationi sui et inhibicioni, et submitit se jurisdictioni reverendi domini episcopi London, et domini commissarii; petendo beneficium absolucionis, a sententia excommunicationis, alias in eum lata, a qua facta fide per eundem, de stando juri etc. Dominus absolvit eundem a sententia excommunicationis. Et deinde dominus assignavit sibi ad recipiendum penitentiam die Mercurii proximo pro contumacia, et ad dicendam causam quare non debet excommunicari, pro eo quod non peregit penitentiam alias injunctam etc.—f. 50.

## CCCV.

Proximo Andree, viz. primo die mensis Decembris, coram Magistro THOMA BENET, Commissario Generali.  
—f. 57 b.

*Officium Domini contra Dominum Willielmum Cogan.*—Quo<sup>Contempt of  
jurisdiction.</sup> die dominus oneravit dictum dominum Willielmum Cogan, tunc presentem, de fideliter respondendo articulis concernentibus contemptum jurisdictionis domini. Deinde dominus interrogavit eundem, virtute juramenti, an sit de jurisdictione domini? qui fatetur. Deinde etiam interrogatus an Jo. Bottell fuerit apparitor domini, fatetur. Deinde interrogatus an vocavit dictum Jo. Bottell, fals perjuryd knave and fals polling knave? respondet quod vocavit eundem fals polling knave. Item dominus interrogavit an unquam dixit verba sequentia (viz.) The devylls torde in the commissariis tethe and in thyr fals polling knave? Qui interrogatus respondet et fatetur quantum concernit Jo. Bottell, quod sic dixit; sed quantum concernit dominum commissarium, credit quod non sic dixit, quod dicit quod calore iracundie locutus est plura verba, que jam non recordatur. Deinde dominus ex officio suo mero recepit dominum J. Mathew, Willielmum Bowser, et Christoferum Browne, in testes, et oneravit eos juramento, de fideliter deponendo, in presencia dicti domini Willielmi; deinde dominus assignavit eidem ad audiendum bene placitum suum, et ad recipiendam penitentiam, casu quo legitime probetur contemptus, die Lune proximo; isto die comparuit



Johannes Bottell, et certificavit se citasse peremptorie Willielmum Dary ad hos diem et locum.—f. 58.

## CCCVI.

A.D. 1520.  
Bigamy.  
Divorce before  
the official.

*Sancti Sepulcri extra Newgate.*—Milicentia Cheyne notatur officio, fama publica etc., quod habet duos maritos, et etiam vivit et vixit in adulterio cum diversis personis. Citata xvi<sup>to</sup> die mensis Julii ad hunc diem; isto die comparuit dicta Milicentia, et fatebatur se fuisse primo maritatum Johanni Newman tunc presenti, ad vii<sup>em</sup> annos elapsos; et dicit quod fuit legitime divorciata ab eo, propter precontractum cum Johanne Crokes, coram officiale Colcestrie; et quod post hujusmodi divorcium solemnizavit matrimonium cum dicto Johanne Crokes, qui postea moriebatur, et citra mortem dicti Johannis ipsa jam contraxit et solemnizavit matrimonium cum Willielmo Chayn: deinde dominus assignavit sibi ad probandum divorcium vigilia Petri ad vincula.—f. 73 b.

## CCCVII.

Usurpation of  
jurisdiction.  
Citing without  
commission.

Edwardus Skelton et Thomas Hackneman notatur officio, fama publica etc. quod usurparunt jurisdictionem Reverendi in Christo patris London episcopi, citando Paulum Suele sine commissione, in causa correccionis, et componendo postea cum eodem, in contemptum et scandalum dicte curie. Citatus fuit Thomas Hackneman xxv<sup>to</sup> die Novembris ad hunc diem, et citatus fuit Edwardus Skelton xxvii<sup>o</sup> die ejusdem mensis. Hackniman comparuit.—f. 89 b.

## CCCVIII.

Washing hands  
in baptismal  
font.

*Cristoferi.*—xx<sup>mo</sup> die mensis Februarii comparuit Johannes Browne, detectus officio quod est communis diffamator vicinorum, et quod contemptuose, ad festum Pasche ultimum, lavit manus in aqua sanctificata, in fonte baptismali; habet ad purgandum se iii<sup>ta</sup> manu in proximo, ii viz. de parochia et i extra parochiam proprium; quo die adveniente, produxit Robertum Smyth, Thomam Browne, et Alexandrum Grave, in compurgatores, quos admisit etc. facta fide de jure requisito, et dimittitur. Et quia negligenter injecit manus in fontem, habet jejunare in pane et aqua hac xl<sup>ma</sup>, et iii dicere psalterum Beate Virginis.—f. 96 b.

## CCCIX.

Quarto die mensis Julii [A.D. 1521].

*Sepulcri.*—Margareta Brightmore interrogata an sit jurisdictionis domini vel non? fatetur jurisdictionem, et quendam pauperem decessisse in parochia Sancti Sepulcri, et ipsam collegisse septem grossos et ii denarios pro sepultura ipsius pauperis defuncti; et non ultra; et postea vexhit eum ad cimiterium, et eum ibidem dimisit inhumatum; interrogata an requisivit curatum illius ecclesie ad deferendum cadaver ad sepulturam? respondet negative. Deinde dominus assignavit eam ad comparandum in proximo ad videndum ulterius obijciendum contra eam. Interim Thomas Yong de parochia Sancti Sepulcri inquisitus et examinatus, dicit quod Margareta Brightmore recepit ut credit secundum conscienciam suam, viz. viii*d.* in pecuniis numeratis collectis per eam, ex devocione quarundam devotarum personarum, ad humacionem cujusdam pauperis defuncti; non habentis aliqua bona nisi solum ex collectione dicte Margarete, ad hoc assignate, per istum deponentem; quia ejus officio ex eo quod est constabularius, cuivis officii hujusmodi assignatio ex consuetudine pertinet antiquitus, et nihil exposuit, nisi ii*d.* duobus viris, ad deportandum ipsum funus ad ecclesiam, et iii*d.* sacriste, pro puteo fodiendo.—f. 111 b.

Collection for  
the burial of a  
poor person.

## CCCX.

Decimo nono die mensis Julii.

*Martini Outewich.*—Johannes Waulf notatur officio, fama publica referente, quod conducit tres mulieres in uxores. Citatus per B. ad comparandum istis die et loco, quo die comparuit, et fatetur se primo duxisse quandam Annam Browne [de aut apud] Hereford, deinde Johannam Clogg apud Halsted, et jam ultimo duxit in uxorem quandam Margeriam Smyth, sacrum matrimonium illudendo, submittendo se correctioni, cui dominus injunxit penitentiam, viz. quod die Dominico proximo, nudatis pedibus, tibiis, et capite, antecedit processionem in ecclesia cathedrali Sancti Pauli, more penitentis, candelam ceream in manu sua deferendo, et in introitu processionis in chorum Sancti Pauli procumbat genibus flexis ad gradum chori ibidem, usque tempus offertorii;

Marrying three  
wives.

et Dominica proxima extunc sequente in ecclesia Sancti Martini Orgar, et Dominica extunc sequente apud Halsted, vel apud Sancti Martini Orgar.—f. 112 b.

Haryngton sede vacan.

ACTA HABITA in criminalibus causis coram venerabili viro Magistro W. HARYNGTON Doctore officiali et custode spiritualitatis civitatis et dioc. London, sede episcopali ibidem per mortem naturalem venerabilis ac reverendi patris et domini domini RICARDI FITZ JAMYS, nuper London Episcopi vacante, ultimo die mensis Januarii, anno Domini millesimo quingentesimo vicesimo primo; in domo officii commissariatus London, juxta Poulyscheyne civitatis London, meique RICARDI BEYNHAM, notarii publici, ejusdem curie registrarii, registorumque custodis, et actorum scribe \*.—f. 125.

CORRECTIONES coram venerabili viro M. G. WHARTON, Commissario reverendi patris domini domini Cuthberti Dei gratia London Episcopi, etc.

#### CCCXI.

Contempt in shutting the door on the apparitor.

*Marie Wolnoth.*—Ricardus Kyte notatur officio super contemptu, eo quod procuravit et fecit appariterem reverendi patris impediri et excludi a domo cujusdam defuncti, quominus executores dicti defuncti citare potuit ab exercicio sui officii impediendo et impedit. Citatus ad comparendum 19 Augusti: vi Septembris et fatetur, I had the mayde shote the dore, et deinde submitit se correctioni judicis, et prestitit juramentum: dominus assignavit ad recipiendam penitentiam die Veneris proximo post festum Exaltationis.—f. 126.

#### CCCXII.

Contempt in citing to the Court of Arches after proof of will in the Consistory Court.

*Omnium Sanctorum Stanyng.*—Robertus Morgan notatur officio super contemptu, eo quod postquam Johanna Chamber, relicta Ricardi Chamber defuncti, probavit testamentum

\* Vide Precedents in the Consistory, A.D. 1611.

dicti mariti sui, in consistorio reverendi patris episcopi London, ipsa que per Ricardum Reve apparitorem dicti reverendi patris primitus legitime premonita et citata de testamento probando; dictus Robertus Morgan temere jurisdictionem dicti reverendi patris perturbando et contempnendo, dictam relictam ad curiam archidiaconi London denuo citavit, laboribus et expensis fatigando, in contemptum et prejudicium juris et jurisdictionis reverendi patris.—f. 126.

## CCCXIII.

*Sepulcri.*—Johannes Scot notatur officio, fama referente et ad promotiones Johannis Ferby et Agnetis ejus uxoris, parentum dicte puercule, quod rapuit quandam puellam. Citatus ad xii Septembris comparuit, et proposito articulo respondit negative. Et dominus assignavit dictis parentibus ad proponendum in debita juris forma, et prefato Johanni Scot, ad respondendum loco consistorii Sancti Pauli 3<sup>o</sup> Fidis proximo.—f. 127.

Violation of  
child.

## CCCXIV.

Tercio Octobris, in domo officii.

*Botulphi Aldresgate.*—Ricardus Ryng notatur officio quod temere administrat et usurpat officium apparitoris sine auctoritate etc.; atque citat et monet nonnullas personas, in contemptum juris et jurisdictionis reverendi patris London episcopi. Citatus ad xvii Octobris, quo comparuit et fatebatur se monuisse ii mulieres, in causa diffamationis, ad comparandum coram M. Mores et M. Aleyn in audienciam reverendi patris domini Cardinalis; et hoc se dicit fecisse ad requisicionem cujusdam mulieris, absque aliquo mandato vel litteris commissionalibus; et insuper fatetur se de mandato M. Aleyn monuisse nonnullas personas ad probandum testamentum; et dicit se nullam habere commissionem, sed sperat se habiturum, et dominus assignavit sibi ad comparandum isto die ad septimanam, ad allegandam causam quare propter usurpacionem reverendi patris London auctoritatis puniri non debeat.—f. 128.

Usurping the  
office of apparitor.

## CCCXV.

Ultimo Octobris, 1522, incepit venerabilis vir M. W.  
CLYFF, cujus successionem secundet Deus.—f. 129.

Contempt in  
threatening to  
slay the appa-  
rator.

*Marie Wolchurch.*—Thomas Banester notatur officio de et super contemptu, pro eo et ex eo quod, ratione exercitionis officii sui, ipsum comminatus est interficere, et evaginato gladio dixit, Thou horson knave, w<sup>o</sup>ute thou tell me whoo set the awerke to summon me to the courte, by Goddes woundes, and by this gold, I shall breke thy hede; et preter hec, sollicitat ipsum judicari in vilipendium juris et jurisdictionis reverendi patris. Citatus ad xix Decembris, quo die preconisato, etc.—f. 131 b.

## CCCXVI.

Subtraction of  
the apparitor's  
commission.

*Nicholai ad Macellas.*—Thomas Orman, wexchaundler, notatur officio de et super contemptu, eo quod litteras commissionales auctoritate reverendi patris domini London episcopi Thome Meres apparitori suo jurato concessas, a manibus dicti apparitoris, subtraxit, subtrahit et detinet, ac retineret et se retinere velle jactitat, in contemptum curie et jurisdictionis reverendi patris, quominus officium suum exercere poterit: viii<sup>o</sup> Maii comparuit, quem dominus monuit ad exhibendum hujusmodi commissionem ad statim ante recessum, qui statim post exhibuit; et dominus assignavit eidem ad purgandum se 3<sup>a</sup> manu, quod non animo malicioso subtraxhit et impedivit, cum dictus apparitor jurisdictionem domini et suum officium exercere voluit. Isto die ad septimanam xv Maii; quo die vocato, preconisato, et nullo comparente etc. xxiii<sup>o</sup> die Maii comparuit et petiit beneficium absolucionis, quem dominus absolvit, ac sacramento ecclesie et communioni fidelium restituit etc.: et habet ad purgandum se, ut supra, isto die ad septimanam, quo die comparuit et defecit in purgacione sua, et allegavit compurgatores cum quibus existimavit se purgaturum esse impeditos q<sup>o</sup> etc.; et dominus in ejus ampliorem favorem assignavit ut supra ad diem proximum, quo comparuit, coram domino in domo residencie sue, et allegavit habuisse certos compurgatores, qui causa

absencie ipsius judicis recesserunt, et tunc dominus ex gratia continuavit et assignavit ad diem Lune proximum ante meridiem, ut supra, quo die voci, etc.—f. 136.

## CCCXVII.

*Gabrielis Fancherch.*—Johanna Leman notatur officio quod non venit ad ecclesiam parochialem diebus dominicis et festivis, et dicit se nolle accipere panem benedictum a manibus rectoris, et vocavit eum horson preste: citata ad 22 Maii comparuit, et dominus eam a sententia suspencionis absolvit; 29 Maii comparuit, et objectis articulis in scriptis, per dominum commissarium ex parte Georgii Askew promotis, dicta Johanna respondit negative, et dominus assignavit Askew ad producendum testes in proximo, tam ex parte rectoris, quam ex parte Askew; isto die ad septimanam preconisata, v<sup>to</sup> Junii comparuit Askew et allegavit causam suam per aldermannum sopitam, et habet ad solvendum pro dimissione die Lune proximo.—f. 137.

Refusal to receive the blessed bread from rector.

## CCCXVIII.

*Ethelburgi.*—Ricardus Coke notatur officio quod commisit crimen adulterii cum Catherina Heyward \* \* \* Postmodum dominus ad instantem petitionem ejusdem commutando penitentiam, injunxit et moderavit quod det in elemosina egenis et pauperibus de Hounsdych xii*d.* et incarceratis de Kingisbench viii*d.*, et incarceratis Newgate xii*d.*, apparitori xii*d.*, et scribe pro dimissione iii*d.*—f. 139 b.

Commutation of penance.

## CCCXIX.

Nono Februarii.

*Benedicti le Fynke.*—Johannes de Rate et Centena Turro habent ad certificandum de solemnizatione matrimonii inter eos habiti et facti; quo die comparuerunt dominus Robertus Martyn curatus ibidem, et Thomas Bane ejusdem parochie, et certificarunt, qui jurati deposuerunt se presentes fuisse, in solemnizatione matrimonii sancti, in ecclesia Sancti Anthonii de London, quodam die Dominico circiter mensem elapsum. Interrogati per quem fuit hujusmodi matrimonium solemnizatum, dicunt per M. Thomam Clerk senescallum Sancti

Marriage solemnized per "senescallum."



Dispensation of  
the cardinal for  
the same.

Anthonii; et eodem die exhibita fuit quedam dispensacio reverendi domini cardinalis, in qua concessa erat facultas et licentia dictis Johanni de Rate et Centene matrimonium solemnizandi, et solemnizari obtinendi, in quacumque ecclesia sive capella, etiam sine bannorum editione; etiam eandem potestatem concessam cuicumque presbitero idoneo, hujusmodi matrimonium solemnizandi etc. sub sigillo dicti reverendi domini cardinalis habent: data apud Richemond in manerio regio, penultimo die mensis Decembris, anno Domini millesimo quingentesimo xxv<sup>to</sup>, et dimissi sunt ab officio.—f. 219.

### CCCXX.

xxiii die Marcii.

Maintenance  
assigned.

Willielmus Anderson habet ad certificandum an tractat uxorem suam maritali modo: dominus monuit W. quod singulis hebdomadis iiii denarios per integrum annum, det uxori, et quod solvat annualem redditum, et quod cohabitaret cum ea diebus festis et quando per occupationes ei licet.—f. 221.

### CCCXXI.

Excommunica-  
tion for abuse  
of court.

Ricardus Hunt habet ad interessendum ex monitione domini, certis articulis [tangentibus] contemptum et vilipendium jurisdictionis domini; et ipse Ricardus Hunt examinatus, fatetur ista verba sequentia, that all false maters were bolsteryd and clokyd in this court of Poulis Cheyne; et etiam quod vocavit apparitorem, viz. Willielmum Myddilton in plena curia, false knave, and that hys fathers dettes, by the meanys off his mothor-in-lawe and the master commissary, be not payd; and this I will abide by, that I have nowe here in this place seyde no more but truthe, dixit quod noluit respondere jussus. Dominus eum excommunicavit.—f. 221.

### CCCXXII.

Termino pasche, anno Domini millesimo quingentesimo xxvi.

Dispute of  
jurisdiction in  
proving a will.

Johanna Sporiar comparuit et exhibuit testamentum mariti sui probatum per M. de Savoy, ut apparuit, fatebatur se esse infra parochiam Sancti Johannis de Savoy. Interrogata an

credit Savoy esse jurisdictionis domini London et infra ejus jurisdictionem, dicit quod credit quod infra spacium viginti annorum fuit infra dioc. London, ac jurisdictionis London episcopi. Dominus monuit eam ad comparendum isto die ad septimanam ad respondendum certis articulis ex officio domini sibi objiciendis. Interrogata per quem prius erat apprehensa, et citata ad probandum testamentum mariti sui, dicit quod M. Asche senescalus loci de Savoy, sine ostensione aliquarum litterarum citationis; et tunc venit Lequenor, et Cuthbertus, et citarunt eam ad comparendum, ad exhibendum et probandum testamentum mariti sui. Deinde dominus absolvit juratam, etc.—f. 222.

SEQUUNTUR ACTA in . . . . .  
 coram venerabili viro . . . . .  
 Doctore reverendi patris Domini C . . . . .  
 in civitate London ac decanatibus Midd. et Berkin . .  
 . . . . . habita et facta anno Domini . . . . .  
 . . . . . xxvi<sup>to</sup> octavo die mensis Ju . . . . .  
 pontificatus Clementis Pape vii<sup>mi</sup> x . . . . . in  
 domo registrali de Poulys Chey . . . . . —f. 1.

## CCCXXIII.

A. D.  
 1526—1529.

Thomas Edmunds et Agnes Edm. . . . . notantur quod Being contracted to a  
 vivunt in adulterio, quod Agn. . . . . precontraxit cum alio, felon, the  
 comparuit et fatebatur se contraxisse cum quodam Nicholao woman refuses  
 Machin, habitante in Chersey, dicendo hec verba, viz. Agnes, to consort with  
 I take the to my wife, et vicissim illa dicebat, Nicholas, I take him, and is  
 the to my husband, in presentia Roberti Bowser, habitantis in married to  
 Charterhowse-lane, Willielmi Roper, habitantis in Chersey in another.  
 Surrey. iiii annis et ulterius elapsis contraxerunt in Chersey.  
 Et ulterius dicit quod recusavit consortium ejus, quod fuit  
 fur et latro, et quod convictus erat per xii viros, et condemp-  
 natus juxta jura regni; et quod per indulgentiam regis  
 evasit mortem, ulterius dicit quod contraxit cum Thoma  
 Edmundes circiter duos annos elapsos; habet mulier ad re-  
 cipiendum penitentiam proximo die juridico. Interrogatus

idem Thomas Edmunds a domino an novit contractum esse factum ante solemnizationem matrimonii cum ea; dicit quod non.—f. 3.

## CCCXXIV.

Duodecimo Octobris in domo registrali.

The cemetery  
to be enclosed.

*Brayneford*.—Johannes Stokes, Willielmus Gawen, et Robertus Byrde, gardiani, notantur officio, quod temere administrant officium suum, viz. quod temeritate eorum sues et cetera animalia defodiant cimiterium. Comparuerunt, et dominus monuit eos, quod curent dictum cimiterium includi, aut muro, aut sepe, citra vigiliam Animarum; et habent ad certificandum tunc.—f. 30.

## CCCXXV.

xix<sup>o</sup> Decembris, in domo registrali.

Having sus-  
pected books.

Margareta Williamson notatur officio quod utitur potu amatorio, et habet libros suspectos; comparuit et fatetur quendam librum in pergameno esse penes Henricum Devell, cui dominus assignavit ad introducendum libros quos habet suspectos in proximo; est dimissa.—f. 45.

## CCCXXVI.

Primo die Februarii.

Using enchant-  
ments for  
cure of horses.

*Bowe*.—Willielmus Browne notatur officio, quod utitur arte magica et incantatione equorum: comparuit et fatebatur quod colligit certas herbas et alias mercatur et dicit Orationem Dominicam quinquies, Salutationem Angelicam quinquies, et ter Symbolum Apostolorum, quibus medicinis sanat equum a morbo vocato the fasshyns: cui dominus assignavit ad audiendam voluntatem suam in proximo.—f. 52.

## CCCXXVII.

xvi<sup>to</sup> Maii in ecclesia cathedrali divi Pauli, London, coram Magistro W. Clyff.

Having two  
husbands.  
Pleading the  
legality of it,

*Whitechapel*.—Alicia Colens notatur officio quod duos habet maritos superstites, unum in civitate Cicestrensi, viz. Willielmum Merys, et alterum in civitate London, viz. Ra-

dulphum Colens: comparuit et fatebatur quod Willielmus Merys erat superstes, tempore quo contraxit matrimonium cum Radulpho Colens de sua scientia; set tum credebatur quod liciter potuit contrahere matrimonium cum prefato Radulpho, non obstante priori contractu, pro eo quod idem Merys habuit aliam uxorem superstitem. Interrogata an ipsa et dictus Merys erant divorciati per sententiam alicujus judicis ecclesiastici; respondet et credit quod nulla talis sententia erat lata; et dominus assignavit ei ad introducendum sufficiens testimoniale ex quo constabit Merys precontraxisse cum alia superstita etc., die Veneris ante festum Jo. Baptiste, vel alias eo die ad recipiendam penitentiam.—f. 63 b.

her first husband having another wife.

## CCCXXVIII.

xxiiii die mensis Septembris, coram domino in domo habitationis sue.

*Sancti Botulphi Byllyngsgate.*—Johannes Johnson notatur officio quod vixit et vivit incontinenter cum Johanna Duke, Sancti Dunstani in Oriente. Comparuerunt coram domino, et fatebatur articulum quod cognovit eam carnaliter, et submitit se etc.; et dominus monuit eum ne decetero habeat suspectum accessum ad eandem Johannam, neque converse retur cum eadem. Item injunxit ei quod inter festa Pasche et Penthecostes proxima, precedet processionaliter, more penitentis, in ecclesia parochiali Sancti Botulphi, cum candela cerea, unius libre, in manu sua, tribus diebus Dominicis continuis, inter dicta festa; et quod processione ingressa offeret cereum suum principali imagini; et ad certificandum proximo die juridico post festum Sancte Trinitatis.

Incontinence.

Premissis omnibus et singulis sic gestis dominus ex certis justis causis predictam penitentiam remittendo et relaxando, injunxit eidem Johanni Johnson, ne ejusdem mulieris consortium de cetero suspecte frequentaret, aut exerceret; et insuper quod prefatus in die Purificationis ipsius mulieris seu die sequente tribueret et daret decem libras sterlingorum pro ipsa muliere maritanda; quam injunctionem idem Johannes sponte subivit et perimplere promisit, vel penitentiam predictam publice perageret, casu quo in solucione dictorum

Remission of penance.

Dowry of £10 to be given.

nummorum deficeret, injunctum fuit sub pena excommunicationis.—f. 89 b.

### CCCXXIX.

xii<sup>o</sup> die mensis Octobris, anno Domini predicto.

Remission of  
penance by  
virtue of an  
indulgence.

*Sepulcri.*—Robertus Glasebridge comparuit et fatebatur se esse jurisdictionis domini episcopi London, et parochie Sancti Sepulcri, et quod excusavit Johannem Scape a peractione publice penitentie, alias dicto Johanni injuncte, virtute et auctoritate quarundam indulgentiarum Sancti Lazari de Burton. Et deinde exhibuit copiam earundem indulgentiarum, quam dimisit penes registrum, et habet ad audiendum voluntatem in proximo.—f. 93.

### CCCXXX.

Decimo quinto Octobris.

Commutation  
of penance lest  
a divorce  
should happen.

*Andree Eschepe.*—Willielmus Rogers notatur quod vixit in amplexibus adulterinis cum Elizabetha Hope; comparuit et fatebatur carnaliter se cognovisse dictam Elizabetham Hope, unde submitit se correctioni et reformationi domini; unde dominus sibi injunxit penitentiam infrascriptam, viz. quod nudis tibiis, toga et camisia solum indutus, cum candela cerea unius libræ, incedat processionaliter ante crucem duobus diebus Dominicis citra festum Sancti Andree proximum futurum. Dominus tum ex gratia ac ex certis justis ut asseruit causis eum moventibus, et presertim ne inter prefatum Willielmum et uxorem suam divorcium contingeret, si hujusmodi delictum uxori sue manifestaretur, ac etiam ne similis separatio inter dictam Elizabetham et maritum suum accideret, commutavit penitentiam predictam, in opera charitativa infrascripta, viz. quod idem Willielmus inter Christi pauperes et incarceratos civitatis London, prout et ubi devotio eum excitabit, distribuet et eroget xxs. pro pane comparando in usum predictorum pauperum et incarceratorum, applicando citra festum Annunciationis beate Marie Virginis proximum futurum; vel predictam penitentiam realiter peragat, sub pena sententie excommunicationis; et ad certificandum de predicta erogatione vel penitentia proximo die Veneris immediate sequente.—f. 93 b.

## CCCXXXI.

Septimo die mensis Decembris, in domo residence domini commissarii.

*Hampton.*—Margareta Sawnders notatur quod potionibus Destroying an infant in the womb. infantulum in utero Johanne Byrde interemit: comparuit et dominus oneravit juramento eandem et Johannam Byrde, de fideliter respondendo articulis per eum obijciendis, et ob-  
jecto articulo Johanne Byrde negavit eundem.—f. 102 b.

## CCCXXXII.

[Eodem die.]

*Omnium Sanctorum majoris.*—Johannes Hamet notatur Excommunication for refusing to swear. quod vivit incontinenter cum Margareta Slacke alias Bate: comparuit, et dominus monuit eundem ad prestandum juramentum super certis articulis anime sue salutem concernentibus; et recusavit subire juramentum expresse, quare dominus eum excommunicavit, prout in scedula.—f. 102 b.

## CCCXXXIII.

Tricesimo die mensis Decembris anno Domini predicto.

*Marie Magdalene in Mylkestrete.*—Johannes Maynerde Commutation of penance, the crime not having become public. comparuit coram domino (uti dominus asseruit). Dominus (visa primitus ejus contritione, et ne derogaretur opinioni sue ratione peractionis hujusmodi penitentie, alias ei per dominum injuncte, et quia crimen alias per eum confessum non admodum erat notorium nec publicum) commutavit hujusmodi penitentiam, in opera pietatis infrascripta, ut asseruit dominus, viz. quod exponat xx s. pro panibus, incarceratis in Nuegate, et ceteris carceribus ubi ei visum fuerit optimum conferendis, per eum citra festum Johannis Baptiste proximum futurum; alias quod in festo eodem peragat penitentiam prius ei a domino injunctam; et habet ad certificandum de peractione injunctionum hujusmodi, proximo die juridico, post festum divi Johannis Baptiste.—f. 105 b.

x<sup>o</sup> Januarii anno Domini M<sup>o</sup> v<sup>o</sup> xxvii<sup>o</sup> in ecclesia Cathedrali divi Pauli London, comparuerunt Johannes Grene et Rogerus,



qui prestito per eos juramento deposuerunt se accepisse  
xxs. a Johanne Maynerd, ad emendum panes, pro incarce-  
ratis in Nuegate, Ludgate, Marshalsee, et Kynges bench, etc.

\* \* \* \*

Twenty nobles  
taxed by the  
judge in com-  
pensation for  
seduction.

Deinde dominus juramento oneravit dictum Johannem  
Maynerde stando arbitrio suo, in limitatione compensationis  
Johanne Scatheham, quam idem Johannes carnaliter cog-  
novit; quo juramento prestito, dominus taxavit dictam com-  
pensationem ad xx<sup>ti</sup> nobiles, solvendam quando exigentur  
aut per dominum aut per dictam Johannam, et dimisit par-  
tem.—f. 106.

#### CCCXXXIV.

Octavo die mensis Februarii, in domo officii.

Incontinence.  
Oath taken to  
give dower.

Thomas Tost habet ad recipiendam penitentiam istis die  
et loco; comparuit et submitit se correctioni et penitentie  
domini, ad quam peragendum juravit et insuper juravit de  
dotando juxta arbitrium domini; et habet ad recipiendam  
penitentiam tertio Marci ante meridiem.—f. 113.

#### CCCXXXV.

viii<sup>o</sup> die Maii anno Domini predicto [1528].

To introduce  
letters of inno-  
cence.

*Westham.*—Robertus Fawnce habet ad introducendum lit-  
teras declaratorias innocentie sue: comparuit, et quod fate-  
batur quod sepe non interfuit divino officio, dominus monuit  
eum quod die Dominica proxima flectat genua nudis tibiis  
et pedibus etc.—f. 124 b.

Penance.

#### CCCXXXVI.

viii die Maii anno Domini predicto.

Defect in pur-  
gation. The  
compurgators  
refuse to swear  
“de creduli-  
tate.”

Johanna Thurston habet ad purgandum se trina et se  
quoad Jo. Grocer. Quo die comparuit et introduxit Sybillam  
Preston, Andrianam Chester, Johannam Sockwell, et Editham  
Crosse, in compurgatrices suas; et quia compurgatrices pre-  
dictae recusarunt prestare juramentum de credulitate, idem  
dominus pronunciavit eam defecisse in purgatione, et dominus  
monuit eam ad recipiendam penitentiam in proximo.—f. 125.

## CCCXXXVII.

xxii<sup>do</sup> Maii anno Domini predicto.

Margareta Hunt comparuit et introduxit in compurgatrices suas Johannam Boxhed, Elizabetham Martyn, et Elizabetham Wylkynson, in compurgatrices suas; et dominus oneravit prefatam Margaretam Hunt de doctrinis immunitatis et compurgatrices de credulitate sua in hac parte.—f. 126.

Curing divers disorders.

Elizabetha Martyn, parrochie de Bowe, etatis xxiiii<sup>or</sup> annorum vel cerciter, dicit quod novit Margaretam Hunt per tres annos. Dicit in vim iuramenti, quod in primo accessu ad domum dicte Margarete Hunt, ista deponens monstravit dicte Margarete brachium suum male habens, et tunc ipsa Margareta interrogavit ipsam deponentem de nomine ipsius, et ipsa retulit nomen ei esse Elizabeth. Et ulterius dicit quod ipsa Margareta docuit hanc deponentem ut colligeret quasdam herbas, et cum ungeret brachium suum succo dictarum herbarum, tunc diceret Orationem Dominicam quinquies, Salutationem Angelicam toties, et semel Apostolorum Symbolum in honore Sancte Trinitatis, Sancti Spiritus, Sancti Ive, et sancte Et tunc apponeret pannum ceruleum, Anglice a blew clowte, brachio suo.—f. 126 b.

\*

\*

\*

\*

Margareta Hunt comparuit, quam dominus oneravit iuramento ad dicendum veritatem quam noveret in huiusmodi causa, et dicit quod primo interrogat nomina eorundem male habentium, et quod, then she knelys downe, and prays the blessed Trinite to save them and hele them from all ther weked enemys; and then she techeth them ix nights for to sey v pater nosters, v aves & ■ crede, & iii pater nosters, iii aves & credes, in the worshyp of Seynt Spyrite; & when the[y] take ther chamber & go to bedde at night, to sey one pater, one ave & one crede in the worshypp of Seynt Ive, to save them from al envy: And then for them that lye seke of the ague, she techeth them to gether herbe-grace, peneryall, redde sage, redde fenell, and the barre rote, before the son downe, so that it be the last dryncke that the syke drincketh at night; & for them that hath ony sorys on ther bodys, she techeth them to gether herbe-grace, dyll verveye, marygoldes,

For cure of the ague.

For sores.

put a lyttill holy water to them, & sey sume prayers; & when she stampethe to sey iii pater nosters, iii aves, and a crede, in the worshyp of our Lady, yf it be a woman that stampeth; & if it be a man he must se [say] iii pater nosters, iii aves, & a crede, in the worshypp of Jesus. Et quod deducit predictam doctrinam in Cambria a quadam muliere vocata mother Emet.—f. 127.

### CCCXXXVIII.

Quinto Junii in domo officii.

Healing horses. Elizabeth Fotman comparuit coram domino et fatebatur, that she toke the mense rodd & put it to the horse bely that was syke of the botts, & made crosses on a caryers horse bely, in the Meydens hedde, in Seynt Gylys in the feld, wher she dwellyth about ii yere agoo, and the horse rose up by & by & was hole, & that the seid rodde did grow besyde the Rhodes, and that she had it of M. Sutton.

Healing the tooth-ache. Elizabetha Foteman notatur officio quod she used to hele men of the tothe-ache & the wormys in chylders belys, & getheryng of herbs yauyng over them, et habet ad purgandum se vi<sup>ta</sup> manu et se, super hujusmodi articulis, die Veneris post meridiem.—f. 128, 128 b.

### CCCXXXIX.

xiii<sup>o</sup> Julii [1529].

Marriage contract in presence of a notary. Walterus Hyde comparuit coram domino in templo divi Pauli, et fatebatur quod impregnavit Agnetem Durrant, et arrepta dext[r]a ejusdem Agnetis, prefatus Walterus in presentia mei Jo. R. notarii publici, et Johannis Clerke civitatis London, protulit verba in Anglicis sequentia, viz. I Walter take the Agnes to my wyfe, & thereto I plight the my trothe; et dicta Agnes habuit eadem verba conjunctis dextris, et promisit de ducendo eam in uxorem, circiter festum Michaelis, unde dominus dimisit partem.—f. 178 b.

### CCCXL.

xix<sup>o</sup> Julii anno Domini predicto.

Disturbing a person when she was *Michaelis Quenehith.*—Johanna Carpenter notatur officio quod perturbavit Margaretam uxorem cujusdam Chamber

ex vicinis suis, tempore acceptionis euchariste in ecclesia. receiving the eucharist.  
 Quo die comparuit, et fatebatur quod arripuit dictam Margaretam per brachium, tempore quo dicta Margareta procumbebat, coram summo altari, in ecclesia sua parochiali Sancti Michaelis de Quenehythe; et quum erat parata sacramento euchariste, et quod dixit eidem Margarete verba in Anglicis sequentia, viz. I pray you let me speke ■ worde wyth you, for you have nede to axe me forgyvenes, before you reseyye your rights; et dominus assignavit eidem ad videndum testes contra eandem produci, in proximo.—f. 179.

## CCCXLI.

vi<sup>o</sup> Augusti in domo officii.

*Waltamstow.*—Willielmus Kechyn comparuit, quem dominus absolvit a sententiis suspensionis et excommunicationis etc. Entering the church, being excommunicate.  
 et fatebatur quod in vigilia Pasche post meridiem arabat cum bobus, et quod non obstante, quod curatus dicte ecclesie sue parochialis narrasset sibi, quod pro suspenso et excommunicato in dicta ecclesia parochiali fuerat denunciatus, tamen idem Willielmus dictas censuras contemnendo ecclesiam suam parochialem antedictam ad audiendum divina est ingressus.—f. 185.

## CCCXLII.

xv<sup>to</sup> die mensis Junii anno predicto, in domo officii etc.

Quo die comparuit Margareta Day, et objecto ei articulo fatebatur quod detinebat quedam legata per M. Thomam Nicolls capellanum defunctum, et presertim quoddam legatum videl. quendam annulum cuidam religioso legatum, et duo pulvinaria; et quod promississet introducere eundem annulum cum predictis pulvinaribus, per certum diem et eodem ab hunc annum. Quare dominus pronunciavit eam incidisse in majoris excommunicationis sententiam ipso facto.—f. 212 b. Detaining a legacy.

LIBER ACTORUM in officio Generalis Commissarii  
Reverendi Patris Domini Johannis, London Episcopi,  
civitate London, et Decanatibus Middlesex et Berkynge.  
[Tho. BARRETT, LL.D., Commissary.] Commencing  
Hillary Term, 29 Hen. VIII.

## CCCXLIII.

Tercio Vulstani xxii<sup>o</sup> Januarii, in loco consistorii London,  
coram Magistro JOHANNE STORYE, Commissario, &c.

Adultery.

Begetting a  
child.

Appointment  
of deputy.

*Fynchley.* Officium domini contra Ricardum Kynge.—  
Notatur officio domini, fama publica referente, quod com-  
misit adulterium sive fornicacionem cum Mariona Aps  
parochie de Fyncheley predictae, sorore naturali Alicie Pypys  
alias Aps, et eandem Marionam carnaliter cognovit impreg-  
navitque et prolem masculinam ab eadem suscitavit; quam  
prolem dum viveret suis impensis alimentavit, ac se se pa-  
trem dicte prolis publice confessus fuit; et quod post pre-  
missa dictam Aliciam Pypys alias Aps, sororem naturalem  
dicte Marione sic carnaliter cognitam, que adhuc vivit, de facto  
in uxorem duxit; quam quidem Aliciam suam uxorem pre-  
tensam, in presente habet superstitem, et secum commoran-  
tem. Quo die dominus substituit M. Johannem Smyth in  
legibus bacallarium loco suo, et commisit sibi facultatem  
quoad omnia et singula in commissione sua expressa exer-  
cenda et expedienda, et quociens et quando eam abesse, vel  
adesse contigerit etc. presentibus G. Kidd et Ricardo Clonye  
etc. testibus etc.: quo facto idem M. Smyth assumpsit in se  
onus commissionis hujusmodi, et decrevit procedendum fore  
juxta tenorem ejusdem. Deinde comparuit Ricardus Kyng,  
et objecto sibi per dominum articulo predicto, fatebatur se  
carnaliter cognovisse dictam Marionem, circiter vi vel v annos  
elapsos; et quod postmodum ipsa Mariona peperit prolem  
masculum; set an ipse fuit pater dicte prolis dubitat; tamen  
fatebatur se alimentari fecisse dictam prolem, sumptibus suis,  
nomine patris. Et quod post carnalem copulam cum eadem  
Mariona, et eam exercitantem, duxit prefatam Aliciam Pypys

sororem naturalem dicte Marione in uxorem suam, nulla dispensacione obtenta; quam adhuc habet secum commorantem; et allegavit quod propter dictum crimen commissum cum dicta Mariona fuit vocatus coram ordinario suo, et per eum castigatus, et correctus. Quo facto dominus monuit eundem ad comparandum iii<sup>o</sup> Pauli, in hoc loco, hora consueta, ad dicendam causam quare non debet seperari et divorciari a dicta Alicia uxore sua pretensa, occasione premisorum; et penitentia publica et condigna non debet sibi injungi, juxta confessata per eum.—f. 50 b.

Correction  
before the  
ordinary.

To say why he  
ought not to be  
separated from  
his pretended  
wife.

## CCCXLIV.

Tertio Blasii vi<sup>to</sup> viz. Februarii, anno Domini 1539<sup>no</sup>, in ecclesia cathedrali divi Pauli, London, loci consistorii ibidem.

Officium domini contra .—Quo die in publica curia blasphemavit Christum publice jurando by Goddes bloode. Quo facto dominus monuit eundem ad comparandum iii<sup>o</sup> cinerum respondendum certis articulis concernentibus blasphemiam predictam.—f. 58.

Blasphemy.

## CCCXLV.

Tercio Perpetue et Felicitatis, viz. x<sup>o</sup> die mensis Marcii anno Domini predicto, in loco Consistoriali, London, coram M. JOHANNE STORYE, Commissario Generali, etc.

*Fanchurche.* Officium domini contra dominum Willielmum Peyr curatum ibidem.—Ad recipiendum articulos idem Peyr habet, quo die comparuit idem Peyr, quem dominus juramento oneravit, super certis articulis etc.; monuit cui, quod purificavit quandam mulierem in domo Barnardi de Geen; qui respondet et fatetur eundem; addendo quod celebravit missam privatam ibidem, absque licentia ordinarii; et eciam respondet quod recepit litteras denunciatorias ad denunciandum eundem Barnardum suspensum, et quod denunciavit eundem suspensum; et postmodum dominus monuit eundem Peyr ne celebret infra jurisdictionem London, et a celebracione divinorum suspendit.—f. 67.

Purifying a  
woman in a  
house.

Celebrating  
mass privately,  
without licence  
of ordinary.



## CCCXLVI.\*

Notice of the  
Commissary  
proceeding by  
the king's au-  
thority.

In Dei nomine, amen, Nos Henricus Cole, juris doctor, reverendi in Christo patris et domini domini Edmundi, permissione divina London episcopi, vicarius in spiritualibus generalis, et officialis principalis, necnon infra civitatem London ac decanatum de Berkyng commissarius generalis, auctoritate serenissime regie majestatis in hac parte legitime fulcitus legitime procedentes.—f. 257.

---

LIBER COMPERTORUM ET ACTORUM coram  
officiali COLCESTRIE, incipiente 20 Octobris, 1540.

## CCCXLVII.

Comperta et detecta [in vi]sitatione Venerabilis viri Magistri RICARDI COREN, Sacre Theologie professoris, Archidiaconi Colcestrie, in ecclesia parochiali de Walden, etc.—f. 1.

Irregularity in  
performance of  
service, and  
being out of  
charity.

*Elsenham.*—Notatur per Willielmum Savell, Nicolaum Thurgoode, Willielmum Stoke et Johannem Waillet iconimos ac gardianos ecclesie antedictae, y<sup>t</sup> the chauncell is decayed, in tylyng and in selyng, over the blessed sacrament. The curate dothe not dutie in saying of his devyne service in due tyme; it is many times noone or he hathe done masse: on Saturdais after the sone goyng downe he saithe even-songe: and that ther was no sermon made syns the Kynges proclamacion came forthe, but one wiche a other prest made: also our curate is not contente to receve his tithes charitable, but arguythe withe his parishioners, & beyng then oute of charite. And on Ester day laste paste, a poore woman, callid one Craknell, knelid downe at Godis borde, to have reseived the sacrament, and he past bi, and saide y<sup>t</sup> she ought him a grote, and untill she hade promysed the payment of it, he wold [not] mynyster.—f. 3.

\* This notice of the assumption of the Supremacy in Ecclesiastical Causes by King Henry VIII., occurs on a blank leaf towards the end of the volume.

## CCCXLVIII.

Comperta et detecta [ut antea] in ecclesia parochiali divi  
Petri Colc[estrie].

*Milend.*—Notatur per rectorem dicte ecclesie, y<sup>t</sup> there is The rector has no clerk or sexton. nother clerke, nor sexten, to go withe him in tyme of visitacion, nor to helpe him say masse, nor to ryng to servyce.—  
f. 4.

## CCCXLIX.

*Parochia Sancti Martini.*—\* \* \* \*

Johannes Prior notatur per eosdem iconnimos, y<sup>t</sup> he is a A great talker in time of service. greate talker in the church, and especially in tyme of service. Comparuit et fatebatur articulum, et dominus injunxit eidem penitentiam publicam; et habet ad certificandum in proximo.—f. 5.

## CCCL.

Comperta et detecta [ut antea] in ecclesia parochiali de  
Witham.—f. 5 b.

*Tolleshunt militis.*—The sexte day of October presented at Requisition made by rector for punishment. Witham, before Mr. Official ther sitting, thes articles following, bi me, Richerd Baldwyer, parson of Tolleshunt Knyghtis.

\* \* \* \* \*

Also the said Thomas Lawrence the Saturday before Mydsomer day last past mete me in the Kynges hye waye from Salcote Wigborow, and ther smote me and strake me sondry and diverslye, contrarye to Goddis law, and the Kyngis; wherfore I demaunde & requyre the said Laurence to be excommunicate, and for his excommunication to be punyshed, as the law will, to dredfull example of other.

Also wher for lacke of a parishe [clerk?] lawfully chosen bi the parishe, & admytted bi the ordinary, I was constrained to chose me one George Ponde, whiche hathe ben admitted bi you, and hathe helpid me this xviii weeks past, to ministre sacramentis & sacramentallis, w<sup>t</sup> all other devyne service notw<sup>t</sup>standyng the[y] will note through the meanes of Laurence pay him his wagis; wherfore I desire you se[e] redresse.—f. 7 b.

## CCCLI.

Apud Coxsall.

Parson mis-  
using the  
churchyard :  
also allowing  
persons to die  
without "how-  
sill or shrift."

*Colne Wake.*—Notatur per iconimos dicte ecclesie y<sup>t</sup> the parson mysusithe the churchyard, for hogis do wrote up graves, & besse lie in the porche, and ther the pavements be broke up and soyle the porche ; and ther is so mych catell y<sup>t</sup> usithe the churchyard, y<sup>t</sup> it is more liker a pasture, then a halowed place ; moreover he is note able to kepe the cure, for ther be divers y<sup>t</sup> hathe died w<sup>t</sup>oute howsill or shrifte, throw his defaute, for he is slake and slowe.—f. 8 b.

## CCCLII.

Die Martis viz. Octobris, anno Domini millessimo quingentesimo quadragesimo, in ecclesia parochiali de Kelvedon, coram Magistro JOHANNE CLERKE, officiali Colc[estrie].—f. 9 b.

To certify of  
penance, and  
to receive  
greater pe-  
nance, if it be  
not done.

*Coxsall.*—Buterissa Garrarde contra Robertum Rodyn in quadam causa diffamationis sive convitii. Rodyn habet ad certificandum de penitentia alias ei injuncta sub pena suspensionis, et ad recipiendum majorem penitentiam, casu quo non peregit penitentiam, juxta judicis mandatum etc. Quo die comparuit Roden et asseruit, quod non peregit penitentiam, sed promisit peragere penitentiam suprascriptam etc. ; et habet ad certificandum de penitentia alias injuncta, in proximo.—f. 10 b.

## CCCLIII.

Die Mercurii viz. xii<sup>o</sup> die mensis Januarii anno Domini predicto [viz. 1540].

To repair  
divers defects.

*Fairistede.*—Iconomi ibidem habent ad reparandum omnes et singulos defectus in dicta ecclesia, citra festum annuntiationis beate Marie proximum ; viz. to by a loke to the fonte, and to kepe it from wormes commynge in, and to holde water ; to mende payment [pavement ?] of the church, to ryng to even-songe on Saterdaiis and other festivall evens, and to mende the sipte and the porche w<sup>t</sup> other necessarys to the same belongyng ; and to provide the churche goodis shalbe forthe comyng and take sufficient

suerties for delyverance of the same gooddes at all tymes : and also for to se the obetis to be kepid ; alioquin ad comparendum proximo sinodo post festum Pasche, et ad reddendum compotum parochianis, et rectori ibidem, de bonis ecclesie : xxviii<sup>o</sup> die comparuit Robertus Gyves et promisit quod Iconomi reddent compotum citra proximum, et habet ad certificandum in proximo etc.—f. 24.

## CCCLIV.

Die Mercurii viz. xv<sup>o</sup> die mensis Januarii anno Domini predicto in ecclesia parochiali de Walden coram domino officiali etc.

*Radwynter*.—Dominus Johannes Kendall notatur quod celebravit duas missas una, prius jentaculo dissoluto post celebrationem unius misse.—f. 25 b. Concerning celebration of mass.

## CCCLV.

Die Mercurii viz. decimo die mensis Marcii, anno Domini predicto, in ecclesia parochiali divi Petri Colc. coram domino officiali etc.

*Westwoode contra Donnyng*.—Westwode habet ad producendum alios testes : Quo die Westewodde allegavit quod mulier non ausa est veritatem fateri, ob metum parentum, quare petiit eam sequestrari, in domum honesti viri ; ad cujus petitionem dominus eam sequestravit, in domum cujusdam honesti Johannis Stokes de Leirbreton, sumptibus Westwodde, usque ad finem litis, sub pena juris. Et incontinenter dominus ad petitionem Westewodde publicavit dicta testium, in presentia Donnyng personaliter comparentis, quam dominus sequestravit ut supra : partes moniti sunt ad comparendum in proximo, ad videndum ulteriorem processum in dicta causa viz. die Mercurii ante Dominicam Ramispalmarum.—f. 34 b. The truth not confessed from fear of parents.

## CCCLVI.

Dictis die et loco comparuit Ricardus Kitchyn clericus, legitime constitutus in ecclesia parochiali de Mysleigh, unacum capella de Manytree, London diocesis, archidiacono Admission of clerk to his benefice.

natusque Colc., prout plenius patet per litteras reverendi patris et domini London episcopi, alias nobis directas, et petiit se induci in realem, actualem et corporalem possessionem dicte ecclesie cum membris et pertinentibus ejusdem. Ad cujus petitionem dictus dominus officialis eundem Ricardum inducendum fore decrevit, primitus prestito juramento de obediendo dicto domino archidiacono, suisque successoribus, ejus officiali et ceteris ministris, seu officiariis in omnibus lictis et honestis: ac etiam quod solvet, seu solvi faciet, dicto archidiacono et ejus successoribus, procurationes, sinodalia ac omnia alia jura archidiaconalia, tam de jure, quam de consuetudine solvi consueta: super hiis juramentum prestatit corporale tactis per eum sacrosanctis Dei evangelis.—f. 36 b.

## CCCLVII.

Die Martis viz. ultimo die mensis Maii anno Domini predicto [viz. 1541] coram officiali antedicto, in capella de Kelvedon.

Words said  
against the  
Catholic faith,  
&c.

*Coxsall*.—Johanna Gore notatur per iconimos dicte ecclesie, quod exhalavit nonnulla verba contra eucharistiam, fidem catholicam ac laudabiles usus ecclesie sancte matris; et presertim verba in Anglicis sequentibus, viz. the light y<sup>t</sup> is set afore the sacrament of the auter, and the money y<sup>t</sup> is gathered to maynten it, is but a papist fashion & popery. Comparuit et negavit articulum, et iconimi habent ad probandum articulum.—f. 53.

## CCCLVIII.

Die Lune videlicet secundo die mensis Januarii in capella de Manytre coram officiali antedicto etc.

Commutation  
of penance.

*Wykes*.—Johannes Rothe senior habet ad certificandum de penitentia alias ei injuncta, et ad purgandum se sexta manu, in proximo sinodo. Dictis die et loco comparuit, et defecit in purgatione \* \* \* \* \* Dimissus est hanc ob conditionem, that he shall lay xx<sup>ti</sup> lodes of gravell, et habet ad certificandum quando requisitus est, etc.—f. 68.

## CCCLIX.

Die Jovis videlicet xix<sup>no</sup> die mensis Januarii etc. in capella de Kelveden coram officiali antedicta.

Dictis die et loco comparuit Magister Ricardus Balde-  
wyer nuntius specialis per curatum de Markesley missus, et allegavit causam absentie dicti curati, viz. adversa validudine detentus est, quominus potuit venire ad juditium absque maximo periculo corporis; quare petiit ipsum excusari et causam ejus differri usque in proximum, et promisit introducere ipsum curatum in proximum: viii<sup>o</sup> die mensis Februarii B. adhuc allegavit prout prius allegavit; quare petit a domino officiali ut descendat in parochiam de Marks Tey gratia examinandi parochianos, de moribus et conversatione dicti curati; ad cujus petitionem dominus decrevit parochianos ibidem monendos fore ad comparendum die Martis in prima septimana quadragesime.—f. 73 b.

Messenger attends to excuse a sick curate.

## CCCLX.

*Colne Wake.*—vii<sup>mo</sup> die mensis Februarii in quadam bassa aula infra rectoriam de Colne Wake sita et situata in mei Nicholai Williamsone in legibus baccularii ac notarii publici, comparuit M. Willielmus Harvy clericus, et viva voce mihi notario antedicto intimavit, atque denuntiavit, quod Agnes Boner vidua de Colne antedicta fuit et est adeo decrepita ac in senili etate constituta, ac etiam tam impotens et imbecillis, quod non potuit venire ad juditium, absque magno periculo corporis, ad petendum beneficium absolutionis, a sententia suspensionis, alias in ea lata. Quare petiit, ac me notarium antedictum instanter rogavit, quatenus dominus officialis voluit ipsam habere excusatam, ac vices suas, rectori de Colne Wake comittere gratiam impendendi ei beneficium absolutionis etc.—f. 76.

Absolution applied for by messenger from sick person.

## CCCLXI.

Die Jovis. [10 Feb.]

*Dovercourt.*—Ricardus Dovercourte notatur per Willielmum Davys curatum ibidem y<sup>t</sup> he wolde not offer up his candill to the prest[s] hande. Not offering.



Of prayer for departed souls. Item y<sup>t</sup> praier doth not prevaile nor helpe souls departede. —f. 78.

## CCCLXII.

Die Lune [27 Feb. 1541].

Celebrating mass without a light, and other irregularities.

*Markes Tey.*—Dominus Hugo Sherwyn curatus de Markes Tey notatur quod celebrat missam absque lumine.

Item quod circumvehit sacramentum euchariste in sinu suo absque reverentia.

Item quod fovet lenocinium tam verbis quam factis.—f. 79.

## CCCLXIII.

Die Jovis [25 October, 1542].

Testimonials of priests' orders admitted.

Quo die Magister Alexander Logan curatus de Erlyscombe exhibuit litteras testimoniales suscepti presbiteratus ordinis quas dominus admisit [etc.].—f. 88 b.

## CCCLXIV.

The church-yard used for vile beasts.

*Ardeley.*— \* \* \* Item we do present that our churcheyarde is in decay, by the vicar and the parson, because that the vicar doythe latt the churcheyarde, to them that usythe it wythe vile bestes.—f. 89.

## CCCLXV.

*Sancti Egidii Colc[hester].*—We do declare and certifie that [of] xxxvi howselyng people, the one halffe off them usualy comyth not to the paroch church, upon the Sondey and holey days.

“Bollyng and gulling” during service.

Item that Willielmus Makyn and Kateryn hys wyffe kepythe a comon ale-hows, and kepythe common resort off lyght persons ther, bollyng and gullyng, at divine service tyme; and thei have bene warnyd theroff by the constabelles off the parocche divers tymys, and yet it is not amendyd; and the said Kateryn, by reson theroff, doythe not come to the chyrche to divine servyce, skant ons in the quarter. \* \* \* —f. 90 b.

## CCCLXVI.

*Dedham.*— \* \* There is divers chapman that doythe Chapmen sell their wares in service time.  
resort to the towne wyche do sell ther wares ther in the  
servyce tyme, wyche is disturbanche to the people wel dis-  
posyd to serve Gode.—f. 91.

## CCCLXVII.

*Horkesly.*— \* \* . Jacobus Enfytt withholdeth chyrche Church stock.  
deuty, that is to say, a chyrche cowe, the wyche is a rent to  
the reparation of the chyrche y. xvi. d by yere. Debet iiiii yeres.

## CCCLXVIII.

*Laver de lai hay.*—We do present that Sir Wylliam, curat On eating meat in Lent.  
off the same parocche, dyd say that it was not lawfull, that  
wyte met shulde be etyn in Lent. Curatus negavit articu-  
lum, habet ad purgandum se iii<sup>ta</sup>, cum se, in proximo.

Item the said curat bewrythe the confescion off one Bewrying confession.  
Edward Westewod off the said parocche. xxv<sup>to</sup> die mensis  
Octobris, dominus injunxit eidem penitentiam. \* \*

Item the day off purificacion off women, the said curat On churching women.  
wyll not tarey for them, bot say messe or thei come, all  
thought he doy [doth] knowe off yt; contrarey to the  
usage off other curates \* \* \* —f. 91 b.

## CCCLXIX.

*Patyswycke.*—Item that the parsonage is in gret decay, On expulsion of curate from his cure by the parson, contrary to the wishes of the parishioners.  
and is the fawte of Syr Wylliam Harbotell ther, our parson;  
and forthermore that the said Sir Wylliam Horkbotell  
cannot off hymself serve ower said parocche accordyngly  
as it owght to bee; neverthelesse he haythe such a prest  
as is gude and sufficyent, to discharge hym in hys cower,  
and the parocchyners well content wythe; wyche preste the  
parson intendythe to expelle, and pute away, and to the gret  
dysquietnesse off all the parocche, and contrarey to ryght or  
gude concyence; to the gret hurt and damage off hymselffe  
and the parocche also; wherfore we hertyley desyer your  
gude masterschepe, that yow beyng put in autorite to se  
and to execute reformacon, in suche deflawtes; that yt may

plese yow to commande the said parson Harbottell, to apere her or at Keldon at your next courte, and that we may haive knolege off the day; to the entent that we may ther declare in hys presence, suche maters and causys as we ar bownde in concience, by our othe to do.

On secret declaration of fault to the judge.

Item we thynke a gret defaute in Sir Robert, parson off Maxall, for hys gret resortyng to a howse in our parocche; wyche we shalbe glade to declare secretelye beffore yow, and hym, at suche tyme as shall plese yow.—f. 94.

## CCCLXX.

Die Mercurii [24 October].

Solemnizing marriage without licence of rector.

*Offitium domini contra dominum Willielmum Bekerstaffe, ad promotionem M. Willielmi Wright.*—Dominus Willielmus Bekerstaffe notatur quod solemnizavit matrimonium inter Ricardum Yarde et Margaretam Godfrey parochianos Sancti Leonardi in villa Colc.; in ecclesia parochiali de Grenstede, absque licentia rectoris Sancti Leonardi. \* \* \* \*  
Dominus eundem a celebratione divinorum suspendit. \* \*  
—f. 96 b.

## CCCLXXI.

Die Jovis [14 December].

Not living in charity.

*Fordam.*—Symon Patryke notatur quod nunquam ibat ad lectum in charitate per spatium xx<sup>ti</sup> annorum. \* \*  
—f. 100 b.

## CCCLXXII.

Die Mercurii [7 March].

Exhibition of letters of orders.

Hugo Hulley erat admissus ad sacros ordines presbiteratus, in villa de Lichefelde anno xxvi<sup>to</sup> regis.—f. 110 b.

## CCCLXXIII.

Die Martis [22 May, 1543].

Custom of making torches and keeping the drinking.

*Coggleshall.*—Dictis die et loco comparuit Thomas Clarke ac similiter comparuit Richardus Trew, et fatebantur se non observasse iudicis decretum, viz. that y<sup>a</sup> haith not maid ii mo torches, nor yet kepede the drynkyng in the parishe of Coxall, accordyng [to] the laudable use and custome of

the same parishe. Quare judex decrevit y<sup>t</sup> y<sup>a</sup> shall make ii sufficient torches, betwyxt this daie and the feast of Saint John Baptiste next ensuyng, and delyver them unto the churchwardens accordyng to the laudable usage and custome of the same parishe, to the use of the same churche of Coxshall: alioquin judex monuit prefatos Thomam Clerke et Ricardum Trew ad comparendum coram eo isto loco, die Mercurii viz. xxvii<sup>mo</sup> die mensis Junii proximo futuro, ad dicendam causam quare non debent excommunicari etc.—f. 111 b.

## CCCLXXIV.

Die Mercurii [27 June].

*Tey Magna*.—Robertus Dawe subtrahit a dicta ecclesia a certain cloth called carpet clothe, to lay before hie aulter, at all hie and solempne festes, given by his father in his lyfe to the said churche.—f. 114 b.

## CCCLXXV.

Comperta et detecta in visitatione dicti domini archidiaconi [A.D. 1541].—f. 129.

In Decanatu de Witham.

*Tolleshunt Major*.— \* \* \* Also [the churchwardens complain] y<sup>t</sup> the vicar do[th] not fynde a sermon in all the yere: habet ad providendam, cum omni festinatione infra quarterium. Also the vicar suffereth a wife to resorte to his house, the whiche woman was forbydyn by Mr. Antony Darcy and the cunstable, [viz.] the [wife] of Baret of the same parishe. Dominus injunxit ipsum vicarium quod non permittat illam mulierem ingredi in domum suam. \* \* \* —f. 130.

## CCCLXXVI.

In Decanatu de Sampforde et Newporte.

*Walden*.— \* \* \* Our paryshe pryst hath hantye Haunting taverne[s] at unlaful tymes, so y<sup>t</sup> he is not redy to do his taverns. duetie and office in the churche.

Also our chantere pryst, Sir James Braughton, haith not Not maintain-

ing good ser- helpe to mayntene goode serves, in the quere, in syngynge  
vice in the and redynge. \* \* \*

## CCCLXXVII.

Not finding a clerk for the week-days. *Farnam.*—First, we complaine y<sup>t</sup> oure parsone do denye us the Kyng's sylver, y<sup>t</sup> shulde be destrybutede [to] our pore parishioneris. \* \* \* Item our parsone shulde fynde us a clerke for werkyng dais, of aulde custome usyd this hundrede yere and more, and now he do denye us.—f. 131.

## CCCLXXVIII.

In Decanatu de Lexden.

The constable a great dis- *Worminforde.*— \* \* \* We present William Lynne, quietter. the constable, y<sup>t</sup> he is a commyne dysquietor, trobler, and a letter of God servys, for he did give a commandement to the ayell-houses, to provide mete and drynke to be solde, at the tyme of dyvine servys, as welle as at other tymes. \*  
\* \* \* —f. 132.

## CCCLXXIX.

The church- *Horkysley parva.*—Memorandum that the xviii<sup>th</sup> daie of wardens to make periodi- October, in the yere of our lorde God, a. M. ccccxli, it cal accounts of was ordynede and agreyd, by the consent and assent of all monies re- tho paryshoners, of Litill Horkysley, that the churche ceived. wardens of the same towne from tyme to tyme being schall alwais frome thens forth, gather and take up all the fermes of the churche kyne, and other summes of money belongynge to the saide churche of Litill Horkysley; and the said churche wardens to make a trew and perfite counte of the same fermes, and other summes of mony to the parishoners, ever of the next Sunday after the feast of All Sayntes.—f. 133 b.

## CCCLXXX.

The vicar not allowed to go into the vestry by the clerk. *Complainte of Edmonde Stretam, vicar of Kelvedon.*— \* \* \* Item the clarke y<sup>t</sup> now is will not suffer the said vicar to go into the vestry at his plesur, but loke him furth. \* \* \*

Item, there is not caryed holy-water, nor ryngyng to even-songe accordyng as the clerke shuld do, w<sup>t</sup> other dueties to him belongyng etc.—f. 134.

## CCCLXXXI.

*Tey parva.*— \* \* \* John Lyes, of Litill Teye, Divers duties left undone by the parson. doth present y<sup>t</sup> Sir Richard, parson of Litill Teye, do not his duetie in the churche there; for the said parson doth matens & masse or other parishe do go to mattens; nother he saith non evyn-songe upon the Saterdaie at any time in the yere: also he said no masse upon Corpus Christi daye, and upon our Lady day in Lent last passede: nether he halowyd the fonte at Wytsonyde last.

Item he made no holy water upon Trinitie Sondaie; neyther holy brede the same daie.

Item he say no masse at any tyme upon the weke daye.

Item the said parson useth Anne, the wife of Roger Slewe, commynly, and wille not sease for no warnynge etc.—f. 135.

## CCCLXXXII.

Billa querelatina Johannis Abell de Bergholte.—f. 138 b.

Item of Mydsomer last past ther was no evensonge said in the parishe churche of Bergholte; for when masse was done, the parson went to Colchester, & taried ther all the next day; and John Greme's wif of the parishe being very seke, sent for the parson bi divers, to have receved the rightes of the churche, but he could not be founde, & so she died w<sup>th</sup>out howsull or shrifte. Being absent from the parish, and a person dying without howsell or shrift. \* \* \*

Item the parson nor his depute did not declare the *pater noster*, the *Ave*, the *crede*, nor the commaundments this ii<sup>o</sup> yer.—f. 139.

## CCCLXXXIII.

Die Jovis [10 Nov. 1541].

*Colne Ingane.*—In quadam causa diffamationis sive con- Penance. vitii, ad instantiam Magistre Elizabethe Veer, de Colne Yngane. \* \* \* Dominus injunxit eidem penitentiam hoc modo, viz., y<sup>t</sup> he shall go on Sondaie nexte



to Maistres Veer, before viii honest men, and the church wardens, and the queste men, with the curate, and there shall say after this manner; Maistres, where I have spoken slaunderous words upon your husbände, I am sorre for it, and do desire youe to forgive me; et habet ad certificandum in proximo.—p. 150.

LIBER ACTORUM tempore venerabilis viri Magistri RICARDI COREN, sacre Theologie Professoris, Archidiaconi Colchestrie, suprema auctoritate Regia ecclesiastica, in hac parte fulciti, coram venerabili viro Magistro JOHANNE CLERKE in Legibus Bach., dictique domini Archidiaconi officiali. \* \* \* A. D. 1542.—f. 1.

## CCCLXXXIV.

Apud Kelvedon. Die Mercurii [27 June, 1543].

Giving a dog  
holy bread. *White Notley.*—Johannes Ellys notatur y<sup>t</sup> he did give his dogge holy brede, and so did contempne the hole ceremonie of hole brede. [*Penance enjoined.*—f. 13.

## CCCLXXXV.

Die Lune [23 July].

Hunting upon  
Sunday. Andreas Mylner, Johannes Thorpe [et] Johannes Thedam notantur that they do hunte upon the Sondaie, and haith bene warnede thereof, and wille not sease: comparuerunt ac prorsus articulum denegaverunt: quare dominus eos monuit sub pena juris ut observent Sabbatum etc. et sic dimissi sunt.—f. 15 b.

## CCCLXXXVI.

Comperta et detecta in visitatione antedicti domini Archidiaconi inchoata primo die mensis Octobris anno Domini predicto prout plenius patet in libro visitationis dicti domini Archidiaconi.—f. 22 b.

Keeping cos- *Tollesbury.*— \* \* \* Item certen men in the

towne do kepe cossetts, which continually do frequent the churcheyarde and sitte in the porche by nyght to the noyans of all the parisshe; that is to say, John Owthyng, Thomas Sayer, and John Sayer.—f. 25 b.

sets to the annoyance of the parish.

## CCCLXXXVII.

*Walden.*— \* \* \* Andrewe Brette [and others]. Thes wille not paye to the holie lofe in contempnyng the Kyngis injunctions.—f. 27 b.

Not paying to the holy loaf.

## CCCLXXXVIII.

*Ecclesia Sancti Egidii.*—Concernynge the articles in this presente visitation proponede and maide manyfest, under the vertue of an othe, by the reverent Jugege of the said visitation, unto us John Fennyng and William Jonys church wardens, and John Bowre and William Warner quest men, for the discharge of oure consciencie towchyng oure othe: We fynde y<sup>t</sup> Robert Barkham dothe not comme to the church upon hye Sondays, nor holy days; but is lurking at home, and every body y<sup>t</sup> wille go to him to be shaven, he is redy to shave them, and dothe shave them, upon suche days, as though they ware his commune workynge days, to the gret evill example of other; and offendith other devoute peple, causynge them to speke and thynk more concernynge this matter than they wolde. He cane goo upon the workynge days into the felde and other places, for such thynges as he lyketh, but cane not comme to the church, at suche tymes as he shulde. We marvell thereat.

Not coming to church, &c.

Item John Jonsone (a shomaker) kepeth his bedd upon the Sonedaies and other holy days at tyme of mattens and masse, as it ware a hownde y<sup>t</sup> shuld kepe his kenell, havynge no respecte to God nor saynt: which lewyd condition we may nott commende nor hyde. \* \*

\* \* —f. 28.

## CCCLXXXIX.

*Coggleshall.*— \* \* \* We present Thomas Pay- koke y<sup>t</sup> he hath broken an old awncient and laudable custome of o<sup>r</sup> church, in makynge of torches, that haith bene usid every oute of mynd of man. And that the

On election of torchwarden.

same Thomas is elected to be one of the torchewardyns, and doth refuse to take upon him the same office, accordynge to the laudable custome of the same parishe. \* \* \* —f. 28 b.

## CCCXC.

No priest to confess the parishioners in Lent, &c.

*Nigra Notley.*—In primis we present y<sup>t</sup> the Kyngis injunctions were not rede in halfe a yere in the foresaid parishe. Item the vi Artycles were rede but ons in halfe a yere there. Item that dyverse tymes in the Lent last there was no prest to confesse the parishioners. Item we knowe nott where to seke the prest when nede is, in tyme of Goddis visitation. \* \* \* —f. 29.

## CCCXCI.

Die Veneris [7 December].

Withholding reverence from the crucifix.

*Walden.*— \* \* \* Dictus Andreas Brett fatebatur se non fecisse debitam reverentiam crucifixo seu cruci ut Cristianus debeat: continuatur in proximo.—f. 36 b.

## CCCXCII.

Die Lune [5 May, 1544].

Penance.

*Walden.*—Dionisia Constable \* \* \* Dominus injunxit eidem penitentiam publicam \* \* \* viz. That on Sondaie next, in Litill Walden chapell, openlye, after the procession be commede into the said chapell, [she] shall saye thes wordes—naburs, whereas I have offendende God and commenwelth, in that youe have had me in suspection of ille-lyvinge w<sup>t</sup> George Wakefeld, I cry God mercy, and am sorie for it; and I praie youe be in love and charitie w<sup>t</sup> me.—f. 45.

## CCCXCIII.

Comperta et detecta in visitatione [etc.] inchoata iiii<sup>to</sup> die mensis Octobris [etc.].—f. 54.

Vicar keepeth a woman in his house suspiciously.

*Ardeley.*— \* \* \* Item there is an exclamation upon Sir Ric. Borowe, maister vicar w<sup>t</sup> us, by cause of a woman, whos name we knowe not, which he kepithe contynually in his house, whiche the parishioners are muche

offendede thereat; and also causis muche troble in the parishe of disqyetnes; for it is thought by us y<sup>t</sup> he kepith her contrarie to Godds lawes, and we ar sure contrarie to the Kynges injunctions. In consideration whereof we desire to have a redresse in y<sup>t</sup> behalfe.—f. 55.

## CCCXCIV.

*Fordam.*— \* \* \* Item our parishe prest cannot [say] his dyvyne service quyetly in the churche, for dissention and busynes, y<sup>t</sup> John Colfelde [hath], w<sup>t</sup> honest men in the churche; and this troble all the paryshe.—f. 55.

The priest cannot say service in the church by reason of dissension and business.

## CCCXCV.

*Mylend.*— \* \* \* Item the said parson dothe checke his paryshe, lykenynge them unto galled horses, when they be rubbed, they will wynce: spekyng it in the pulpyt. Item we present John Colte mysseusing his tonge w<sup>t</sup> chidinge aganest the said parson, in the chirche, in servis tyme and in the tyme of his sermonde; sainge unto him, prest, fyndest y<sup>t</sup> in y<sup>e</sup> boke, y<sup>t</sup> my bake is gallede. f. 55 b.

The parson checketh the parishioners, &c.

## CCCXCVI.

*Muche Braxstede.*— \* \* \* John Stokton, of Inford, usith to resorte to Muche Brastede chirche, and there talketh in the tyme of dyvyne servys, in the churche yarde, swerith before the yonge people by the lyffe, blude, wonds, and sydes of our Lorde.—f. 56.

Talking and swearing in the churchyard.

## CCCXCVII.

*Westemersey.*—Certifinge youe yt the vicar haith not shewede his parishioners the worde of God accordinge to the statute, and moreover we have but one prest where we shulde have twayne, and often tymes none, for because he give so litill wages y<sup>t</sup> there can no man lyve, and so the parishioners is not servyd, and the Kynge lose[s] his right. \* \* —f. 57.

Not showing the parishioners the word of God.

## CCCXCVIII.

Decimo Octobris anno supradicto, coram officiali antedicto, in domo honeste mulieris Ravyn, prope ecclesiam de Witham moram trahente.

Provision to be made for child, if a child be born.

Katherine Baddowe sworne and examinede, saith be the vertue of her othe, y<sup>t</sup> she did dwelle w<sup>t</sup> Thomas Hardinge of Witham iii yeres and iii quarters [etc.] \* \* [Dominus] injunxit eidem ut sequitur—That he shall finde the childe, if she be w<sup>t</sup> childe, and make the yonge woman a honest mends, at the discretion of Mr. Officiall of Colc. for the tyme beinge; and also goo iii Sondaies abowte the churche, w<sup>t</sup> a candill of ii*d*. pryce, and declare the cause why he haith done it [etc.].—f. 57.

## CCCXCIX.

[17 Dec. 1544.]

Carrying off a child, and having it christened elsewhere.

The presentment of Leirmarney.

Sir Robert Radcliffe, the parson, Sir Hugh Hulley, the curat, John Moot and Edward Longe, the chirche wardens, Robert Cammoke, Thomas Stede, Ric. Cammoke, questmen. We, the above-namede chirchewardens and questmen, do present one John Turnor, the yonger, dwellinge in the same parishe, beinge a married man, sainge that he doth occupie, use, and kepe one Maistres Katerine Reidon, late wife of Christofer Reydon, widow, and haith had by hir a child; and the said Kateryne Reydon was preveyley delyvered of her child in the foresaid parishe of Leyrmarney; and the child, without any knowlege other to the parson or the parishe prest, taken and caryed away by night, beinge unchristened, by too women; of whome the mydwife was the one, unto a place callid Wrabnes, xvii myles from Leirmarney, or there abouts; where they caused the child to be christened: and this is openlie knowen; and moreover the said John Turnor, the yonger, hanteth, and useth still, the foresaid woman, against all the parishoners myndes and willes, and also against the lawes of God. \* \* \* —f. 62.

LIBER ACTORUM in Consistorio Episcopali London, tempore Reverendi Patris domini EDMUNDI BONERI, London Episcopi.\*

In Termino Fidis, anno Domini millessimo quingentesimo quadragésimo, regnique illustrissimi in Christo principis et domini nostri Henrici Octavi [etc.] tricesimo secundo.

## CCCC.

Tercio Fidis ix<sup>o</sup> viz. die mensis Octobris anno Domini predicto, in loco Consistoriali Episcopali London in ecclesia Cathedrali Sancti Pauli; scilicet coram Venerabili viro Magistro HENRICO COLE juris Doctore officiali [etc.]—f. 1.

*Officium Domini motum contra Johannem Petyte.*—Notatur officio domini, fama publica referente, quod violavit diem Dominicam; viz. vendendo libros, tempore concionis, apud Crucem Sancti Pauli. Comparuit et fatebatur articulum objectum, et submitit se correctioni domini: unde dominus monuit eundem, ne de cetero violaret Dominicam etc., sub pena juris, et sic dimisit eundem pro hac vice.—f. 3.

Selling books  
on Sunday.

## CCCCI.

Tercio perpetue felicitatis x<sup>o</sup> Marcii 154[0].

*O. D. promotum per M. Smyth et Devynsheir gardianos ecclesie Sancti Olavi, contra dominum Willielmum Barton.*

Absence of  
priest from  
service.

\* \* \* Dictus dominus Willielmus Barton absens fuit a divinis officiis, in dicta ecclesia, viz. frome lawdes, making of holy water, procession, and all hygh mas; and

\* The following note is entered on the last written page of this book:—

Nota quod dicto iii<sup>o</sup> die Aprilis, 1545, viz. die Parascepes tempore divini officii quidam pauper scolaris Universitatis Cantabrigie, furtive cepit hunc librum a domo mei predicti Roberti Johnson [Registrarii], tunc interessentis divinis officiis; et non habui aliquam de eodem libro noticiam, usque ad diem Sabbati xix<sup>m</sup> viz. diem Septembris anno 1556.



that by reason of his absence the lawds wer said and not song. \* \* \* Dominus ad petitionem eundem assignavit ad audiendam voluntatem suam super confessionem hujusmodi iii<sup>to</sup> Gregorii.—f. 47 b.

## CCCCII.

iiii<sup>to</sup> Marci, A.D. 1541.

Eating flesh on  
the vigil of the  
Nativity of our  
Lady.

*O. D. contra Thomam Gage [de Cressing].*—Idem dominus vicarius generalis objecit eidem Thome, personaliter presenti, quod est detectus officio suo, fama publica referente, that upon our Lady even the nativitie last paste, in the house of the said Thomas Gage, the same Thomas and Matilda hys wyff, w<sup>t</sup> their servautes, dydd eate flesshe wettyngly and contemptuously; an[d] to the yll example of other people; et oneravit eundem Thomam juramento corporali, de fideliter respondendo articulo hujusmodi objecto etc. Deinde examinatus in vim juramenti sui super articulis hujusmodi, respondet et fatetur, that upon the vygyl or eve of the Nativitie of our Lady last past, this respondent and the said Mawde his wiff, with his servaunts and certeyn other personnes to the numbre in thole of xiiii or xv, which wrought w<sup>t</sup> hym the same day in harvest worke, thynkyng and supposyng the same vygyll or eve not to bee a fastyng day; and upon no contempte or wylfulnes, as he saith, dydd eate flesshe-meate, both at brekefast and at dynner: and that after dynner the same day, this respondent, his wife, and other the personnes aforesaid, being informed that it was a fastyng day, dydd abstayne from eatyng eny more flesh that day; and dydd take no other refection all that day and nyght after, but oonly breade and drynke, as he saith: and further, he saith that he, this respondent, at the tyme of eatyng the said flesshe-meate, dydd know the same day to be our Ladyes Eve; but whether he ought then to have forbourne flesshe, by commandement and usage of the Church or not, he dyd not then knowe, as he saith. [*Monition to appear again.*]—f. 124.

[27 Apr. 1542.]

Penance there-  
on.

Comparuit personaliter dictus Thomas Gage, et submitit se correctioni domini etc.: et tunc dominus injunxit eidem,

quod die Dominica ad septimanam, tempore offertorii alte misse, offeret unum cereum ponderis unius libre, sacramento altaris, et finito offertorio, declarabit populo ad hostium chori in medio ecclesie causam penitencie, viz. eo quod vescebatur esubus carnalibus vigilia Nativitatis beate Marie ultimo elapsa, et quod jejunabit pane et aqua tantum, duobus diebus Veneris proximis [etc.]—f. 135.

## CCCCIII.

[6 May.]

*O. D. contra dominum Edmundum Trevell, parochie Sancti Anthonini.*—Comparuit dictus dominus Edmundus veste seculari et indecenti ut apparuit indutus; quem dominus monuit quod de cetero induat se, et incedat veste clericali et decenti etc. sub pena suspensionis a celebratione divinatorum, infra diocesim et jurisdictionem London.—f. 137.

Wearing secular vest.

## CCCCIV.

[13 May.]

*Colchurche. O. D. contra dominum Willielmum Bull, curatum ibidem.*— \* \* \* Dominus monuit eundem ne de cetero ministret aliquod sacramentum verbis vulgaribus, set juxta morem et consuetudinem ecclesie Anglicane, hactenus usitatum, donec et quousque aliter statutum et ordinatum fuerit, auctoritate domini nostri Regis, et monuit eundem ad comparendum personaliter iii<sup>to</sup> Corporis Christi [etc.]—f. 142 b.

De ministracione sacramenti vulgaribus verbis.

## CCCCV.

[21 June.]

*O. D. promotum per Ricardum Harvy et Robertum Marshall de Kelvedon, contra Edmundum Stretcham.*—Comparuerunt personaliter dicti Ricardus Harvy et Robertus Marshall, et detigerunt et denunciarunt dictum dominum Edmundum Stretcham, jam personaliter presentem, de heretica pravitare; asserentes et affirmantes, quod idem dominus Edmundus, die Sancti Georgii ultimo elapso, in domo Johannis Beacham, infra dictam parochiam de Kelvedon, cum idem Ricardus Harvy commendaret sermonem, eodem

Controversy between a vicar and his parishioners concerning the Gospel.

die in ecclesia ibidem antea factum, dixit et respondebat ut sequitur; If the precher doo preache soo ageyn, I wyll bydd hym come owte of my pulpyt, as goode as yf meanyng the said sermon, and then the said Richard replyeing to hym agayn, sayd:—Why maister vicar he preached nothyng but the Gospell, and by the Gospell I truste to be savyd; and then [the] said Sr. Edmund made awnswer saing, —Truste thowe well to the Gospell, and thow shalt goo to the devyll; for I cannott see by noo poynt of my learnyng, but that the fayth shalbe taken frome us, and gyven to the Jewys; for wee bee the Gentylls, and the children of unpromyse, and they bee the children of Israell, and children of promysse: to whiche nowghty and hereticall sainges the said Robert Marshall, heryng the same made, aunsweryd saing,—Maister vicar, ye bee ferr wyde, for by the Gospell and the merites of Christes passion, and by his bloude-shedyng, wee all shalbe savyd; the said Sir Edmund making aunswer and saing,—Truste well to yt, and ye shall goo to the devyll: presentibus tunc ibidem, ac premissa videntibus et audientibus dictis Ricardo Harvy et Roberto Marshall [et diversis aliis].

[*They enter into bond to appear before the justices “ad inquirendum super vi. articulos.”*—f. 154 b.

## CCCCVI.

[16 Jan.]

Exhibition of  
letters of  
orders.

*O. D. contra Thomam Cappe.*—Monitus est Capp ad exhibendum litteras ordinum suorum ut prius. Comparuit dictus Capp \* \* \* et deinde juratus per dominum de fideliter respondendo certis articulis, sibi a domino tunc interrogandis, concernentibus collacionem ordinum suorum, et presertim ordinis presbiteri; fatebatur publice in judicio, that upon vi or vii yers past, he was ordrede and made preeste; in a certeyn chambre within the precincte of the late Awstyn Fryers, of the towne of Boston, by a religiose man, being a suffragane, as he saith, and their at that tyme inhabityng; in whiche chambre he saith, that at the gyvyng of the said orders, their was no notary or scribe present to record the same, so ferr

as he the same Cappe doth knowe, or nowe remembre, as he saith: and he saith also that diverse other dydd then and their take and receyve ordres; but what they wer he cannot tell, nor knoweth their names, as he saith. Et dominus monuit eundem ne recedat ante iudicium solutum, absque licentia. Et deinde dominus monuit eundem ad comparendum, inter horas 2 et 3 post meridiem hujus diei.

\* \* Comparuit coram dicto M. Crooke idem Cappe, et interrogatus, respondebat et fatebatur, that he dydd not knowe eny personnes that wer present at the gyvyng of ordres, by the said suffragyn before by hym this day mencyonyd; and further, he saith that he dydd not knowe the said suffragyn. Quo facto, dominus monuit eundem, ut introducat litteras testimoniales, seu aliud testimonium sufficiens, super collacionem ordinum subdiaconi et diaconi, citra <sup>iiii</sup><sup>m</sup> Cinerum, vel in eo, et super collacionem ordinis presbiteratus, ultima sessione generali proximi termini.—f. 205 and 205 b.

[10 February.]

Quo die comparuit Cappe, et quia nullas exhibuit litteras testimoniales, nec aliquod aliud testimonium, super ordinationem suam, in subdiaconum et diaconum, juxta monitionem et assignationem aliter sibi per dominum, monuit et inhibuit eidem ne de cetero celebret missam infra jurisdictionem domini episcopi London, donec et quousque legitime probaverit, coram domino episcopo, vel ejus vicario generali, aut commissario in hac parte, de ordinatione sua hujusmodi sub pena juris.—f. 213 b.

Inhibition  
thereon.

CCCCVII.

[6 March.]

*O. D. contra dominum Willielmum Rede, curatum Omnium Sanctorum, in Honylane, London.*—Quo die comparuit dictus dominus Willielmus Rede, et fatebatur publice in iudicio se et alios, cantantes in choro dicte parochie etc., cantasse die Dominica ultima elapsa, hora octava de mane, psalmum *Te Deum laudamus*, in vulgari lingua, in ipsa ecclesia;

On chanting  
*Te Deum* in the  
vulgar tongue.

et quod eodem die ac die sive festo Purificationis beate Marie ultimo, omisit cantare laudes. Deinde dominus monuit eundem quod de cetero non cantabit dictum psalmum *Te Deum* in lingua Anglicana, et observet solitum ordinem divinorum, diebus Dominicis et festivis, in ecclesia sua parochiali, quemadmodum est jam usitatum et observatum in aliis ecclesiis civitatis London, donec et quousque aliter habuerit in mandatis domini regis vel sui consilii [etc.].—f. 220.

## CCCCVIII.

[14 June, 1543.]

Inhibition.

*O. D. contra Thomam Cade, curatum de Bradwell.*—\* \* \*  
[Dominus] inhibuit eidem ne de cetero divina celebret, seu deserviet curie animarum, infra diocesim et jurisdictionem domini episcopi London, donec et quousque fuerit per ipsum seu auctoritate legitima dicti episcopi licentiatu, sub pena juris; qui quidam dominus Thomas immediate post hujusmodi monitionem, publice dixit et asseruit, hec verba,—If I maye not singe in the dioc[ese] I wyll then fale [fall] to the Shermans occupation again. \* \* \*  
[Dominus] permisit [eum] deservire curie in parochia de Bradwell, non obstantibus monitione et inhibitione suis previis, usque ad terminum Fidis proximum et non ultra.  
\* \* —f. 241.

## CCCCIX.

[4 March.]

Nun's confession of marriage.

*O. D. contra Margaretam Kydman alias Clerke, parochie Sancti Michaelis apud Basing have, civitatis London.*—\* \*  
Comparuit personaliter dicta Margareta ac publice confessa est, quod ipsa nono etatis sue anno, monasterium monialium de Bungaye ordinis Sancti Benedicti in comitatu Suff. Norwicen. diocesis ingressa fuit, ibidemque habitum monialem per sorores ejusdem domus gestari solitum suscepit; quodque in eodem monasterio post duodecimum sue etatis annum completum, et ante xiiii<sup>um</sup> etatis sue annum, votum solempne emisit, atque religionem Sancti Benedicti, juxta statuta et ordinationes ipsius domus professa est, ceteraque

fecit et exercuit que a ceteris monialibus ibidem religionem profitentibus fieri solebant et consueverunt: quodque post professionem et voti emissionem hujusmodi, sicut premititur, factam, per vi annos vel circiter, regulariter vixit in eodem monasterio. Et insuper confessa est quod post premissa, ipsa spiritu maligno seducta, et voti sui immemor, fugiebat a dicto monasterio; et deinde apprehensa per ballivum dicte ville de Bungay, reducta fuit ad idem monasterium, in quo permansit regulariter per annum. Et deinde parentum suorum opera effectum est, ut ipsa non ferens austeritatem dicti monasterii de Bungay, commigravit ab illo monasterio, ad monasterium monialium de Carroo, ordinis Sancti Benedicti, in comitatu Norff. Norwicen. diocesis predicti, ubi similiter per aliquot annos, inter ceteras sorores dicti domus regulariter vixit; et tandem xxviii<sup>um</sup> sue etatis annum attingens coacta, ut dicit, per priorissam ejusdem monasterii, was made there an anchoresse, ut dicit, w<sup>o</sup>ute any solemgne vowe, or any other ceremonyes used in that behalf, and so lyvyd alone there, in a house which before her tyme was edyfied and made for an anchoresse, by the space of xiiii yeres; which was done, as she sayth, against her will, from whense she coulde not be licenced or suffered to departe, for that the bysshoppe of that diocese hadde one key, and the prioress there another. Et ulterius fatebatur quod per totum illud tempus, she was called and namyd of every man and woman, resortyng and comyng unto her, an anchoresse, and so was commonly taken and reputed, bothe in the same monastery and towne of Carro; and contynued there as an anchoresse, untill the dissolution of [the] said monasterye of Carro: Et quod post dissolutionem hujusmodi, viz. circa vii annos jam elapsos Londinum venit, et in parochia Sancti Michaelis apud Basinghawe habitavit; et postquam in dicta parochia per annum integrum et dimidium habitasset, matrimonium cum quodam Johanne Clerke, serviente domino Hawarde, contraxit; dictumque matrimonium, in capella beate Marie de Bartheleem, sine consensu rectoris, aut curati ejusdem parochie Sancti Michaelis, bannis trina vice tempore solempnizationis ejusdem matrimonii editis, et non aliter, et absque dispensatione in ea parte obtenta, solempnizari procuravit;



quodque sacerdoti hujusmodi matrimonium solempnianti  
xxs. pro labore suo in ea parte impensa solvit. Unde  
dominus monuit eandem ad comparendum coram eo, in  
consistorio London [etc.].—f. 285.

CCCCX.

[20 March.]

Curate absent  
from general  
procession to  
see an exe-  
cution.

*O. D. contra dominum Johannem Coyte, curatum ecclesie  
Sancti Martini, in Iremonger lane, civitatis London.*—\* \*  
Comparuit dictus dominus Johannes Coyte, et interrogatus  
a domino fatebatur et confessus est, quod die Veneris sep-  
timo viz. die hujus mensis Marcii, fuit absens a generali  
processione, facta ex mandato consilii domini nostri regis,  
in civitate London, contra monicionem alias sibi factam etc. :  
et quod tempore processioneis hujusmodi, presens fuit in  
publico spectaculo, apud Tybourne, dum quidam transgres-  
sores legis etc. mortem ibidem subierunt etc. Et ulterius  
fatebatur ut sequitur,—that he dyd here noo confessions  
in his paryshe, syns Lente, sayeng that yt greveth hym  
to here confessions, specially whan any person uttereth  
and confesseth unto hym any partycular matter, sounding  
to bawdry or fylthynes. Unde submitit se correctioni  
domini etc. Et tunc dominus injunxit eidem in peniten-  
tiam, quod crastino die, viz. die Veneris, incedat in dicta  
processione generali, una cum aliis presbiteris, absque super-  
pellicio, gestando cereum ardentem in manu sua, tempore  
processioneis hujusmodi ; quo facto dominus ad humilem  
et instantem petitionem ipsius domini Coyte, duxit de-  
liberandum fore super penitentiam hujusmodi sic pera-  
gendam. \* \* \* —f. 291 b.

Hearing con-  
fession.

CCCCXI.

[7 Nov. 1544.]

Particulars of  
contract of  
marriage.

[Elizabetha Bodye parochie Sancti Botulphi extra Alders-  
gate et Johannes Bykerton parochie Sancti Bartholomei  
parvi in Smythfeld contraxerunt matrimonium] per hec  
verba sequentia, vel eis in effectum consimilia ; viz. the said  
John Bykerton havinge the said Elisabeth by the right  
hand, and speakinge to the said Elisabeth Bodye, said,

howe saye yowe Elisabeth, can yowe fynde in your harte to forsake your fryndes and take mee, meaninge to her husbond; and the said Elisabeth conjunctis eorum manibus said yea, and the said John said I am contented, kysse mee on that bargynne, and the said John and Elisabeth therupon kyssed each other. Quodque post tractatam communicationem et contractum hujusmodi, dictus Johannes dyd send a lettre to the said Elisabeth, which was delyvered her by Richard Hawowd, oone of Maister Chidlayes servants, and by hym redde; in the which lettre the said John desired the said Elisabeth to sende hym woorde, whether she were the same wooman she was before, meaninge when the said contracte was made, and the said Elisabeth said to the said Richard, that she was the same wooman still, meaninge that she woold stande and abyde by the same promysse, made to the said John; and at the delyvery of the said lettre, the same Richard delyvered to the same Elisabeth a nutmegge, sayenge, he, meaninge the said John, hath sent youe this token; the which nutmege the said Elisabeth thankfully receyved; and after the premisses, the said John said to the said Elisabeth and other persones then presente, that he woold have the bannes axed between them, whereunto the said Elisabeth agreed, dictusque Johannes se matrimonium cum dicta Elizabetha contraxisse Elizabethæ Chydlay ac in nonnullorum fidedignorum eciam ipsius Elizabeth presentia publice confessus est et recognovit, quodque premissa omnia et singula fuerunt et sunt vera. \* \* \*—f. 343.

---

LIBER ACTORUM in causis correctionum et Reformationum. 1554.

## CCCCXII.

Acta die Sabbati [10 Nov. 1554] in loco consistoriali London, coram M. NICHOLAO HARPESELD, legum doctore, vicario generali, etc.

*Officium domini contra Johannem Rogers nuper vicarium Sancti Sepulcri [et nuper Gardianos dicte ecclesie].*—Notantur Destroying the rood-loft.

officio domini etc. quod ipsi unacum quodam Rogero Woode defuncto, tunc altero gardiano, hujusmodi sua propria auctoritate, et absque consensu, et assensu majoris, et sanioris partis ejusdem parochie, temere destruxerunt, et penitus, ac funditus diripuerunt cruciforium, Anglice the roode lofte in dicta ecclesia [etc.].

Dominus assignavit eis diem Veneris proximum.—f. 2 b.

## CCCCXIII.

Acta die Lune [12 Nov.]

On the real  
presence.

*Officium domini contra Rogerum Ferrour parochie Sancte Brigitte.*—Notatur officio domini quod non credit corpus et sanguinem Christi esse realiter in sacra eucharistia, etc.  
\* \* \* Publice fatebatur in judicio quod credit veritatem dicti sacramenti in verba Domini in Evangelio. [Dominus injunxit ei penitentiam.]—f. 3 b.

## CCCCXIV.

*O. D. contra Thomam Fuste dicte parochie Sancte Brigitte.*—Notatur officio domini quod non credit articulos fidei catholici et presertim veritatem sacramenti euchariste etc.  
\* \* \* publice respondebat et fatebatur in judicio that he beleaveth Christes very body not to be present really and truly in the said sacrament.—f. 4.

## CCCCXV.

Acta in loco cons. [15 Nov. 1554.]

Promise to re-  
store a stone  
for an altar.

*O. D. contra Ricardum Alen, Sancti Martini Ludgate.*—Comparuit et sua sponte promisit se restitutum ecclesie parochiali Sancti Martini, quendam lapidem marmoreum ad usum ut inde fiat altare et quem nuper emit et comparavit a gardianis dicte ecclesie.—f. 6 b.

## CCCCXVI.

Refusal to fol-  
low the cross in  
the procession.

*O. D. contra Stephanum Walden [ejusdem parochie].*—Notatur officio domini in ultima visitatione generali domini episcopi, quod raro venit ad ecclesiam suam parochialem Sancti Martini; presertim diebus Dominicis et festivis, et

cum veniebat, noluit sequi crucem in processione generali dicte parochie. \* \* \* He shall goe in procession w<sup>t</sup> other of the said parish.—f. 7.

## CCCCXVII.

*O. D. contra Margeriam Wolwen, Sancti Martini Ludgate,* Touching the office of mid-wife.  
*obstetricem.*—Comparuit dicta Margeria et allegavit quod fuit admissa ad officium obstetricis, tempore reverendi patris domini Johannis Stokysly, nuper London episcopi. Et tunc dominus monuit eandem ad introducendas xii<sup>eim</sup> vel decem honestas matronas etc., ad testificandum de experientia sua, in hujusmodi officio [etc.].—f. 8.

## CCCCXVIII.

*Officium domini contra Willielmum Hasylwoode, clericum* Witchcraft.  
*parochie de Harnesey.*—Notatur officio domini in visitatione sua generali, quod solet et solebat uti arte magica, seu sortilegio, Anglice wytchecraft, or sorcery, with a seve and a payre of sheeres. \* \* \* Willielmus Hasylwoode publice respondebat et fatebatur That in July was twelve monythe last past, he the same Hasylwood, having then lost his purse, w<sup>th</sup> xiiii grootes in the same, and thereupon remembryng, that he being a chylde, dyd hear his mother declare, that when any man hadd lost anny thing, then they wold use a syve, and a payre of sheeres, to bring to knowledge who hadd the thing lost; and so this examinante upon occasion thereof, dyd take a seve, and a payre of sheeres, and hanged the seve by the poynte of the sheeres, and sayed thees wordes—by Peter and Paule, he hath yt, namyng the partye whom he in that behalf suspected; which thing he never used but ones, and also declared yt to one of his acqueyntaunce. [Penance thereon.].—f. 18 b.

## CCCCXIX.

Acta die Jovis [13 Dec.].

[*St. Mary Magdalen, Old Fish Street.*] *Officium domini* Hanging down their heads at the elevation of the host. Not  
*contra Jacobum Golyver et Aliciam ejus uxorem, dicte parochie.*  
—Notantur officio domini quod pendent capita tempore

suffering his apprentices to sing in the choir, &c.

elevationis sacramenti altaris; and that the same James synnethe [since] the restoryng of the Latten servyce, hath not suffered nor wold suffer his prentyses, & other his servantes, to serve, and sing in the quere; and also that he is a sacramentary, saying that Cryste cannot be at one tyme, bothe in the sacrament, and in heven, for Chryst ys ascended into heven, and therefore dyd call the sacrament an ydoll; and also refuseth to go in procession; and commeth not to the churche; and hath spoken against the ceremonyes, as holly water, holy brede, etc. \* \* \* Dominus monuit eos quod de cetero bene et catholice se gerent, tam in ecclesia, quam in aliis locis. Deinde dominus monuit dictum Jacobum Golyver, quod aliquo die Dominico sive festivo, citra festum Circumcisionis Domini proximum, confiteatur peccata sua, curato dicte ecclesie, et eodem die recipiat ad manus suas sacramentum altaris, absque omni dissimulatione et sinistra opinione in eadem ecclesia [etc.] \* \* \*—f. 22 b.

## CCCCXX.

Acta habita et facta [etc. 17 Dec.]

A married priest, ministering sacraments, frequenting the company of his wife, &c.

*O. D. contra Willielmum Pytts, clericum parochie Sancte Andree Undershaft.*—\* \* \* Dictus Pyttes presbiter uxoratus et non reconciliatus etc., publice ministravit citra coronacionem domine nostre regine, sacramenta ecclesie, etiam sacramenta eucharistie infirmis; et quod jam dudum frequentavit consorcium pretense uxoris immo concubine sue, in diversis et seperatis locis; et etiam frequentavit et usus est locis suspectis, viz. dyssinge howsys, and bowlinge alleyes; and dothe kepe companye w<sup>th</sup> dyverse persones, of suspecte relygyon; and commethe not to the churche, at tymes convenyent; and that he hathe maryed dyverse persones not lawfullye together; and that the cure ys served w<sup>th</sup> a poor and unhable preste, beinge not admytted by the ordynarrye.—f. 25 b.

[His reply to these articles is at folio 27 b.]

## CCCCXXI.

Acta die Marci [19 Dec.]

Contempt of absolution.

*O. D. contra Elizabetham, uxorem Thome Barnett, parochie*

*Sancti Augustini ad Portam.*—Notatur officio domini etc. quod recusat et contempnit recipere absolutionem ad manus sacerdotis [etc.]—f. 29 b.

## CCCCXXII.

*Officium domini contra Stephanum Mylney* [*parochie Sancti Augustini*].—Notatur officio domini etc. quod fovet concubinam sacerdotis in domo sua; Quo die comparuit personaliter dictus Stephanus, cui objecto hujusmodi articulo, idem Stephanus publice fatebatur, that he hathe comyng and goyng to his house his own naturall syster, which some tyme was marryed to a priest: and that he doth for charytie healpe and succour hir, [and] not in the way of anny evill bytwene her and her late husbande. Et tunc dominus desistit ulterius procedere contra eum, sub spe emendationis, et honeste conversationis sue.—f. 30.

Succouring a  
priest's wife.

## CCCCXXIII.

Acta die Veneris [11 January].

*O. D. contra Johannem Kele, dicte parochie Christi.*—Notatur officio That the day he was marryed, he dyd blowe oute the lightes aboute the altar, and wolde suffer no lightes to bourne. Quo die comparuit dictus Kele, cui objecto per dominum dicto articulo eidem Kele, respondendo fatebatur,—That [he] at the tyme of his marryage by chaunce of his breathe dyd blowe owte the tapers at the altare, and that of no contempte, as he said: unde dominus, habito hujusmodi responso, eum dimisit, cum monitione, quod imposterum catholice se gerat.—f. 44.

Blowing the  
lights out at  
the altar.

## CCCCXXIV.

Acta die Martis [15 January].

*O. D. contra Johannem Whetely, parochie Sancti Andree juxta Baynards Castle.*—Notatur officio domini, quod solet legere libros hereticos, in Anglicis, et quod est perversi ac non catholici judicii et opinionis. \* \* \* Dominus monuit eum, quod de cetero non legat aliquos libros hæreticæ pravitatis, ac pie et catholice se gerat, tam in ecclesia sua parochiali, quam in aliis locis.—f. 45 b.

Reading  
heretical books.



## CCCCXXV.

Reading English books  
during mass.

*O. D. contra Richardum Smythe, dicte parochie Sancti Andree.*—Notatur officio domini quod tempore misse, et aliorum divinorum officiorum, solet legere libros Anglicos, in aliorum offensam. Quo die comparuit dictus Smythe, cui objecto per dominum dicto articulo, idem Smythe negavit hujusmodi articulos, et ulterius fatebatur quod quendam librum deliberavit episcopo Cicestren. super quo solet legere, tempore divinorum officiorum, quem librum idem episcopus approbavit. Deinde dominus eum monuit, quod de cetero non legat aliquem librum, nisi precationum, et orationum, tempore divinorum officiorum, sed pie ac devote ibidem se gerat etc.—f. 46 b.

## CCCCXXVI.

Acta die Jovis [17 Jan.]

Lollardy.

*O. D. contra Agnetem Pepper, uxorem Roberti Pepper, parochie Christi prope Newgate.*—Ad se purgandum cum tribus honestis mulieribus vicinis suis super crimine Lollardie, viz. quod comedit carnes diebus prohibitis etc. Comparuit et introduxit sex viros vicinos suos, ut asseruit, et tunc dominus ex certis causis eum moventibus, quia presertim dicta mulier evidebat se penitentem etc. dimisit eandem.—f. 46 b.

## CCCCXXVII.

Acta die Jovis [24 Jan.]

Refusal to attend church  
while the service is in Latin.

*O. D. contra Johannem Worme, parochie Sancti Olavi in Sylver Streete, et Michaellem uxorem Theronimi Lambroose, dicte parochie.*—Notatur officio domini etc. quod nollent accedere ad ecclesiam, dum officia divina ibidem persolvuntur latinis. Quo die comparuit personaliter dictus Worme, cui objecto per dominum dicto articulo, idem Worme publice fatebatur, That he cometh not to the churche, nor his conscience will not suffer hym to come to the same, so long as the serveys [? not] in English, untill he be otherwys persuaded by Scripture.—f. 48 b.

## CCCCXXVIII.

*O. D. domini contra Ellenam Morgan, dicte parochie Sancte Anne.*—Notatur officio domini quod raro accedit ad ecclesiam, et quum ibidem sit, irreverenter se habeat, et recusat osculare pacem, et aquam benedictam recusat accipere. Quo die comparuit personaliter dicta Ellena Morgan, cui objecto per dominum dicto articulo, ipsa Ellena respondebat, et fatebatur hujusmodi articulum, unde dominus monuit eam, quod de cetero accedat ad ecclesiam, et ibidem recipiat aquam benedictam, et panem benedictum, et osculat pacem ac ibidem reverenter et catholice se habeat circa easdem ceremonias, sub pena juris.—f. 50.

## CCCCXXIX.

Acta die Marcurii [30 January, 1554].

[*St. Alphege.*] *O. D. contra Henricum Blakeham dicte parochie.*—Notatur officio domini, quod recusat cantare in ecclesia; eo quod divinum officium ibidem Anglice [?] non] persolvitur. Quo die comparuit personaliter dictus Henricus Blakeham, cui objecto per dominum hujusmodi articulo, idem Henricus dixit, quod in cantando penitus inexpers est, quodque tempore Edwardi sexti solet cantare psalmos in Anglicis, unde dominus eum dimisit.—f. 52 b.

## CCCCXXX.

Die Veneris [8 Feb.]

*O. D. contra Robertum Danby, dicte parochie Sancti Johannis Zachery.*—Notatur officio domini, quod non sinit pueros suos confirmari, palam dicendo, quod nulla infans debet confirmari, antequam respondere potest etc.—f. 60 b.

## CCCCXXXI.

Acta die Mercurii [20 Feb. 1554].

*O. D. contra Georgium Clerke, dicte parochie Omnium Sanctorum.*—Notatur officio, quod tempore Pasche ultimo, dum sacramentum recepit, he laughed at the receaving thereof; sayeing that he received yt for no devocion, but onely for an order. xxii<sup>do</sup> die mensis Februarii comparuit dictus Georgius Clerke, qui examinatus, super contentis

in dicto articulo, respondet, et fatebatur, that at Easter nowe last past, when he shulde have receaved the sacrament, upon occasion that some there presente dyd laughe, this examynate dyd ■ lytle smyle, and shewed a merry countenance; but not for anny thing that he myslyked of the manner of ministering the said sacramente, or dyd, or doth contempne the same, as he saith. Unde dominus monuit eum, quod de cetero se bene et catholice gerat et habeat, tam in ecclesia, quam alibi, sub pena juris etc.—f. 63 b.

## CCCCXXXII.

Maintainers of false and heretical doctrine.

*O. D. contra Anthonium Anthony [et alios] parochie Sancti Botulphi.*—Notantur officio domini, that they be manteyners of false and hereticall doctryne, and hathe brought and procured forsheley person and ministres to serve the cure, and preache, and mainteyne hereticall doctrynes. Quo die comparuerunt personaliter dicti Anthonye, et alii qui examinati super hujusmodi articulo, respondebant et fatebantur, that before the Quenes reigne that nowe ys, they were mainteyners and favorers of suche doctryne, as then was putt forth, but not syns. Et tunc dominus monuit eos, ut de cetero, se bene et catholice se gerent etc.—f. 64 b.

## CCCCXXXIII.

[15 May, 1555.]

On receiving ashes; also the pope's pardon.

*O. D. contra Robertum Bocher.*—\* \* \* Dominus ministravit articulos in scriptis. \* \* \*

Ad <sup>iiii</sup><sup>um</sup> [articulum] he saith that he dydd not receyve asshes the said Ashe-Wednesday in any place; and saith that the same day he was w<sup>t</sup> my lord bisshopp of London, here at his house in London, upon hys Lordships comandement; and saith that he upon Ester eve last past, was confessed, and receyved the blissed sacramente, in the Queenes chapell, by oone S<sup>r</sup> Robert Paternoster preist, oone of hir graces chapell.

Ad <sup>v</sup><sup>um</sup> fatetur thhat he dydd accepte and receyve the Popes pardon, and was reconciled to the unitie of the church, by the said S<sup>r</sup> Robert Paternoster, upon the said Easter eve; whoo then shewed hym the said pardon, as he sayth.—f. 67 b & 68.

LIBER SECUNDUS ACTORUM et Detectionum in  
visitatione domini Archidiaconi London.

CCCCXXXIV.

xxii die mensis Augusti 1562 in edibus domini et coram  
eo [viz. JOHANNE ORPHINSTRANGE, Legum Doctore,  
officiali].

*Ward contra Tynsley.*—Quibus die et loco Clarke exhibuit Application for writ de excom-  
mandatum originale, unacum certificatorio in dorso ejusdem, municato ca-  
et allegavit dictam Tynsley fuisse et esse auctoritate hujus piendo.  
curie excommunicatam, et pro sic excommunicata palam  
et publice denunciata, quodque in hujusmodi excom-  
municationis sententiam per quadraginta dies et ultra  
animo pertinaciter indurato, auctoritatem hujus curie con-  
tempnendo perseveravit, prout ex dicto certificatorio ex-  
hibito continetur. Unde dominus ad ejus petitionem de-  
crevit scribendum fore regie majestati pro corporis capcione  
ipsius Tynsley.—f. 47.

v<sup>to</sup> die mensis Septembris, 1562.

*Ward contra Tynsley.*—Quo die facta fide per dictam  
Tynsley de parendo juri etc. ac solutis xxiii.s. in manibus  
M<sup>ri</sup> Clerke pro expensis contumacie dominus absolvit etc.  
et decrevit scribendum fore regie majestati pro corporis  
deliberacione dicte Tynsley. Tunc dominus injunxit eidem  
penitentiam sequentem viz. that she shall on Sondag nexte  
before Alhollantyde next ecommynge, do open penance and  
aske forgyvenes [of] Agnes Ward for the slaunder lytigious  
in the paryshe churche of St. Botulphes w<sup>out</sup> Aldresgate  
[etc.]—f. 52 b.

CCCCXXXV.

Die Martis [22 September].

*Officium domini contra Ricardum Hollyday et Margeriam ejus* Marrying his  
*uxorem, Sancti Thome Apostoli.*—Comparuit personaliter dic- uncle's wife.

tus Richardus, cui dominus objecit, fama publica id referente, that he hathe marryed the wyef of his uncle, quem quidem articulum, sic ei objectum, fatebatur, et mulier presens asseruit. Unde dominus monuit partes predictas ad comparandum in proximum, ad dicendam causam quare non deberent separari etc.—f. 59.

## CCCCXXXVI.

Quinto Blasii [8 February].

Excommuni-  
cation for scan-  
dalous beha-  
viour in court.

*Contra Johannem Wood, Sancti Benedicti, Pawles Wharfe.*—  
Quibus die et loco dominus eoquod dictus Johannes Awood male et irreverenter se gessit erga eum sedentem pro tribunali in iudicio, non solum verbis inhonestissimis et scandalosissimis, verum etiam maximis juramentis et maledictionibus, pronunciavit eum contumacem, et in pena etc. excommunicavit eum, prout in schedula.—f. 87 b.

## CCCCXXXVII.

Quarto Gregorii die Jovis [17 March].

Not receiving  
the commun-  
ion, not being  
able to say the  
ten command-  
ments.

*Contra Robertum Browninge et ejus uxorem.*—\* \* \*  
[Dominus objecit eis quod] non receperunt eucharistiam tempore Pasche ultimo, et fatebantur, et dictus Robertus allegavit quod rector predictus noluit permittere eum recipere, eo quod non potuit recitare x<sup>em</sup> mandata: unde dominus monuit eum non recipiat antequam potuit recitare etc. Deinde dominus monuit eos ad recipiendum in festo Pasche proximo.—f. 103 b.

## CCCCXXXVIII.

xxvi<sup>to</sup> die mensis Marcii anno 1563 in ecclesia Sancti Martini coram Magistro JOHANNES MULLENS Archidiacono London.

Solemnizing  
marriage with-  
out the com-  
munion, &c.

*Officium domini contra dominum Thomam Whythers clericum, rectorem ecclesie parochialis Sancti Martini Orgar, civitatis et archidiaconatus London.*—\* \* \* Quibus die et loco comparuit personaliter dictus Thomas Whythers, cui dominus objecit, quod bannis non editis ut moris est prius publice editis, ac extra ecclesiam parochialem con-

trahentium, contra leges ac absque communione prophanavit matrimonium, inter Ricardum Whystowe et Aliciam Collyns, in presentia dicti Whythers, confitentis se solemnizasse matrimonium inter partes predictas, in ecclesia parochiali Sancti Martini Orgar, civitatis London, ubi ipse rector existit, unica bannorum vice editâ, tempore solemnizacionis hujusmodi matrimonii, absque communione; quod quidem matrimonium, sic ut prefertur, inter partes predictas, ut asseruit, solemnizavit vigore cujusdam dispensacionis legitimæ reverendi patris domini London episcopi, sibi in ea parte concessæ, penes archidiaconum remanentis; quam quidem confessionem idem archidiaconus acceptavit; et injunxit dicto Whythers, quod ipse die Dominico proximo, publice tempore recitacionis et lecture evangelii, recitet quandam declaracionem, in quadam papiri scedula descriptam. \* \* \*—f. 105 b.

---

CURIA tenta in capella de BRENTWOODE die Martis viz. ii<sup>do</sup> die mensis Julii anno 1566, coram domino THOMA COLE, archidiacono Essexie.

CCCCXXXIX.

*Officium domini contra rectorem de West Horndon.*—De-  
tectus quia non habuit sermones juxta ordinem injunctionis dominæ nostræ reginæ et multis aliis causis, ut patet in detectione gardianorum. Not having sermons.

CCCCXL.

4 July, 1566.

*Contra Aliciam Gardiner de Boram.*—Detecta for that she gave counsell to one masons wief of Boram who was a wiche, that she shulde confesse nothinge, for yf thow dust, thow wolt dyve for hit; and thowe wilt turne thy neighbour to trouble. \* \* Dominus monuit eam ad purgandum se iii<sup>i</sup><sup>a</sup> manu vicinorum.—f. 16. Counselling not to confess.



## CCCCXLI.

Acta habita facta et determinata in curia visitationis coram Magistro THOMA COLE, sacre Theologie doctore, in capella de Rumforde [23 Sept. 1566].

Divorce because of the quarrelsome life of the parties.

*Contra Alborowghe et uxorem ejus de Danberye.*—Quia turbant vicinos cum lite eorum: quo die comparet Alborowghe et dicit quod uxor sua non vult venire ad lectum suum, unde accepit aquam et ejecit id super capud suum, ad quam allegacionem uxor dicit ut sequitur, viz., that her howsbande hathe often tyemys ben abroode a nyghts & daies, spendinge awaye his thryefft, & when he comythe whome, he abusithe her & beatythe her; and further she saieth that this same daye, he saieth that yf she woulde tell anie thinge againste him to the judge, he sayed he woulde keape her with steallts, and whereas he hathe geven her meate & dryencke, he wyll geave her water & bread: et quia quod supra juramento uxor dothe saye that her howsbande dyd put a knyeff to her throte & a halter abought her knecke. Unde dominus ex causis eum moventibus, et ad petitionem uxoris . . . . quod metuit vitam, in that he saiethe often to her that yf [it were not for] the Quenes lawes, he woulde do otherwyese w<sup>th</sup> her, divorsiavit illam a thoro et mensa, donec etc. Et dominus in plena curia publicavit sententiam divorsarii et petiit M<sup>rm</sup> Emerye de eadem to take the goods the one hallfe to her untill they do better agree.—f. 62 b, & 63.

Division of goods.

## CCCCXLII.

Curia tenta apud Rayley [7 Sept.]

Healing by prayers.

*Contra Margeriam Skelton, de Wakeryng parva.*—Suspecta est esse artium sorserie, super quibus dominus examinavit eam super evangelia, viz. in hec verba;—Whether she ever used to hele any of her neighbours that were sycke or deseased, other [either] women or children, and she sayde she hathe, w<sup>th</sup> prayinge of her prayers she hath healed vi persones [etc.]—f. 78 b.

## CCCCXLIII.

*Contra gardianum de Hornechurche.*—Because Bushe the churchwardene did bringe into the churche certeyn playe[rs] the which did playe and declare certayn things against the ministers. Comparuit et monitus ad subeundam examinationem etc.—Between f. 83 b, & 84. Having players in the church.

## CCCCXLIV.

Curia tenta in capella de Brentwood [2 Dec. 1566.]

*Contra vicarium de Southebemffitt.*—Because he dothe not observe the injunxions & will not minister in a surples, & came to the house of Henry Wood w<sup>th</sup> his bowe and arowes to seke for the said Wood.—f. 86. Irregularities in the service.

## CCCCXLV.

[23 Nov. 1566.]

*Contra curatum de Theydon Garnon.*—Quia non fecit suam diligentiam in dicendo preces, viz. the communion and Latany. Idem.

## CCCCXLVI.

*Contra Firmarium de Alta Laver.*—Detectus because the parson hathe not put the parishioners in remembraunce to lerne the cathakesim. \* \*—f. 94 b. Idem.

## CCCCXLVII.

*Contra vicarium de North Wilde.*—Quia desunt sermones juxta injunctiones domine nostre regine, ac quia dicebat se confabulasse cum domino archidiacono, articulos principales concernentes, et quod noluit eosdem legere. \* \* —f. 95 b. Idem.

## CCCCXLVIII.

Curia tenta apud Baddowe v<sup>o</sup> Decembris, 1566.

*Contra Thomam Arter, de Baddowe Magna.*—Because he will geve but obolum pauperibus. Comparuit dictus Arter, et objecto articulo, he saithe that he is not of the wealthe that men takithe him to be. Unde dominus assignavit eum solvere obolum every wicke, et sic dimisit.—f. 105 b. On giving to the poor.

## CCCCXLIX.

Curia tenta apud Malden, v Decembris 1566.

Refusing to be churchwarden.

*Contra Johannem Trussell de Purleye.*—Because he will not be churchwarden accordinge to the archdeacons judgment, facta fide ac facta preconisatione, dominus exc[ommunicavit eum].—f. 107 b.

## CCCCL.

Curia tenta in capella de Brentwood [29 July, 1567].

Administering the communion with loaf bread and cakes.

*Officium domini contra Johannem Atkynson, rectorem de Nevingdon.*—For mynistryng with lof brede & cakes, to the disturb and unquietnes of the parisheoners. \* \* Fatebatur that he did soo. Unde dominus assignavit et injunxit eum ad penitentiam, viz. die solis proximo, to stand in y<sup>e</sup> pulpet, dum major populi multitudo affuerit, after the reading of the Gospell, & confes his fallt.

## CCCCLI.

Curia tenta in ecclesia de Alta Onger [30 July, 1567]  
coram Magistro ADAMO RICHARDSON, in legibus Bacc.,  
officiali domini archidiaconi Essexie.

On the examining godfathers and godmothers, &amp;c.

*Contra Magistrum Johnson clericum, rectorem de Chignall Marie et Jacobi.*—\* \* For not examining the godfathers and godmothers, \* \* \* & went in the perambulacyon with a surplus: et iterum the parsonage and chauncell is in decay; et pro diversis aliis causis. Dominus monuit ad comparend. coram domino episcopo, infra xx dies prox. sequentes, sub pena juris.

## CCCCLII.

Curia tenta in capella de Rumford [10 Nov.].

Abstraction of money from poor's box.

*Contra Milonem Pendred [et alios] de Upminster.*—Dominus objecit eis for that they toke the mony out of y<sup>e</sup> pores box to maintaine a bastard. Allegaverunt that they borrowed yt. Unde dominus assignavit eis viz. to aknowledge at the next receivynge of ye next communion and to give viii. s. to the pores box that were the doers of it.

## CCCCLIH.

Curia tenta in capella de Rumford [10 May, 1568] coram venerabili viro Magistro THOMA COLE, sacre Theologie doctore, archidiacono Essexie.

*Dorothea Gylbert contra Johannem Bush executorem testamenti Ricardi Gylbert de Horchurch.*—[Dicta Dorothea] allegavit that Rich<sup>d</sup> Gylbert deceasing, gave her a legacye, payable at Mighelmas next, and allowinge her nothinge to kepe her & her iii children, & one other child, being in nomber iiii: in presentia dicti Bush protestantis that he will allowe her nothinge, but pay her legacies at the tyme apoynted. Unde dominus assignavit et injunxit sibi that he kepe & fynd the said Dorothy all kynd of thinges, and her three children, usque in festum Sancti Michaelis proximum, de bonis dicti defuncti.

On the support of legatee till the legacy be due.

## CCCCLIV.

xxiii<sup>o</sup> die Aprilis 1572, in capella de Brentwood, coram WILLIELMO RUST.

*Officium domini contra Johannem Marshall de Danbury.*—For celebratinge devine service without orders. Quo die dominus ad ejus petitionem absolvit eum a sententia excommunicationis etc., et sic restituit etc. Deinde dominus super confessionem suam, in hec verba,—That he hath celebrated devine service, and married, with other seremonies nowe usid. Unde dominus archidiaconus eum injunxit, to confesse his fault, in the parishe where he did serve; and there to stand penitently, at the time of divine service, with a white shete about him, and a white rodd in his hand, on Sundaye next, in partem penitentie sue.—f. 5.

Celebrating service, &c. without orders.

## CCCCLV.

Apud Brentwood, xx<sup>o</sup> Maii.

*Contra rectorem sive sequestratores de parva Warley.*—Detecte the chauncell windowes broken, viz. half a dosen quarells, whereby howletts cumeth in, and is thereby with dunge berayed. [Monition to repair.]—f. 11.

Chancel windowes broken.

## CCCCLVI.

Playing at  
cards and dice.

[*Contra*] *Ricardum Warner [de Southwild]*.—Detectus he commith not to devine service & dothe occupie cardes and disse. \* \* Dominus decrevit eum, to come to his parishe churche duly and orderly, & not to play at cardes or disse, quod ipse Warner in se assumpsit.—f. 12 b.

## CCCCLVII.

Apud Badowe Magna, xxi<sup>o</sup> Maii.

Not giving the  
parson notice  
to attend sick  
person.

*Contra Johannem Woodward de Woddam Ferris*.—Detectus when his wief laye in passaige and so departed this worlde, gave no knowledge to the minister, to com to her & to [have] counselid her, in the time of her sicknes. Comparuit, et objecto articulo, he saith that his wief died so sodaine, of the squinnceiz, that he could not make the parson pryvie; ideo dominus eum dimisit.—f. 17 b.

## CCCCLVIII.

Acta habita et facta in ecclesia parochiali de Alta Ongar,  
xviii<sup>o</sup> Junii, 1572.

Wearing the  
surplice on ro-  
gation days.

*Contra curatum de Stanford Rivers*.—Detectus for that he did were his surplis in the rogacion dayes last past. Comparuit ipse curatus, viz. Johannes Browne, et objecto articulo, fatebatur. Unde dominus eum injunxit confiteri factum in ecclesia parochiali de Stamford Rivers predicta, die Solis proximo, to have usid superstition and poperi, and that he was sorie for the doinge thereof; et dare pauperibus *vid.*—f. 38 b.

## CCCCLIX.

Swearing by  
the masse.

*Contra Willielmum Dowie de Morton*.—Quia juravit per missam. Unde dominus injunxit eum confiteri culpam, coram parochianis, die Solis proximo; and further said that ther was no harme by sweringe by the masse; and therefore to saye that he did amisse in so sayeing, and to request the whole parishioners to take example by him, & that he was sorie therefor.—Ib.

## CCCCLX.

Acta habita et facta in capella de Rumford [14 July, 1572].

*Contra curatum de Leyton.*—Detectus. Comparuit et ob-  
jecto articulo fatetur. Unde dominus eum injunxit to turne  
to the people and then distinctly saye service that they  
maye plainly here him.—f. 49 b.

To turn to the  
people, and say  
the service dis-  
tinctly.

## CCCCLXI.

*Contra Robertum Brownes de eadem.*—Detectus xii<sup>o</sup> die  
Juli, 1572. Quo die comparuit dictus Browne, ac objecto  
ei articulo, per dominum archidiaconum, viz., for that he  
had in his house, certaine that did daunce, in the service  
tyme; quod fatetur, & said that it was a wedinge daye,  
& that he could not rule the youthe. Unde dominus ex  
causis eum moventibus, propter paupertatem dimisit eum,  
et injunxit eum, ut non habeatur hujusmodi culpam  
iterum; quod in se assumpsit.—f. 50.

Having  
dancing during  
service.

## CCCCLXII.

Acta habita et facta in capella de Brentwood [15 July, 1572].

*Contra Gardianos [de West Thorndon].*—Detectus. Sum  
parte of the rode loft standeth. Quo die comparuerunt  
gardiani, et objecto articulo, They say that they have  
taken downe the rode loft accordingle. Unde dominus eos  
dimisit.—f. 54 b.

On the taking  
down of the  
rood loft.

## CCCCLXIII.

*Contra rectorem de Pitsey.*—Detectus. Comparuit et  
objecto articulo, dicit, that he have usid diligently to teach  
the youth, and have bin in the churche at the time ap-  
pointed, and non of the parishe will com thether for that  
purpose, as appeared by certaine of the parishners affirming  
the same. Unde dominus eum dimisit.—f. 57.

The youth do  
not come to be  
taught.

## CCCCLXIV.

*Contra Nicholaum Sutton, de Warley Magna.*— \*  
Dominus injunxit eum penitentiam, to stande in the mar-  
quet place of Brentwood in a whitt sheat, when the people

\* Penance to be  
performed in  
the market  
place.



are most there, with a paper uppon his hed & the detection written in the same; and in lik case in his parish church.—f. 58.b.

## CCCCLXV.

Acta habita et facta in ecclesia parochiali de Baddowe  
Magna [17 July, 1572].

Not to teach  
without license.

*Contra Jacobum Shacklocke de Springfield.*—Detectus.  
\* \* Dominus inhibuit eum ne doceat pueros ulterius antequam licenciam obtineat.—f. 73.

## CCCCLXVI.

Acta ut supra, 2 Oct. 1572.

Alluring persons  
to her house.

*Contra Thomam Nocke et Johannam ejus uxorem, de East Haningfilde.* — Notatur that she dothe lure men to her house, and when she hath them there, she dothe entise them into her chamber, her husband lyenge in the chamber cam downe, puttinge them in feare of their lives, and agreed with them for maulte or money, or what he could gett; and namelie they have used so, Thomas Wardall and Thomas Gilder of Chelmisford. Dominus excommunicavit, in non comparendo, istis die et loco.—f. 146 b.

## CCCCLXVII.

Curia tenta in capella de Brentwood, 10 Dec. 1572.

On reception of  
a pregnant  
woman into his  
house.

*Contra Margaretam Marshall gravidam in domo suo de Ramsdon Bellowes.*—Detecta. Quo die comparuit Richardus Radeley, cui dominus objecit articulum, quod fatetur in hec verba, that he receaved the same Margaret, by the consent not only of the parishioners, but by the letter of Mr. Archdeacon, because she was at her door syceinge, and almost lost for sucker.—f. 184 b.

## CCCCLXVIII.

Curia tenta apud Rumford in capella ibidem, 27 Jan. 1572.

On defacing  
monuments.

*Contra gardianos de Upminster.*—The rode lofte beame, the staieres of the rode loft standinge, the church lackith whittinge to deface the monumentes.—f. 201.

*[The following original letter is pinned to folio 240.]*

To Mr. RUST, offyshall to the Right Worshippfull Doctor  
WALKER, Tharchdecon of Essex, yeve theis.

Salutem in Domino, this is for to lett youre worshippe understand, y<sup>t</sup> Jesper Anderkyn who was our churchwarden, hathe done nothing of that which he was apointed by your worshipp, at Mydsomer to do; for the church yarde lyethe to commons, and all other thynkes in the church is ondonne. But that Mr. Harrys dyd beye the byble, we shuld have had nothynke done. A man so negligent in his offyce I never knew non, beyng so muche c . . . . as he hathe byen. I praye you dele w<sup>t</sup> hym so y<sup>t</sup> he maye be a presydent for them that shall have the offyce; for they wyll but jess att itt, and saye it is butt a mony matter: therefore lett them paye well for the penaltie whiche was sett on their heads. The cause whye I do wrytt thus unto youre worshipp is, that you be not abewseid in youre office, by there muche intreatyng for themselves; for Jesper Anderkyn stands excommunicated. And there is one William Peniton, who was one of the sworne men, & now is chosen to be the churchwarden, & he hath allso negligentlie forgotten his outhe; for whereas he shulde have looked for the commyng of others, hymselffe was absent y<sup>e</sup> . . of June, y<sup>e</sup> 6 daye of Julie, & y<sup>e</sup> 13 daye of Julie, & y<sup>e</sup> 20 daye of Julie, & goyng out of y<sup>e</sup> church att mydservis ydle well aproved: and 25 daye of Julie w<sup>ch</sup> was St. James day, & y<sup>e</sup> 27 daye of Julie, & many other tymes y<sup>t</sup> I have not so well noted, because it belonged to the churchwardon & y<sup>e</sup> swornemen. And thus muche I have geven youre worshippe to understand, y<sup>t</sup> you may y<sup>e</sup> better exxamen them when the partys come before youre worshipp. I praye you, learne Painton the waye to the church, for he is a young man, and sharpelie rebucke hym, & he wyll be a presydent for others.

By me, JOHN MATHER.

LIBER ACTORUM in annis Domini 1574 et 1575,  
in . . . .

CCCCCLXIX.

Curia tenta in capella de Brentwode [26 April, 1574].

Not fulfilling a  
will.

Officium domini contra Agnetem Happyng viduam et  
relictam Georgii Happyng nuper dum vixit de Ingrave.  
Est excommunicata in non exceptando vel refutando onus  
executionis testamenti dicti defuncti. \* \* \*  
[*Absolution sought and obtained.*].—f. 21.

CCCCCLXX.

Curia tenta in ecclesia parochiali de Rayley [7 Sept.]

Divers trum-  
perry for plays  
in the church.

*O. D. contra Egidium Cavand et Willielmum Edgit gardia-  
nos de Rayley.*—Comparuerunt, et dominus objecit, that there  
remayneth diverse of tromperie for to paynted stuff for  
playes in the chefe parte of the church; viz. in the upper  
ende of the church: fassi sunt. Et dominus monuit eos  
that they shall remove the same, citra proximum Mich.—  
f. 69 b.

CCCCCLXXI.

Eodem die.

Irregularities.

*O. D. contra Magistrum Boreman, rectorem de Fyfeld.*—  
Detectum, that he is given to dronckenes. He will not  
church child-wieffes as accordinge to the forme prescribed  
him; he neglecteth the homilies; the chancell is in greate  
decaye; he married a yonge cople, beinge strangers, w<sup>th</sup>oute  
license, unknownen to the parishe.—f. 71.

CCCCCLXXII.

Curia tenta in ecclesia de Horndon [8 Sept.]

Serving a writ  
in service time.

*O. D. contra Johannem Umfrey de Shenfeld.*—[Compurga-  
tors produced to prove his innocence] savinge he confesseth  
that there was a bayley served a wrighte upon Easter daie  
upon Mr. Done the parson, which write was taken owte

at the sute of this respondent, but the bayley served it one that daie withoute his consente or knowledge.—f. 74.

## CCCCLXXIII.

Curia tenta in capella de Billarikey [30 Oct.]

*O. D. contra Johannem Allen de Leighe.*—Detectum, that she came to Widowe Jackson a wiche for counsell, as the talke goeth. Comparuit et fassa est, that she did make a lye, that she was with a coninge woman. Dominus indixit ei, that upon Allhalland daie nexte, she shall confesse her falte.—f. 98 b.

## CCCCLXXIV.

Curia tenta in ecclesia de Badowe Magna [22 Nov.]

*O. D. contra Johannem Browne de Rayley.*—Detectum, that he hath torned awaie his wief, sayinge that she is not his wief. Fassus est that he torned her awaie, for that she wold not be ruled. Dominus monuit eum quod recipiat uxorem suam et eam maritali affectione tractandam.—f. 104.

## CCCCLXXV.

Curia tenta in capella de Brentwod [23 Nov.]

*Arthurus Dixson contra Elenam Cordie.*— \* \* \* Diffamation. Fassa est that she willed the same Arthure Dixson to take a sawe and to sawe off his hornes, which she ment thereby, that his wieff was not an honest woman, etc. \* \* Dominus condemnit eam in expensis.—f. 109.

## CCCCLXXVI.

Curia tenta in ecclesia de Burntwood [19 April, 1575].

[*Fobbinge.*] *O. D. contra Laurencium Boyden dicte parrochie.*—Detectum, that he wrighteth scoffinge & uncomely rimes in the church. Comparuit Johannes Boyden, pater dicti Laurentii, et assumpsit in se ad puniendum suum filium verberibus, in ecclesia predicta, coram gardianis et parochianis die Dominica proximo.—f. 158 b.

## CCCCCLXXVII.

Curia tenta in capella de Burntwood [19 May].

Incontinence. [Hutton.] *O. D. contra Johannem Browne dicte parochie.*—  
Detectum quod carnaliter cognovit Agnetem Nott. \* \*  
—f. 187 b.

## CCCCCLXXVIII.

Curia tenta in capella de Billerica [6 Dec. 1576].

Non-resident, *O. D. contra Johannem Becham rectorem de Springfield*  
and not letting *Boswell.*—Detectum, that he is not resident upon his bene-  
his benefice to *fice,* nether letteth it to a sufficient curate.—f. 243 b.  
a sufficient cu-  
rate.

## CCCCCLXXIX.

Curia tenta in ecclesia parochiali de Prittwell [30 March, 1577].

The parishion- *O. D. contra gardianos Sancti Petri de Maldon.*—Com-  
ers to be placed paruerunt dicti gardiani et dominus de et cum consensu  
according to gardianorum parochie Omnium Sanctorum de Maldon, did  
their degrees. order and decre, that the churchwardens of St. Peters shold  
cause and procure the parishners there, to repaire orderly  
to the parishe church of All Saintes, one Sondaies and  
hollidaies, as the parishners of All Saintes; and that the  
churchwardens of either parishe, shold joyne together in  
all matters and causes whatsoever, and everie parishner  
to be plased accordinge to his degree; the churchwardens  
of either parishe agreed to the order.—f. 280.

## CCCCCLXXX.

In capella de Romforde [22 April, 1577].

Having plays *O. D. contra Vincentium Harcotts et Willielmum Rookes*  
in the church. *nuper gardianos de Westham.*—Excommunicati sunt in non  
compendo etc. Comparuerunt, et facta per eos fide etc.  
dominus absolvit et restituit eos etc. Et tunc dominus  
eis objecit, that whilst theie were theire churchwardens,  
theie suffered and caused in Lent last past ii sonderie  
holladaies, there was ii playes kepte in the church, by comon

players; the one upon the Sondaie before our Ladie, and the other one our Ladaie daie laste paste; and the people were suffered to stand upon the communion table, diverse of them. The same Vincente Hancottes and William Rokes confessed the same to be true; addinge, that the same playes were suffered, for that theie had a poore man in decay, and had some relef of the same players, to the use of the same poore man. Dominus acceptavit eorum confessiones. The same William Rookes affirmed, that he comminge into the church, perseved that the players went about to playe, he speakinge to them declared that he wold not give his consent, [and] that theie shold not play there, and he wold not be blamed for them; but he taried & heard the play, & therein he consented to the play. Dominus eis injunxit that upon Sondaie nexte in service tyme, they shall confesse that theie are sorie, that theie did suffer the church to be prophaned, and in theire negligence therein, he, the same Vincent to give vs., and William Rookes to give iis. vid.—f. 283.

## CCCCLXXXI.

Curia tenta in ecclesia parochiali de Woodham Ferris  
[6 Oct. 1575].\*

*O. D. contra Thomam Grove, parochie de Woodham Ferris.*  
—Ad certificandum, that he hath lerned the crede and x commandments et quod recepit eucharistiam.—f. 299 b.

## CCCCLXXXII.

Curia tenta in capella de Rumford [28 Oct. 1575] coram  
venerabili viro Magistro WILLIELMO BINGHAM, legum  
doctore, officiali.

*O. D. contra Aliciam Pache alias Champneis, parochie de Dagenham.*—Est excommunicata for not puttinge in suerties  
for the childrens legacies. Comparuit et dominus absolvit. On sureties for legacies.

## CCCCLXXXIII.

Curia tenta in capella de Billerikey [19 Dec.]

*Contra Marcum Simpson, rectorem de Pitsey.*—Detectum, The people are not edified.

\* There are nine sheets stitched at the end of this book which belong to the years 1575 and 1576.



that he is unsufficient to serve the cure ine that theie are not edified by him. \* \* Dominus eum ext.

[17 Jan.]

Fine to the poor's box for omitting to perform service, &c.

*Contra Marcum Simpson, rectorem de Pitsey.*—\* \* \* Dominus injunxit dicto Simpson that he shall procure <sup>iiii</sup>or sermons in the yeare; as also <sup>iiii</sup> communions, by some learned precher, or prechers, licensed: & for everie Sondag or holiday that his parishioners mise service, by himeselfe, or some curate for hime, he shall give <sup>iiis</sup>. <sup>iiii</sup>d. to the poore mens box; & also that he shall enstructe y<sup>e</sup> children with the Catichisme, accordinge to the injunctions, sub pena juris.

CCCCLXXXIV.

[20 March.]

Certificate of performance of penance for adultery.

*Contra Margaretam Orton nuper infra edes cujusdam Anthonii Bennell, de Barkinge.*—\* \* Exhibuit certificatorium super peractionem penitentie etc. \* \* tenore sequente etc. M<sup>a</sup> that Margaret Orton accordinge to her appointment hathe done her pennance, in the parishe church of Barkinge, in Essex, before y<sup>e</sup> seconde lesson at morninge prayer, upon Sondag the xviii<sup>th</sup> day of March, a<sup>o</sup> 1575; and ther was redd the firste parte of the homilie againste whoredome & adulterie, the people ther present exorted to refraine from soche wickednes, wherby the[y] might incurre the displesure of Almightye God for violating his holy lawe: and she penitent for her offenses etc. \* \* [Dominus] pronunciavit eam esse sufficienter punitam etc.

CCCCLXXXV.

[8 May, 1576.]

The fault of drunkenness, &c., to be confessed before the vicar, churchwardens and six of the chief of the parish.

*Contra Richardum Macham, de Layghton.*—Comparuit, cui dominus objecit quod detectum est officio etc. that he is a dronckard, a swerer and a slaunderer of his neighbors etc. In presentia dicti Machem fatentis, that sometymes he is oversene with drinke; and allso sometymes by provocation he doth use unlawfull othes, for the whiche he confessed himself hartely sorey, and promised amendment.

Dominus acceptavit confessionem, et ei injunxit, in parte of his ponishment, that upon Sondaie beinge the third daie of June nexte cominge, immediatly after morninge praier in the parishe church of Lughton, he shall before the vicare or his curate and the churchwardens, and vi others of the chefe of the parishe, then and there presente, penitently confese his falte; desiringe God and them whom he had offended, to forgive him, promising his amendement; and to give to the use of the poore iis., and to certifie the nexte corte daie followinge, at Romford.

## CCCCLXXXVI.

[14 May.]

*Contra Richardum Mathew de Chigwell.*—Comparuit dictus Mathew et in iuditio fassus est, that by his meanes, the tyth mylke of his kyne, was pored downe in the church porche of Chigwell. Dominus acceptavit confessionem et injunxit ei, that upon Sondaie nexte he shall bringe his morninge mylke of all his kyne that daie to the church porch, and there to give it awaie to the poore of the same parishe; declaringe that he did wikedly in castinge aweie his milke. Et ad certificand. sub manibus vicarii et Gardianorum dicte ecclesie hoc loco in proximo.

Wasting the  
tythe milk.

## CCCCLXXXVII.

[18 May.]

*Contra Johannem Browne et Cicilliam ejus uxorem de Rayley.*—Detectum, that theie lyve slaunderously asonder, not beinge devorsed. Comparuit dictus Johannes Browne et fassus est se solempniasse matrimonium in facie ecclesie de Rayley, circiter ii<sup>os</sup> annos elapsos etc., and that he hath refrayned her companie by the space of half a yere, or verie nere; for that he thincketh she doth not love him. The same Cicelie confessed that her seid husband doth refuse her without cause. Et tunc dominus jussit eum ad recipiendam dictam suam uxorem, eamque maritali affectione tractandam.

Living apart  
from wife.

## CCCCLXXXVIII.

[6 June.]

Monition to  
curate to re-  
main near the  
church.

*Contra Rogerum Nowell curatum de Dengie.*—Comparuit et dominus objecit, that the children be untowghte the Katichisme, for that he remayneth iiii myles from the church. Comparuit et dominus monuit that he shall remayne neare the church.

## CCCCLXXXIX.

[7 June.]

An excommu-  
nicate rector  
administering  
the commu-  
nion, &c.

On purgation.

*Contra Magistrum Bordman rectorem de Fifeilde.*—Detectum, that he being an excommunicate person, taketh upon him to minister y<sup>e</sup> communion; and that the church and chancell is in decaye, and y<sup>t</sup> he readeth not the homylies, nor the latynye. Negavit detectionem quoad eam partem, that he is a comen dronekard and a disquieter of his neighbours. Dominus assignavit ei ad se purgandum vi<sup>ta</sup> manu vicinorum suorum honestorum, hoc in loco, in proximo viz. iiii of the clargie and iiii laymen.

## CCCCXC.

[Eodem die.]

Opinion con-  
cerning an un-  
baptized child.

*Contra Magistrum Browne rectorem de Fobbinge.*—Detectum quod loquutus est verba malitiosa, viz., that a childe before he be baptised, is not the child of God, but the childe of the devell. Facta preconisata et non comparente, dominus eum excommunicavit.

## CCCCXCI.

[Eodem die.]

Ploughing up  
the marks of  
division of the  
parishes.

*Contra Thomam Hawkinn parochie de Bursted parva.*—Detectum, that he hath plowed up a doole, or mere, which is y<sup>e</sup> marke of the division of the parishes, of Dunton and Bursted aforesaid; so that no mencion therof doth remaine for there perambulacion. Dominus decrevit eum citandum fore erga proximum.

## CCCCXCII.

[Eodem die.]

*Contra Thomam Geferye de Wickford.*—Detectum, that

he obstinately refuseth to be churchwarden, notwithstanding he was chosen by the consent of the parson and parishioners. Dominus pronunciavit eum contumacem, ac in pena etc. excommunicavit eum in scriptis prout in schedula.

Refusal of the office of churchwarden.

## CCCCXCIII.

[Eodem die.]

*Contra Magistrum Whitlin de Curringham.*—Detectum \* \* that the devine service is not reverently plainely and distinctlye saide [etc.]

On saying the service.

## CCCCXCIV.

[8 June.]

*Contra Jacobum Hopkinne de Hornchurch.*—\* \* Dictus Jacobus fassus est that he went to Mother Persore, at Navestoke, a conninge woman, to knowe by what me[a]ns his masters cattell was bewytched. Dominus monuit eum ad comparendum in prox.

Consulting a cunning woman.

## CCCCXCV.

[5 July.]

*Contra Painter viduam parochie de Romforde.*—Detectum quod nunquam recepit eucharistiam, and that allwaies when she is exhorted thereunto, she will finde herselfe aggrieved with one thinge or other, and saithe there is a thinge speaketh within her, and tellethe her what she sheulde do. Comparuit et fassa est detectionem [etc.]

Not receiving the eucharist.

## CCCCXCVI.

[Eodem die.]

*Contra Thomam Paidge et Elizabetham Ruggells* [parochie de Romford].—Detectum, that theye do accompany suspiciouslye and ryde together as man and wief, sayeing that they be suer together before God, and yet will not be asked. Dominus pronunciavit eos contumaces [etc.]

Accompanying suspiciously together.

## CCCCXCVII.

[3 August.]

Monition to repair and to produce the register of marriages and deaths.

*Contra Gardianos parochie de Asseldoune.*—Detectum, that the steple liethe halfe unshingled ut apparet in billa. Comparuit et fassus est detectionem. Et dominus monuit ad reparandam ecclesiam citra festum Pasche proximum. Et dominus monuit eum ad introducendum librum registri nuptiarum et defunctorum in prox. apud Badow xiiii Septembris prox.

## CCCCXCVIII.

[12 Sept.]

Sitting at the alehouse.

*Contra Richardum Macham et Willielmum Willkynson parochie de Waltham Stowe.*—Detectum, that theye satt att the alehouse upon Sondaye, videlicet the viii<sup>th</sup> of Julye laste, from six of the clocke in the morninge, untill three of the clocke in the afternoone. Reservatur pena.

## CCCCXCIX.

[Eodem die.]

The minister interrupted in the service by illbehaviour of parishioner.

*Contra Willielmum Rooke de Westham.*—Detectum, that he pulled awaye a mans hatt and threw it from him, and would not suffer him to sitt in his seate, in the tyme of devyne service, but molested him; wherby all the whole parishe was disquieted in the service tyme, and the minister was compelled to stay his service, thoroughe his rudenes w<sup>ch</sup> he sondry tymes hathe, and dothe use, in the church in service tyme. Comparuit et fassus est that upon a certayne Sondaie happeninge in somer laste, he this respondent, in the tyme of divine service, cominge into the parishe church of Westham, and enteringe in his pewe, in which he was plased by the churchwardens; and from tyme his ancesters have there bene plased, he by chaunce did throwe downe the hate of Mr. Shipman, w<sup>ch</sup> honge as he entered into the pewe, and not otherwise; in which pewe the same Mr. Shipman willfully and stobernly entereth and entred, being not there plased by the churchwardens. Et tunc

dominus acceptavit confessionem et quod non constat de probacione etc. Dominus eum dimisit donec et quousque.

## D.

[14 Sept.]

*Contra Johannem Ellis et Willielmum Graunt* [*parochie de East Hangfeilde*].—Detectum, that they beinge churchwardens the last yere, gathered no money of suche persons as were founde absent from the churche, according to office as they ought to have donne. Dominus continuavit causam in statu quo est usque in prox.

---

LIBER ACTORUM in causis correctis in annis Domini  
1576, 1577, 1578.

## DI.

[17 March, 1577.]

*Contra Thomam Gybbes de Westham*.— \* \* [Fatebatur that] upon greate necessitie upon the Sondaie before Christmas last in service tyme, he hewed downe a litle tree & made a bridge thereof; the cause for that he did it the same day was, for that he had a bridge stollen awaye the nighte before; & when the parishners came to church, diverse of them openly complayned, that they cold not saffely come over the bridge, for want thereof.

A work of necessity done on Sunday.

## DII.

[18 March.]

*Contra Nicholaum Colepottes vicarium de Southwilde*.—Detectum, that he seith not the service according to the booke of Common Prayer. Comparuit dictus Colepottes et fassus est, that he omitteth moste parte of the service, accordinge to the booke of Comon Praier, at such tyme as he maketh exposicions of the Gospells & Pistelles, & when there is

Not saying the service according to the booke of Common Prayer.



a sermone, & not otherwise. Et tunc dominus monuit, that hereafter he shall orderly, duely and fully saie the service, accordinge to the booke of Common Praier and injunctions sub pena juris.

## DIII.

[Eodem die.]

Forbidding the  
banns.

*Contra Johannem Worme de Friering.*—Detectum, that he did forbid the banes betweene Edward Browghte and Ane Waighte. Comparuit dictus Worme et fassus est . . . ita factam. Unde dominus dimisit.

## DIV.

[9 April, 1578.]

Usury.

*Contra Marcum Simpson clericum rectorem de Pitsey.*—  
\* \* Dominus objecit quod detectum est offitio, that he is suspected to be a userer. Dictus Simpson fassus est, that he lent owte a litle money, and had iis. of the pound, after the rate of tenne in the hundred; but he did not urge the same, but onely the parties themselves, whome he lent his money to, did of theire owne good will, give him after the same rate; but not by compulcion, he did urge the same. Dominus acceptavit confessionem et in partem penitencie monuit eum, quod die Dominica proximo, in ecclesia de Pitsey, tempore divinorum, he shall openly in service tyme rede the xv<sup>th</sup> Psalm, [et] agnoscat culpam suam et quod tradat ad usum collectorum vs.

## DV.

[10 May, 1578.]

A provoker to  
lewdness.

*Contra Charolum Bandocke de Downham.*—\* \* Detectum, that he is suspected to be an evell and lewde provoker and procurer of women to lewdnes, and whore-dome with him; and namely, the wief of Clarcke, whom he the same Bandocke hath diverse tymes entised to comite the same abhominable facte with him; and he the same Bandocke hath confessed his seid lewde attempte with her, & is vehemently suspected of incontinenzie. \* \*

## DVI.

[13 May.]

*Contra Stephanum Whithed et Katherinam ejus uxorem de Danberie.*—Comparuit; quibus dominus objecit, that she the same Katheren Whithed, upon a certayne Sondaie happeninge a fortynighte before Easter daie next, she came into the church of Danberie, with a kerchief over her hed, to give thankes for her childe beringe, at the sermone tyme, whilest Mr. Doctor Withers was at the sermone, she with a lowde voyce demanded of Mr. Doctor Withers yf he were redie to doe his duetie she was redie to doe hers; whereby she trobled him in his sermone and caused the people to make a lafter etc.: and he the same Stephen Whithed, for his parte, with obstinate wordes, mayntayned his wief in her lewde facte. \* \* \* [*To acknowledge her fault.*]

Woman at-  
tends to return  
thanks; causes  
the people to  
laugh.

## DVII.

[28 May.]

*Contra Arthurum Dente curatum de Danberie.*—Comparuit dictus Arthurus Dente, cui dominus objecit, that he married a cople, aboute a month paste, one a workinge daie, of which cople, the woman was both deafe and dome; and the same cople were married in the afternone of the same daie, very disorderly. Dictus Dente fassus est, that by vertue of a lycense directed from Mr. Doctor Byngham, commisarie to the Bishope of London, he married a cople, whereof the woman was both deafe and dome; but he thoughte that he mighte so doe, by vertue of the same lycense; but he thincketh he hath done amyse, for the which he is hartely sorey. \* \* \* Introduxit licentiam et dominus eum dimisit.

Marrying a  
couple, of  
whom one was  
dumb, by  
license.

## DVIII.

[18 June.]

*Contra Edwardum Chamberlyn et ejus uxorem.*—Dominus objecit, that theie married within the degrees of mariage; viz, that he hath married his wyves brothers daughter.

Marrying with-  
in the degrees  
prohibited.

Dicti Chamberlyn fassi sunt delictionem et asserunt se fuisse legitime licentiatos. [See further proceedings, 19 July.]

## DIX.

[18 July.]

Suspicion of  
papistry.

Monition not  
to expound  
without license.

*Contra Thomam Brayne curatum de Cranham.*—Dominus objecit, that he is suspected of papistrie, and that he allowed the pictures of certayne saintes, and also that he doth preach, beinge unlicensed, & also of smale lerninge. Dictus Brayne fassus est, that sometymes he doth expound upon the Gospelles & Epistilles, et aliter negat, savinge that he did see certayne ymages or picktures, but otherwise he did not regard them. Dominus acceptavit confessionem etc. Et monuit eum quod imposterum, he shall not expound anie parte of the Scriptures, either the Gospels or Epistles, or otherwise to preache without lycense sub pena juris.

## DX.

[19 July.]

To abstain  
from the com-  
pany of his  
wife.

*Contra [supradictum] Edwardum Chamberlyn.*— \* \* Allegavit, that he was licensed to marie by Mr. Chancellor of London. Dominus ei injunxit quod imposterum absteineat a consortio dicte sue pretense uxoris.

## DXI.

[Eodem die.]

Railing on the  
minister, &c.

*Contra Gabrielem Hone [de Danbery].*—Detectum quod non frequentat ecclesiam, & that he rayled one the minister & the sidemen callinge protestants prattlingstantes. Comparuit et fassus est, that he was absent one daie and he reported to the minister that theie were no protestantes but prattlingstantes that doe use to tell lyes. \* \*

## DXII.

[23 April, 1577.]

Giving wicked  
counsel.

*Contra Willielmum Willson, alias Reder de Wodham Ferris.*  
— \* \* Fassus est, that he did wickedly give counsell

to Johan Smith, whoe was gotten with child & never married, to affirme and saie that one S<sup>r</sup> Thomas French, whoe died ii yeres before the same Johan Smith was browghte abed, to be the father of her child: for givinge of which seid counsell he is hartely sorey. [*Penance thereon.*]

## DXIII.

[17 Sept.]

*Contra Georgium Thorogood de Hornchurch.*— \* \* Bible, &c. to be bought and chained to desks.  
[Dominus] assignavit ei that he shall by a byble of the largest volume, Mr. Foxes last bookes of monumentes; the which bookes must be fastened with lokes & cheynes, upon deskes, within the church [of] Hornchurch, at the discretions of the vicare & the churchwardens, at the charges of the same Thorogood; citra festum Annimarum prox.

## DXIV.

[11 December.]

*Contra Mariam Madison et Dorotheam Marshall de Danberie.*— \* \* Women attending to return thanks with 'kerchiefs' on their heads.  
Fassi sunt, that theie came to the church to be churched, or give thanckes, for their safe delivery; havinge kerchifes over their hedes, accordinge to the use: and for that they had the same kerchifes one their heddes, the curat wold not suffer them to give thancks, and thereby went home without thankes givinge: & theie beinge further examined, wether theie did were them for anie supersticion, [say they did not,] but for warmeth. Et tunc dominus monuit eos that upon Sondaie nexte theie shall come to the church to give thanckes, & then and there the curate shall cause and se[e] them give thanckes. And lykewise the same Mr. Dente the curate was monished, that hereafter he shall not refuse anie honest woman to give thanckes, coming to the church as aforesaid, theie beinge examined that they doe not were the same for anie superstition. \* \*

## DXV.

Repetita, xiii<sup>o</sup> Novembris, 1577.

*Sabina Rame parochie de Waltham magna vidua.*— \* \* Contracted parties accounted lawful  
In vim juramenti sui dicit et deponit, that by the space

man and wife  
before God.

of a yere and a half, there hath bene good will in the waie of mariadge, betwene the articulate William Meade & Margaret Rame, this deponent's daughter; of this deponent's sighte & knowledge; and her said daughter hath confessed the same to this deponent, and she this deponent did well lyke thereof, and further she seith, that upon the Sondaie after Michelmas day was twelve month, the same William Meade in her howse at Much Waltham, falinge in talke with this deponent, declared unto her, that he had obteyned the good will of her daughter, Margaret Rame; and in talkinge of mariadge, requested her that she this deponent wold grante her good will, lykewise, and to give her consent: she this examine then answering, as she seith, seinge, that I perceiue that you are both agreed, & that it was there owne matche, she was contented, and praied to God that theie mighte doe well: and thereupon the same William Meade takinge the same Margaret Rame by the hand, who then stod by, sayinge unto her, Margaret, nowe that I have your mother's good will, also I doe here nowe take you to my wief, and I doe give you here my faith and trothe; she the same Margaret holdinge him still by the hand, answeringe, and here I doe lykewise give you my faith and trothe, and doe promise to be your wief; none being there present with them but this deponent: she thereupon requested them that theie shold goe to her sonne-in-lawe, Richard Drane, and to make him privie of it; that there mighte be a daie pointed for the mariadge; which thinge theie did as this deponent heard saye, and afterwards theie were accompted for lawfull man and wif before God; and also the banes of matrimonie was openly asked ii severall Sondaies in Much Waltam church, about Candlemas last, & the third Sondaie theie were forbidden, by Nicholas Satch, whoe claimed mariadge.

## DXVI.

[5 Sept. 1578.]

The price and  
dimensions of  
surplice fixed.

*Contra gardianos et curatum de Dengie.*— \* \* They browghte in their surplice, which surplice is torne & verie undecent & uncomly, as appereth; whereupon the judge

for that theie neglected their othes, [ordered them to confess their fault and prepare] a newe surplice of holland cloth of vs. thele conteyninge viii elles, citra festum animarum prox.

[On the 6th of October following they were admonished to prepare a new surplice containing six ells at 2s. 8d. the ell.]

## DXVII.

[29 Oct.]

*Contra Eliz. Harris uxorem Ricardi Harris de Burnham.*— Objecting to sit in a pew.  
Detectum, that she refuseth to kepe her seate in the church, accordinge to the order appointed by Mr. Archdecon. Comparuit dictus Harris et nomine uxoris sue, fassus est, that his wief was plased in a pewe with ii other women, whereof one hath a stronge breth. Dominus acceptavit confessionem et ad probandum inprox.

## DXVIII.

[19 December.]

*Contra Leonardum Callian de Leighe.*— \* \* [Eliza- Communion to be administered at the house of an infirm person.  
betha ejus uxor] allegavit dictum suum maritum to be a verie old man, and so impotent and lame, that he is not able to goe upp the hill to the church, beinge of the age of lxxxx or verie neere. \* \* Dominus decrevit scribendum fore rectori de Leighe, ad ministrandam communionem, cum numero competente in edibus suis, juxta librum etc. citra proximum.

---

LIBER ACTORUM annis Domini 1579, 1580, 1581.

---

## DXIX.

[9 May, 1579.]

*Contra Margaretam Bullman de Wakeringe magna.*—Com- Deriding punishment.  
paruit dicta Margareta Bullman, et fassa est, that she de-



rided the ponishment that was assigned her daughter, Rachell French, whoe was detected of evell lyf. Dominus ei injunxit, publicam penitenciam, cum dicta sua filia, die Dominica ad septimanam proximam.

## DXX.

[3 June.]

*Byrd contra Meade, alias Meadowes.*—Quo die Willielmus Thwaites exhibuit procuratorem suam pro dicta Byrd, alias per Jacobum Thwaites exhibitum, et fecit se etc. Et exhibuit mandatum excommunicationis, cum certificatorio denunciationis in dorso etc. et allegavit eandem Meade fuisse et esse legitime et publice denunciata et declarata, ac post denunciacionem excommunicationis hujusmodi, per xl<sup>ta</sup> dies et ultra contumacem fuisse et perseverasse, claves ecclesie jura que et jurisdictione spernendo etc. Unde dominus ad petitionem Thwaites decrevit implorandum auxilium domini episcopi London quatenus dignetur scribendum pro corporis capcione dicte Meade.

## DXXI.

[6 Oct.]

Layman reading the prayers.

*Contra Laurenciam Wrighte de West Tylbury.*—Detected for reading the Common Prayer on Sondaie the vi of September last, not being a deacon, and teaching children.

## DXXII.

[Eodem die.]

Folding the sheep in the church.

*Contra Johannem Goldringe clericum rectorem de Langden Hilles, archidiaconatus Essex.*—Notatur offitio, that his servante, by his consent or proc[urement], did put his shepe into Langdon church: die et loco predicto comparuit personaliter dictus Johannes Goldringe et fassus est, that a little after Candelmas last his servantes endeavoringe & procuring to have his shepe saved, from the coveringe of the greate snowe, which at that tyme so greatly did fale, both by nighte and by daye; and his servantes beinge not able to bringe them into anie howse, and haveinge a care to have them saved, theie haveinge the keye of the

church doore of Langdon hilles, nere which church his shepe were then pastured; theie then locked the same shepe into the church, where theie were ii dayes, first and last, beinge workinge dayes; and then by greate labor & paynes his servantes, when the fale of the snowe was ended, theie put them into another place, & made clene the church: all which was done for greate & extreme necessitie sake, & not in anie contempte; all which was done by his consente. Unde dominus archidiaconus acceptando hujusmodi confessionem, injunxit eidem Johanni Goldringe, hanc penitentiam \* \* [and] he shall distribute emongest the poore of the same parishe *vis. viii d.*

## DXXIII.

[25 Nov.]

*Contra Willielmum Horton curatum de Barkinge.*—De-<sup>‘ Letting children christen, &c.</sup> tected for letting children christen, and to be godfathers and godmothers, being not of sufficient age, contrarye to the Queenes Majesties injunctions. He is a disquiet person emongst his neigbours. He withholdeth certayne church goodes.

## DXXIV.

[2 March.]

*Contra Johannem Boyce de [Stocke].*—Detected for lyken-<sup>Contemptuous speeches concerning the Trinity.</sup> ing the Trinitie to a foote ball playe. \* \*

## DXXV.

[Eodem die.]

*Contra Johannem Paterson unum gardianorum de Boreham.* Churchwarden  
— \* \* Tunc dominus objecit, that the first Sondaie in not providing for the communion.  
November last past, there beinge a communion in the church, & the communicants after service ended, beinge redie to receive the communion, theie were rejected, for want of breade and wyne: & then & there the same Paterson beinge churchwarden, affirmed openly, that he wold not laye owte noe money for it; & wold not prepare anie, for that he cold not tell howe to come by his money againe.

Dictus Paterson fassus est premissa, et se submisit. Unde dominus ei injunxit, that at the nexte communion, in the same church, he shall openly confesse his faulte & negli-gence ; promisinge amendement.

## DXXVI.

[10 Feb.]

Children being  
sponsors.

*Contra Janam Upton filiam Magistri Burres de [Waltham Stowe].*—Detected for being godmother to a child, and never received the communion.

*Contra Johannem Horton curatum de Barkinge.*—Detected for suffering the said Jane to christen the said child.

## DXXVII.

[3 March.]

Contracting  
marriage with  
three or four  
persons.

*Contra Ciciliam Storton servientem Roberti Webbe de South-wild.*—Detected for making herself suer to three or iiii several men. Comparuit Johannes Fox et allegavit se con-traxisse matrimonium cum dicta Cicilia. Unde dominus monuit ad solemnizandum matrimonium, in facie ecclesie, citra festum Michaelis proximum.

## DXXVIII.

[4 March.]

Suspicion of  
incontinent  
life, &c.

*Contra Franciscum Jennyns de Romford et uxorem ejus.*—Detected, for that either the said Fraunces hathe burnt his wief, or his wief burnt him, and that she for her parte is vehementlie suspected of incontinent lyef.

## DXXIX.

[18 April, 1580.]

Breaking the  
church win-  
dows.

*Contra Samuelem Spender, Petrum Sakefeld, Johannem Warley et Johannem Marten de [Railey].*—Suspected by fame and reporte to have broken the church windoes and the chauncell windowes. Comparuit Spender, quem dominus juramento oneravit, et monuit etc. citra proximum ; et quoad alios, dominus excommunicavit [eos].

## DXXX.

[Eodem die.]

*Contra Johannem White de Woodham Mortymer.*—De-  
tected, for that he is clarke of the church and cannot read. The church clerk cannot read.  
Dominus dimisit.

## DXXXI.

[19 April.]

*Contra servientes Willielmi Spencer et Humfridi Drywood*  
*de [Southbemflete].*—Detected for striving for their places Brawling in church.  
in the tyme of service. Comparuerunt et fassi sunt de-  
tectionem. Dominus eis injunxit, quod agnoscant culpam  
in ecclesia predicta. M<sup>d</sup> Johan, Ellis Mones' mayde, skolded  
& cursed in the church.

## DXXXII.

[18 May.]

*Contra Willielmum Bayley et ejus uxorem de South Wild.*—  
Dominus objecit, that theie went owte of the church in Going out of church during service.  
service tyme. Eo quod agnoverunt culpam, coram vicario  
et gardianis, prout apparet per litteras suas, unde dominus  
dimisit.

## DXXXIII.

xxiii<sup>to</sup> Julii, 1583. [Master WILLIAM BINGHAM, LL.D.  
official.]

*Contra Richardum Archer vicarium de Wakeringe.*— \* \* Vicar to ac-  
[Absolutus est. Et] dominus injunxit quod agnoscat cul-  
pam citra receptionem eucharistiæ, coram parochianis ejus-  
dem, viz. that he hathe geven offence to his parishioners,  
standinge suspended, contrarie to lawe; and that he failed  
in his purgacion, wherein he was presented for diverse dis-  
orders, which he was enjoyned to doe by Mr. Doctor  
Bingham. knowledge his fault in stand-  
ing suspended.

## DXXXIV.

[9 Sept.]

*Contra Richardum Barker et uxorem ejus de Romforde.*—

Talk savouring  
of false doc-  
trine.

Detected for usinge of their talke something savoringe false doctryne. And she somthinge suspecte of wycherie. Comparuit dictus Richardus Barker et fassus est premissa, & that he never red the Scriptures, and that Christes Godhead was geven him of his Father. Onelie that Christe saide my Faither is greater then my faither: beinge demaunded wether a Jewe or Christian is best, he aunswered that it made no matter whether he weare a Jew or Christian, seinge that he do well. Ad comparendum in proximo. [2 Oct. Injoined penance.]

## DXXXV.

25 October.

Not giving  
alms to the  
poor and im-  
potent.

*Contra Barnardum Clarke parochie de Haverstocke.*—Detected for beinge an uncharitable person, & for not gevenge to the poore & impotent, and for not receavinge the communion sithence the firste daie of January. Comparuit et negavit, that he is an uncharitable person. Dominus ei injunxit ad purgandum in proximo, 4<sup>ta</sup> manu. \* \*

## DXXXVI.

[Eodem die.]

Withholding  
fees.

*Contra Hickes de Thurrocke parva.*—Detected for withholdinge fees from John Wittam the pariter.

## DXXXVII.

[4 Nov.]

False opinions.

*Contra Richardum Plate de Romford Weaver.*—Detected for certaine false opinions which he holdeth that he dothe knowe the Father, and the Sonne to be lesse then the Father, and can do nothings without the Faither geve him leave. Comparuit et negavit et dominus, eo quod gardiani et parochiani de Romforde in juditio affirmarunt eum vix esse mentis compotem [etc.] \* \* dimisit.

## DXXXVIII.

[28 Nov.]

*Contra Johannem Turnar parochie [de Burstled magna].*—

Detected, for that he obstinatlie refused to knele in the receavinge of the communion. Comparuit dictus Turnar et fassus est, that at one tyme he refused to receive it knelinge, for that he thowghte it was not accordinge to the word of God, for that Christ ministred it sitting &c.: but sithens, beinge better instructed, he hath received it knelinge sithens he was presented. Dominus monuit eum quod recipiat citra festum Natalis domini proximum, et agnoscat culpam.

Concerning kneeling at the communion.

## DXXXIX.

*Contra gardianos de Fiefeild.*—Detected, for that the churche wyndowes is so painted, that the mynister cannot se to saie service, in the afternone, it is so darke: theire ten comaundementes is all to rent & hange so hie, that they cannot reade them: also the yought of the parishe dothe take upp the stoales, where the parishoners shuld sit, & they lacke rome. In proximum.

The church darkened by the painted windows.

## DXL.

[29 Nov.]

*Contra Aliciam Hawle, uxorem Randulphi Hawle de Romford.*— \* \* [Allegavit] further that theire howse was infected with the plague that theie cold not receive owte of theire howse. Dominus monuit quod recipiat citra festum Pasche. \* \*

The plague in the house urged as an excuse for not receiving the communion.

## DXLI.

[4 Jan.]

*Contra Johannem Dryver, parochie de Baddoe parva.*— Detected, for that theire goeth a common cryme on him that he is a whore keper, and the matter is plaine. Ex-[communicatus?]

## DXLII.

[Eodem die.]

*Contra Thomam Lorkin, rectorem de Waltham parva.*— Detected for not wearinge the surplice, and for not usinge the crosse in baptisme, accordinge to the Queenes injunc-

Not signing the cross in baptism.



tions. Comparuit et fassus est, that he hath not worne the surplice, neither useth the crosse in baptisme sithens Michaelmas last paste. Unde dominus eo quod frequenter fuerit admonitus, ac contempserit seu neclexerit etc. eum suspensit ■ celebratione divinorum, ab ingressu ecclesie etc.

## DXLIII.

[Eodem die.]

Similiter.

*Contra Georgium Parnell, vicarium de Bromfeild.*—[Similiter.] Fassus est, that he omitted it but once, & then because the father of the child held oppinion, that the child was not perfectly baptised without the crosse; wherein notwithstanding he hath satisfied that man; & he meaneth hereafter to use it orderly. Unde dominus habita monicione etc. dimisit.

## DXLIV.

[Eodem die.]

Subtraction of rate.

*Contra Richardum Humfrayes, parochie de Haverstocke.*—Detected, for that he refuseth to paie v.s. which he was rated by the minister and substanciall men of the parishe for the bells makinge. \* \* Dominus monuit ad solvendum.

## DXLV.

[15 Jan.]

On marriage of contracted person.

*Contra Magistrum Dawson, rectorem de Abbes Rodinge et Weston Eve parochie predictae.*—Notatur that they suffered a younge maide to be married, knowinge that she was assured to another, & the banes forbidden by her mother. [*In proximum.*]

## DXLVI.

[13 Feb.]

Making a filthy rhyme.

*Contra Willielmum Trene et Elizabetham ejus uxorem, parochie de Rayneham.*—Detected, for that they have made a filthie ryme, of the most parte of the inhabitantes of this parishe. [14 Feb. *Quia contumaciter recusant peragere penitenciam dominus eos excommunicavit.*]

## DXLVII.

[Eodem die.]

*Contra Robertum Billing [de Northockenden].*—Notatur <sup>Lying with his mother.</sup> that he useth to lie with his mother, he beinge above the age of xvii yeares.

## DXLVIII.

[7 April, 1584.]

*Contra Anthonium Walker, parochie de Burneham.*—Com- <sup>Proceedings with a lunatic.</sup> paruit dictus Anthonius Walker et fassus est se carnaliter cognovisse Margaretam Younge, et se submitit correctioni domini judicantis etc. Dominus acceptavit confessionem et ei injunxit [penitentiam] etc. Deinde post meridiem ejusdem diei dominus officialis certificatus, ex litteris domini archidiaconi, That the same Anthonie Walker was greatlye distressed in mynde, and desperatlye mynded, by reason of his lunacye, and beinge required to deale gentlye and easely with him, for fere he shold desperatlye cast away himself, as it was credible enformed & certified; and also perceyving the great perplexitye and desperate behavvour of the same Walker in court, and for the avoydinge of further extremitie, of some desperate attempte, that he wold use towards himself, willed the same Walker to serve God, and to take good enstructions of Leper the minister, as also other good preachers thereby for his amendment of lyfe; and uppon the Sondaye next after Easter yf there be a communion, or some other Sondaye before the next courte, yf there be a communion in Burneham church, there, penitently and openlye before the congregacion, meekelye kneeling uppon his knees, confessing his leude and abominable fact of incest, and fornication by him committed, with Margaret Younge, according to his owne confession, in manner and forme as it shall be directed to the minister in writting. Et ad certificandum in proximum hoc in loco. Et quoad aliam partem publice penitentie dominus distulit donec ei constituerit, that his fyte of lunacye had left him.

## DXLIX.

[13 April.]

Keeping a  
house of  
bawdry.

*Contra Evance ap Rice et ejus uxorem, de Stratford Langthorne infra parochiam de Westham.*—Detected for kepeinge of evell rule in theire howse, and speciallie of bawdrie; they keping a victualinge howse, lodginge strange men and weomen together, in one chamber; and lodging strange men in his bedd with him and his wief, he arisinge in the morninge lettinge them lie, as by the reporte of theire neighbours.

## DL.

[15 April.]

Unlawful read-  
ing and cate-  
chising.

*Contra Willielmum Walker, parochie de Cold Norton.*—Detected for usinge unlawfull readinge and catechisinge in his howse by one Faunce of Mauldon and Gardiner of Heybridge. Comparuit et fassus est, that in his owne howse & with his owne familie onely, he useth catechisinge & readinge of the Scriptures, the articulate Faunce beinge of his owne familie: et quod Gardiner negavit seu alios. Dominus acceptavit confessionem et ei injunxit, ad se purgandum in prox se 4<sup>ta</sup>.

## DLI.

[Eodem die.]

Refusal to at-  
tend church  
without there  
be a sermon.

*Contra Richardum Yawlinge, de Woodham Mortimer.*—Detected for beinge absent from his parishe church vi weekes, and saieth that he will not come to church, unlesse theire be a sermon preached; for he saieth that publique service redd in the church, is no service, unlesse theire be a sermon. \* \* [Further that] he is not so well edified by readinge, as by preachinge. Dominus monuit ad recipiendam citra proximum et agnoscat culpam in ecclesia.

## DLII.

[Eodem die.]

Using private  
conventicles.

*Contra Radulphum Stephen, parochie de Wateringe magna.*

—Detected, for that he useth private conventicles in private places, others not beinge of the familie. Comparuit et objecto, negavit, savinge that one the Lordes dayes, after the service ended in the church, he doth mete with his neighboures and singe Psalmes, & confere upon the parcell of Scripture together, that theie heare that day; sometymes metinge at one neighbours howse & sometymes at anothers, that are well gyven; after which ended, theie singe a Psalme: which metinge is onely one the Lordes dayes or hollidaies; and other metinges theie have not, which is noe conventicle as he beleveth. Dominus acceptavit confessionem et monuit quod imposterum, theie shall not make anie unlawful metinges together, in companie of severall families, but in theire severall houses, whereby anie conventicle mighte be thoughte or demed: & that theie shall openly confesse that theie are sorie for gyvinge anie occasion of suspicion of using conventicles contrarie to the article: promisinge not to use the lyke before such tyme as theie receive the communion. [*Et ad purgandum se.*]

## DLIII.

[Eodem die.]

*Contra Johannem Knighte, parochie [de Frieringe].*— \* \* \* Refusal to bury corps from another parish.  
 The said Knight brought one of Mr. Butlers men, beinge dead, to be buried in this parish, and for that the minister of the towne, whoe had noe auctoritie to burie the saide corsse (for that he dwelte in the parishe) the saide John Knighte, buried it without any minister beinge presente, Burial thereof without minister. contrarie to lawe as it is comonly reported. \* \* Negavit savinge that he was one of them that browghte the corps to the church, & he requested Mr. Clercke to burie the corps, & he refused to [do] it; & uppon his refusall the corps was buried by others, & not by him; but by whome he knoweth not. Dominus assignavit ad purgandum 4<sup>ta</sup> manu vicinorum suorum.

## DLIV.

*Contra Nicholaum Lynche, de Thaydon boyse.*— \* \* \* Penance for not marrying  
 He shall openly before the congregacion penitently confesse

when the banns had been asked. that he is hartely sorie for offendinge Allmightie God; & that he hath abused the congregacion, in procuringe the banes openly to be asked in the church, betwene him & Johan Robertes, & not procedinge in the mariadge.

## DLV.

[4 June.]

On praying for  
the queen.

*Contra Magistrum Willielmum Serege, rectorem de Easthanfeild.*—Detected, for that he praieth not for the Queenes Matie accordinge to hir injunctions; viz. he leaveth out of hir stile, the kingdome of Fraunce; neither dothe he mainteine the booke of articles, and useth not the crosse in baptisme. \* \* \* Dominus injunxit ei, quod agnoscat culpam, coram gardianis die Dominica ad septimanam.

## DLVI.

[30 June.]

Monition  
against con-  
venticles.

*Contra Eundem.*— \* \* \* He hath not at anie tyme had or used anie private conventicles in his howse, contrarie to the lawe; savinge that sonderie tymes, diverse of his honest & well disposed parishioners, and sometimes others of other parishes, uppon the lordes dayes after eveninge praier ended, theie mete together in his howse, and singe Psalmes & use praier, & not otherwise; which is not against the lawe, & yf he hath offended in the premisses, he referreth himself to the correction of his ordinarie. \* \* Dominus monuit quod imposterum ne habeat posthuc occulta conventicula directe in contraria leges hujus regni Anglie sub pena juris.

## DLVII.

[Eodem die.]

Objection to  
the surplice  
being worn.

*Contra Johannem Kele [de Woodham Ferres].*—Notatur that he cometh not to churche when there is noe sermon, for that the surplice is worne: likewise he refused to paie anie thinge to the washinge of the surplice, and wold not have it worne; but wold geve mony that it shuld not be worne. Comparuit et fassus est detectionem, that sometymes he useth to goe to heare a sermon, when there is

none at theire owne parishe churche; and for the wearinge of the surplice he saithe that in his conscience, he wold not have it worne. Dominus acceptavit confessionem, et monuit eum ad recipiendam eucharistiam [etc.]; et quod agnoscat culpam tempore receptionis [etc.]

## DLVIII.

[1 July.]

*Contra Johannem Bente, de Blakemore.*— \* \* [He] is suspected much of papistrie, for that he counselleth diverse from the readinge of the bible, and affirmeth a carnall presence in the sacrament after the words spoken. \* \* Dominus assignavit ad purgandum se <sup>v<sup>ta</sup></sup>.

## DLIX.

[22 July.]

*Contra Richardum Bennett, parochie de Westham.*—Detected, for that he was chosen by the vestre to be a side-man, and he refuseth to be one; but the churchwardens request to have him accordinge to order. Dominus dimisit.

## DLX.

[24 July.]

*Contra Edmundum Binder, curatum de Blackmore.*—Dominus objecit, that he expoundeth upon the text sometymes & is not licensed. Fassus est, that sometyme he expoundeth the Scripture & not licensed. Dominus acceptavit confessionem et eo quod contra monicionem alias contra eum inter positam resistat. And also for that there was tow children in the same parishe, which died unchristened, by his negligence, for that he would not christen them before Sondaie followinge, and died in the meane tyme, a ministracione sacrementorum et sacramentalium, necnon a divinatorum officiorum celebratione suspendit eum.

## DLXI.

[Eodem die.]

*Contra Ricardum Baker [de Easthanfield].*—Detected for



Suffering unruly persons to jangle the bells, sufferinge unrulie persons to ringe and jangle the bells out of due season. Ad comparandum in proximo.

## DLXII.

[27 August.]

Contempt of  
judges ecclesi-  
astical, &c.

*Contra Johannem Leche, de Hornchurch.*—Absolutus est \* \* Dictus Leche fassus est, that he teacheth children and he hathe no license, but by word of mouth from Mr. Archdeacon. Dominus eum suspendit, donec sufficienter licentiatur per dictum archidiaconum. Et ulterius eo quod dictus Leche contumaciter respondet, se nolle respondere detectis. Deinde ulterius contumaciter respondet, ut prius, viz. respondendo that he is molested and called only but for mony, & that the word of God doth allowe noe money for absolution, and that the end is but for monye, & that the church of God mighte well mise such officers, & that the church of God mighte be well enowghe governed without them, meaninge the judge and all other judges ecclesiastical and registers. Et objecit detectionem viz. that he is presented to catechise & preache in his house diverse persons besides his owne familie everie Sabathe daie [beinge present] dicto Leche fatente, that he dothe catechise to his familie and schollers in his howse, and others do resort, but not by his meanes. Dominus accepit confessionem et propter ejus manifestum [contemptum etc. eum excommunicavit].

## DLXIII.

[8 Sept.]

Knowing  
faults, and not  
presenting  
them.

*Contra Abrahamum Smythe et Johannem Poolie, parochie [de Fiefield].*—Detected for that they did knowe of all the foresaid faults and would not present them.

## DLXIV.

[9 Oct.]

Refusal to con-  
fess fault.

*Contra Edwardum Magget, de Duddinghurst.*— \* \* Dominus ei injunxit quod publice agnoscat culpam [etc.] and [he] openly in corte affirmed that he wold never confese anie such falte whilest he lived.

## DLXV.

[9 Oct.]

*Contra Radulphum Barnes et Elizabetham ejus uxorem, de Duddinghurst.*—Notatur that theye are suspected not to be lawfullie married, wheirefore the parishoners require to have a certificate of their mariadge. \* \* theie confesse that theie were married without the rynge, required by the booke. Dominus acceptavit confessiones et eis injunxit quod insimul ac consortium in posterum non frequentant, donec constiterit de sufficiente solempnizacione matrimonii.

## DLXVI.

[5 Nov.]

*Contra [Iconimos de Westham].*—Detected, for that they will not conclude with the sworne men accordinge to their othes. Dominus eos dimisit.

## DLXVII.

[10 Feb.]

*Contra Thomam Robiout [de Blakemore].*—Detected for encorage of ringers to ringe unlawfullie. Comparuit et fassus est, that the nexte daie after the daie of the solempnizacion, he caused some of his neighbors to ringe but one pele, which he thowghte he mighte doe. Dominus acceptavit confessionem, et ei injunxit, quod agnoscat culpam; seu solvat vid. ad usum pauperum.

## DLXVIII.

[26 April, 1585.]

*Contra Johannem Shonnke seniore, de Romford.*—Detected for that he wente to faither Parfoothe for helpe for his wief: whiche Parfoothe is suspected to be a wiche. Comparuit dictus Shonncke, et fassus est detectionem, and saethe, that for the helpe of his wief he went to him, and if it weare againe, he wold do the like to helpe his wief: which Parfoothe is counted to be a wiche, and is allowed for a good wiche. Dominus acceptavit confessionem et injunxit ei publicam penitentiam peragendam in capella de Haver-

inge, tempore divinorum etc. confessinge himself hartelie sorie for sekinge mans helpe, and refusing the helpe of God.

## DLXIX.

[Eodem die.]

Drunken  
curate.

*Contra Richardum Atkis, curatum de Romford.*—Detected, for that he was so drunke the xxi of Marche last, beinge Sondaie, that he could neither examyne the youghe in the Catechisme, nor saie eveninge praier; but wold have said one lesson twice. \* \* [Dominus] excommunicavit eum.

## DLXX.

[Eodem die.]

Accusation of  
being an Ana-  
baptist, &c.

*Contra Johannem Leche, de Hornchurche.*—Comparuit et fassus est se non licentiatum ad erudiendum pueros. He affirmed that Mr. Archdecon whoe sittenge in judgement hath hardly delte with him, and that he hath accused him to be an Annabaptist, a Sisematicke & a Puritine: & that for his owne parte he doth not cathechise, but to his owne familie; the which he maie doe, by the warantise of the word of God: beinge demanded howe fare he is bounde to obaye the Prince, he refused to aunswere.

## DLXXI.

[16 June.]

Selling a right  
in a contract of  
marriage.

*Contra Henricum Marshall et Johannam Brewer, de Warley magna.*—Notatur that they weare contracted together, and afterwardes the said Henrie sould the said Joane, unto one Edward Croxen for xs.: and for that the xs. was not paid, the said Henrie did forbidd the banes. Comparuit dictus Henricus et allegavit, that he did forbid the banes, for that she promised [him] mariadge, but he hath noe profe. Dicta Johanna vertute sui juramenti negavit premissa.

## DLXXII.

[17 June.]

*Contra Thomam Rogers, de Thaidon boyse.*—Notatur offitio,

that inderectly for a some of money he was bound to consent to a divorce betwene him and his wief. \* \* Consenting to a divorce for a sum of money.

## DLXXIII.

[13 Oct.]

*Contra Johannem Warde [de Westham].*—Detected for Collusion. bearinge with his wief in hir whoredom; he knowinge of the same. Comparuit et negavit detectionem. Dominus assignavit ad purgandum se 4<sup>ta</sup> manu honestorum suorum.

## DLXXIV.

[8 Dec.]

Willielmus Asheton affirmed that he was here the last corte daie, that he that sat as judge the last daie, was more like an ydoll, then a judge, and therefore an unfitt judge, that can saie nothinge: and he beinge required for his letters of his orders, he said that he had them not here, neither would he showe them to any; but to the bisshopp, of whome he had them. Tunc dominus monuit ad comparendum hoc in loco, post meridiem ad videndum ulteriorem fieri. Contemptuous speeches concerning the judge, &c.

And as for you, meaninge Robert Lynn, the regester, you daube upp adulteries and whoredomes for monye.

## DLXXV.

[8 Feb.]

*Contra Robertum Hamond, de Bobinger.*—Detectum prout in billa. Comparuit et objectum, that he said some of the parishe were develles. Negavit. And that yt were as good steale a horse, as to playe of lawful game, one the Saboth daies. Negavit, saying that in abusinge the Saboth daie, it was as lawfull to steale a horse, as abusinge the Saboth daie. Fatetur, that he confessed that he is a fellowe haire. He denieth that ever that he nede to here sermones. Fassus est, that he hath affirmed that he knoweth whoe is the child of God. Objectum, that he useth unlawfull conventicles. Negavit. He offeten absenteth himself from his parishe churche one Saboth daies & holie daies; & that he will not paie his forfeitures for his absences: fassus est, Calling the parishioners devils, &c.

that when there is noe sermones he goeth to [an]other church, where the word is preched, & therefore he will not paie the forfeiture: he hath not abused the minister. Quod negata dominus assignavit ad purgandum se vi<sup>ta</sup> manu.

## DLXXVI.

xix<sup>no</sup> Septembris, 1586, coram Archidacono Essex.

On preaching  
or catechising  
being un-  
licensed.

*Contra Johannem Leche, Ludimagistrum de Hornchurche.*—Comparuit et dominus objecit, that he oppenlie preacheth, usinge it for the mannor of catechisinge; to the which catechisinge greate companie do resorte: he beinge not licensed thereunto by any lawfull authoritie. The same Mr. Leche personallie appearinge confessed, that he dothe usuallie catechise and expounde Psalmes to his familie; to the which diverse others then his familie do resorte; not at his appointment, but of there voluntarie willes they do resorte to his catechisinge: and that he is not bound to shott his doores; and that he haith reprovved some of them for cominge to him, and yet they come. Dominus acceptavit confessionem et ei injunxit, that he shall not catechise oppenlie to all comers and companies, in mannor and forme as nowe he useth; but onelie to his owne familie. The said Mr. Leche aunswered that he will not shutte his doores, and that he shall not use any mannor of catechisinge or expoundinge in the night time.

## DLXXVII.

[13 Oct.]

Ante-nuptial  
incontinence.

*Contra Robertum Meadows, de Lees magna.*—Comparuit et dominus objecit quod carnaliter cognovit quandam Annam Giles ante nuptias. Fassus est, et allegavit se contraxisse matrimonium cum eadem Anna, and that he meaneth to marie hir citra festum annimarum proximum; et tempore solemnizacionis ejusdem matrimonii dominus injunxit quod agnoscat culpam.

## DLXXVIII.

[7 Nov.]

*Contra Matheum Fisher, de Romford.*—Detected for plaie-

inge at stoole bawle in service tyme, and gave crewell wordes to the churchwardens for demandinge xii*d.* of him for his absence. \* \* Ad interessendum in proximo. \* \*  
 [2 Dec. To pay 12*d.* to the use of the poor.]

Playing at  
stoole-ball in  
service time.

## DLXXIX.

[1 Dec.]

*Contra gardianos de Burneham.*—Notatur for not suffer- inge there minister to preache, but contemptuously withheld him forthe of the pulpit the vi of November last. Comparuit personaliter, et monuit, that hereafter they shall use their minister well and charitablie. Unde dominus eos dimisit.

Not allowing  
the minister to  
preach.

## DLXXX.

[19 Jan.]

*Contra Johannem Thornton de Shoplande [et sex alios].*—Dominus ex certis causis eum moventibus eos . . . casu quo imposterum frequentant ecclesiam tempore divi- norum diligenter, eos licentiavit sub forma sequente, viz. theie are lycensed ii of them onely when there is noe sermon at Shoplande churche, to goe else where, [where] there is anie sermone; and not all of them to be absent from there parishe all upon one daie, but consequently ii of them onely to be absent, & the other iiiii to be at there parishe church duringe all the service tyme & the redinge of the homilie, when there is noe sermond sub pena juris.

Licence of  
absence from  
church.

## DLXXXI.

[20 Jan.]

*Contra Robertum Sulmon [de Muckinge].*—Detected for not geveing upp his accompte of churchwardenshipp, de- teyninge monye in his handes. Defunctus est citra de- tectionem.

Withholding  
account of  
churchwarden-  
ship.

## DLXXXII.

[21 Jan.]

*Contra Willielmum Geve, curatum de Thadon.*—Detected Marriage fees.  
 \* \* for takinge x*s.* of two of his parishe for a mariage  
 \* \*



## DLXXXIII.

[21 Feb.]

Defacing the  
chancel by  
making a fire.

*Contra Magistrum Presson, Ludimagistrum [de Stocke].—*  
Non licentiatus est, and that he haithe defased the chaunsell  
in makinge a fire for his schollers.

## DLXXXIV.

[21 March.]

Burying the  
dead and mar-  
rying persons,  
not being in  
orders, by con-  
sent of the  
bishop.

*Contra Samuelem Wythers, de Danberie curatum.*—De-  
tected, that he burieth the deade and churcheth women,  
beinge suspected to be unlicensed. Magister Doctor Withers  
personaliter certificavit, that uppon the necessetie of his  
sicknes, by the consent of my Lord of London, and by  
his allowance, the same was done once by him: but here-  
after he shall not deale in the same function: but he the  
same Samuell meaneth to enter into the ministerie, at the  
nexte orders that is gyven.

## DLXXXV.

[24 April, 1587.]

Attempting  
seduction.

*Contra Johannem Hockley, de Duddinghurst.*—Notatur quod  
attemptavit pudiciam Katerine Holden: publica fama re-  
ferente; and that he offered hir money to be lewde with her.

## DLXXXVI.

[Eodem die.]

Breaking into  
the church, &c.

*Contra Gilbertum Peakocke [et alios] de Bechampe Road-  
inge.*—Notatur for breakinge into the church of Abbas  
Rodinge, and bringeinge in Mr. Ward, an unlicensed minis-  
ter, beinge suspended, to preache. \* \* \* [Johannes  
Baker] fassus est, that the church doore beinge shute, and  
wold not be opened by the churchwardes, he went in at  
the steple. [To acknowledge their faults therein.]

## DLXXXVII.

[28 April.]

*Contra Tymotheum Ockele, clericum vicarium de Bursted*

*magna*.—Detected that he married one John Wollston in the tyme exempted, viz. upon Shrove Mondaie, without lycense. Comparuit et fassus et allegavit, that the bannes was full asked, and therefore he committed the same ignorantly, and not upon anie contempte. Dominus acceptavit confessionem et ei injunxit, quod publice agnoscat culpam. \* \*

Performing marriage at a time exempted.

## DLXXXVIII.

[27 April.]

*Contra Edwardum Glascocke [de Easthaningfield]*.—Detected for lieinge himself, his wief, and his maide, together in one bedd; and cometh verie late to service. Comparuit et fassus est, that about a yere past he beinge then a lone man, he had but onely ii bedds, and he had both a man servant & a maide servant; whereby he was driven to lodge his maide with his wief, untill he provided another bed. Unde facta fide et habita monitione. Dominus dimisit.

Lodging his maid in the same bed with himself and wife.

## DLXXXIX.

[21 June.]

*Hornchurch. Contra Johannem Leche*.—Detectum (prout sequitur). We fynde and presente that one Whitsondaie last, beinge the 4<sup>th</sup> of June; we beinge comaunded by Mr. Vickare, beinge at service to goe abroad and comaund men to come to service, that we found John Leche in his private howse, at an exercise, with as greate, or rather greater assembly, then was in the church at owre departure from the church; and this is ordinarie most Sondaies. \* \*

Presentment on absence from church.

[*Note—See other proceedings against the same person: 27 Aug. 1584; 26 Apr. 1585; 19 Sep. 1586; 14 Sep. 1587.*]

## DXC.

[22 June.]

*Contra Johannem Waspe, de Southbemflete*.—Detectum, that he contemptuouslye refuseth to make reverence to the name of Jesus.

Refusing reverence to the name of Jesus.

[*In the margin is—Ex.*]

## DXCI.

[Eodem die.]

Marriage in a  
private house.

*Contra Bartholomeum Glascoke, rectorem de Bobinger.*—Notatur offitio, that he married one Robert Masson, gentleman, and Margaret Borne, mayden, in Mr. Bornes house, in Bobinger parishe, at Shroftid last past, or littell before, without lawfull lycense. Comparuit dictus Mr. Glascoke et fassus est, that he married the same parties aforesaid, the tyme aforesaid, the banes beinge first iii tymes lawfully asked, & the same mariadge beinge thene solempnized uppon necessitie sake; for that the same Margaret Borne was sicke and longe before the solemnizacon; whereby she cold not safely come abroad, without greate danger of her further sycknes & recoverie; and for necessitie sake, and not otherwise upon contempt, he affirmed then beinge presente diverse of good credite and estimacion at the said mariadge: of which sycknes she is not yet verie well recovered. Ac super veritate ejusdem fecit fidem. \* \* [Dominus monuit] quod imposterum, ne procedeat ad hujusmodi nuptias contra juris ordinem, et dimisit.

## DXCII.

[23 June.]

Refusal to have  
child baptized.

*Contra Matheum Hailes [de Burneham].*—Detected, for that he, causinge his childe to be broughte to the churche, to be baptised, wold not let it be baptised, onlesse he might have the word; and the worde beinge showed him, he wente awaie in dirision, and wold not suffer his childe to be baptised.

## DXCIII.

14 Sept. 1587. Ad acta Leche.

Monition not to  
lecture or ex-  
pound.

[Dominus] stricte precipuit [et] injunxit ei, that from henceforthe he shall not use any private lecture or expositions of Scripture or catechisinge of his schollers in the presence of anye which are not or shall not be of his owne howsehold or familie sub pena juris. Dicto Leche dissentiente [etc.]

## DXCIV.

[16 Sept.]

*Contra curatum Seredge, de Easthanfeld.*—Dominus objecta detectione, that he hathe not geven warninge to the churchwardens to looke to there dutie in service tyme, for such as are absent from service, in presentia dicti Seredge fatente, that he hathe benne negligent in observinge the same, by meanes of his forgetfulnes; but hereafter he will be more diligent. Unde dominus habita premonitione salubria eum dimisit.

Curate not reminding the churchwardens of their duty.

## DXCV.

[13 Oct.]

*Contra Johannem Petchie et ejus uxorem de Frieringe.*—Notatur officio domini judicantis, that they kepte there childe unchristened iii weekes, and that the wief of the said Petchie brought hir childe to be baptised, when she came to geve thanckes, at the end of the iii weekes; and came not to geve thanckes for hir deliverie as she ought to doe. \* \* \*

Child baptized with one godfather only.

*Contra Magistrum Owen, dicte parochie rectorem.*—Notatur officio domini judicantis, that he baptised the childe of the said Petchie, and had but one godfaither to aunswer for it, it beinge man childe contrarie to lawe. Comparuit personaliter dictus Mr. Owen, cui dominus objecit articulum predictum, in presentia dicti Owen fatentis, that by reason the childe was weake and in danger, and that the faither of the childe earnestlie requested to have it baptised, for feare of deathe, he did baptise it, by one godfaither; yet he requireing at the hands of the parents of the said childe another godfaither; and the faither makinge aunswer againe, that he was disapointed of the other godfaither; et desuper fecit fidem: unde dominus eum dimisit.

## DXCVI.

[13 Dec.]

*Contra Augustinum Draper, de Leighe.*—Comparuit et dominus objecit, that the common reporte [is] that he

Opinions on doctrinal points.

doth not acknowledge the immortalitie of the sowle; and by his owne speches he hath affirmed the same. Dominus ei injunxit, that he shall have conference with Mr. Bernnan, Mr. Negus, & Mr. Dent sonderie tymes in metinge in Lee church; whereby he maie be fullee perswaded of the immortalitie of the sowle; and to certifie under there handes, of his full perswacion of the immortalitie of the sowle, in proxima apud Bado tenenda, et ad comparandum eodem die: and lykewise that there is noe transubstantiation] in the sacrament, and that God hath his lawfull ministers and that theie owghte not to have anie salarie or stipend, but to lyve of the alter.

---

LIBER CORRECTIONUM Archidiaconatus Essex.

---

DXCVII.

[7 Nov. 1588.] Coram Venerabili viro Magistro WIL-  
LIELMO BINGE, A.M., officiali.

Damage done  
to the church  
by the camp.

*Contra gardianos de Weste-tilburie.*— \* \* fassus est, that by meanes of the campe that did lie there, there church stooles and wall is muche brocken downe. Unde dominus injunxit eis ad reparandum premissa citra festum Michaelis proximum.—f. 11 b.

DXCVIII.

[8 Nov.]

Suffering a  
minstrel to play  
in the church.

*Contra Magistrum Anger, gardianum de Westham.*—Notatur offitio domini, that they suffered a minstrell to plaie in the church in service tyme at a weddinge the of October last.—f. 12 b.

DXCIX.

[19 Feb.]

*Contra Robertum Dewgard et Katherinam Abbott, de Rom-*

*ford*.—Detected, that after they were made suer and betrothed together, and also being asked three times in church, he have sould the goods of the said Katherine, and maketh a laughing stocke of the mater; and bragethe that he will not marry with her. Comparuit dictus Dewgard et fassus est, that he did bere the same Katheren good will in the waie of mariadge, & she lykewise did bere the lyke, and beinge both agreed, the banes of mariadge was asked, and he entended to marie, and so doth entend now; and she lykewise entendeth the lyke. Unde dominus monuit ad solempnizandum matrimonium citra x<sup>um</sup> Aprilis proximum.—f. 62.

Selling the goods of person to whom he was contracted in marriage.

## DC.

[18 March.]

*Contra Thomam Newman, vicarium de Cannondon*.—Re-  
cusat denunciare et publicare quendam Robertum Bon-  
ham de Cannondon predicto, et alios diversos. Detectus  
erat dictus Bonham de incontinenencia cum uxore Richardi  
Rowle nuper de Canonden.—f. 66.

Refusal to denounce.

## DCI.

*Contra Galfridum Petigrew, parochie de Haverdstock*.—  
Detected for raylinge against Mr. Evans of High Onger,  
and reviling him and called him raskall, Jacke, and skurfe.  
—f. 68.

Railing speeches.

## DCII.

*Contra Johannem Hankin, de Eastwood*.—Notatur officio,  
publica fama referente, de incontinentia cum Clara Greene  
\* \* \* Negavit tam factum quam famam etc., saving that  
he being in the house of the same Clare Greene, being  
requested by her in the absence of her husband, for her  
defence against the misbehaviour of certaine soldyers; who  
behaved themselves most unruly, and he resysting them,  
and keeping them out adoor; they upon that cause only  
exclaimed and said, that he was nought with her the said  
Greene; and as for any other fame there is not, but onely  
upon their malicious speches, because he withstode them

Fame of incontinence.



of their wicked practeses, in the defence of the said Clara Greene as aforesaid \* \* —f. 68.

## DCIII.

[13 May, 1589.]

Not proving will.

*Contra Langley, viduam parochie de Alveleghe.*—Detected, that [she] standeth excommunicated, for not proving hir husbands will.—f. 94.

## DCIV.

[Eodem die.]

Intruding on the vicar's function, and expounding the Scriptures.

*Contra Edwardum Binder, de Blackemore.*—Detected, that he doth not only intrude himselfe into our vicar his function, but also taketh upon him to expounde the Scriptures, and addeth thereunto of his owne heade (unlicensed to preche); and doth not alwaies geve warninge in the church of fishedaies, and holydaies; and that he is thought to serve by way of intrusion. Dominus monuit ad exhibendam licentiam.—f. 97 b.

## DCV.

[14 May.]

Preaching, being excommunicate.

*Contra Jacobum Forrester, parochie de Railey.*—Detected, that he being excommunicated, hath preched sundry times at Paglesham; and also hath baptised, not usinge the signe of the crosse in baptism; nor never wereth the surplice \* \* [*Dominus decrevit eum excommunicandum fore.*]—f. 101 b.

## DCVI.

[Eodem die.]

Drunken men assuming divers characters.

*Contra Johannem Badcocke, de Railey.*—Detected, that he with others more (syttynge upon their alle bench, and greatly abusing themselves, at one mother Larkinge her house,) the said John Badcocke toke upon him and was called by the name of Mr. Parson, another taking upon him and was called by the name of churchwarden, another by the name of a sworne man, an other by the name of the honest men of the parishe, and another by the name of an apparitor; whose name was Thomas England: and thus

sytying abusing themselves like drunken sottes etc. \* \*  
[To] confese that [he] is hartely sorie in so disorderly  
behaving himself.—f. 102.

DCVII.

[15 Sept.]

*Contra Thomam Charvile et Johannem Bennet, de Rom-* Burying a  
*ford.*—Detected, that at the request of M<sup>ris</sup> Quarles [they] corps without  
did bury a maide servant of Mr. Quarles, without any ceremony.  
seremony, and not according to the communion booke,  
upon Thursday, being the v<sup>th</sup> of June (as we remember).  
Comparuit dictus Charvile et allegavit, that he being one  
that did help to make the grave etc., and that M<sup>ris</sup> Quarles  
did comaunde him to throw earth uppon her, & he de-  
maunded who shold bury her, Mr. Leche standing by  
answered all we here presente; who then threwe the earth  
on her & covered her. Unde dominus acceptavit confes-  
sionem etc. et monuit ad comparendum in proxima.—f. 148.

DCVIII.

[18 Sept.]

*Contra Thomam Newman, vicarium de Cannondon.*—Stat Relaxation of  
suspensus in non comparendo etc. Comparuit dictus Tho. suspension, on  
Newman et petiit beneficium absolucionis etc. Unde domi- payment of fees  
nus obtulit ei relaxacionem suspensionis, casu quo reddat of court.  
feoda curiæ debita etc.; quam expresse recusavit etc. \* \*  
Deinde solvens xviii*d.* expensis contumacie etc. et facta  
per eum fide etc. Dominus restituit.—f. 156.

DCIX.

[22 Oct.]

*Contra Johannem Hopkinson, parochiæ de Westham.*—Com- Nailing horns  
paruit dictus Hopkinson et fassus est, that he with others on the door of a  
were in the companie of a stranger, in the house of John jealous man.  
Ward of Westham, a vittelinge house, in the night time;  
and talking of Mr. Eborne, some said that he was jealious  
over his wif; the said stranger said yf he knewe where he  
dwelt, he would naile a paire of hornes at his doore; and  
in further talke this examinant said, that Robert Dickins

wold geve him a paier of hornes, and so did, & he nailed them at the said Mr. Eborns'dore \* \* —f. 166.

## DCX.

[22 Oct.]

Monition to desist from service, whilst excommunicate persons are present.

*Contra Johannem Serege, clericum, rectorem de Easthanfield.*— \* \* Dominus objecit, that he receaved excommunicated persons into the church. \* \* Dominus monuit ad similem [non] faciendum imposterum etc. and that yf he do knowe of anie excommunicated persons, or understand of anie to be in the church, after admonicion geven; yf they will [not] depart, he is to desyste; wheyther he be readinge of service, or in his sermon, sub pena juris etc. —f. 167.

## DCXI.

[16 Dec.]

Administering the communion and not receiving himself.

*Contra Magistrum Eborne, curatum de Westham.*—Notatur, that he hath ministered the communion and receaved not himself etc. \* \* Agnoscat culpam.—f. 182.

## DCXII.

[17 Feb.]

Not contributing to ringers.

*Contra Georgium Spenser, de Southbemflet.*—Detected, that he standeth excommunicate: and also for not contributinge towardes the maintainance of the ringers, on the joyfull day of her Maties raigne: being rated at *iiiiid.* Comparuit personaliter dictus Spenser, et introducto mandato etc. et allegavit se absolutum coram domino cancellario etc.: et quoad aliam detectionem, dominus monuit ad solvendam dictam *iiiiid.* gardianis, ad usum predictum; et insuper solvat *xiiid.* ad usum pauperum, pro negligentia etc.—f. 208 b.

## DCXIII.

[23 March.]

Monition not to teach men children above ten years old, without license.

*Contra Richardum Dawes et ejus uxorem, de Barking.*—Notatur, that his said wife techeth a skole and not lycensed. Comparuit Richardus Dawes maritus, et fassus est, that his wife teacheth some women and some men children to reade.

Unde dominus acceptavit [confessionem], et monuit quod imposterum abstineat; that [s]he shall not teache any man child above the age of x yeres, untill she shall be lawfully licensed, et eum dimisit.

## DCXIV.

[Eodem die.]

*Contra Johannem Eborne, curatum de Westham.*—Detected, Accepting money to marry dishonest persons. \* \* for that he useth to take money, for to marry folke that be dishonest, and before they be lawfully asked, according to the injunctions \* \* [Fassus est] detectionem viz. that the partie willingly for expedicion offered him iiis. to mary him; and also the parte was of Westham, but he know[th] not howe long; but some alleged that he was not there above iiii daies. Unde dominus acceptavit et eum injunxit, that he shall restore the said iiis. into the poore mens boxe; ac ut agnoscat culpam tempore divinorum etc.—f. 232.

## DCXV.

[12 May, 1590.]

*Contra gardianos pro anno preterito de Easthorndon.*—On making of churchwardens' account. Detected, for that they have not geven their accompt. Comparuerunt et fassi sunt, that they have not as yet geven their accompt, by reason the parishioners will not com to reckon with them. Unde dominus monuit, that they shall themselves, yf the parishe will not joyne with them, after notyce by them geven, make their accompt; & exhibit the same the next court.—f. 252 b.

## DCXVI.

[2 June.]

*Contra Henricum Kinge, de Haverdstocke, servientem Richardo Brocke.*—A tempter and inveigler of honest maidens. Detectum publica referente fama, that he ys a tempter & an inveigler of honest maidens, to comytt fornicacion and filthines. Et ulterius suspectus de incontinentia cum Anna Cherry. \* \* Negavit. \* \* Ad purgandum iiii<sup>ta</sup> manu vicinorum honestorum [etc.]—f. 265 b.

## DCXVII.

[4 June.]

Excommunica-  
tion for sub-  
traction of  
tythes.

*Contra Johannem Leeche de Hornechurch.*—Detected, that he nor his skollers do come orderly to his parishe church and stand excommunicate. Comparuit \* \* et allegavit, that truthe yt ys, that he com not [to] the parishe church of Hornechurch to service or sermon, but he and his scollers doe repaier to Romeford, to here the sermon there; and ys excommunicated at the suet of Mr. Lambert, vicar of Hornechurch, for withholding of tythes and not otherwise: and as he thyncketh he ys unjustly excommunicated: and that Mr. Lambert the vicar will not suffer him to come thither, by reason he standeth excommunicated, as Mr. Lambert saith.—f. 273 b.

## DCXVIII.

[1 July.]

Violation.

*Contra Johannam Somers, de Downham.*—[Dominus objecit quod commisit fornicationem,] ipsa respondente, that upon a certen working day, happening abowte Christmas last, this respondente beinge in a ploughe felde, servinge of her dames cattel, the said Ryce [viz. Rice Evans] came unto her and told her that she mighte now crye her harte owte, before anie bodye colde heere her crie, & so indeede as she saith he did violentlye abuse her bodye and committed fornication with her.—f. 284.

[The proceedings thereon are left unfinished.]

## DCXIX.

[28 July.]

Refusal to leave  
the church  
when de-  
nounced as ex-  
communicate.

[*Contra*] *Edmundum Wyland, de Chipping Ongar.*—Detected, for that he being denounced excommunicate, would not go out of the church, at evening praier; so that the minister was constrained to seace [cease] from service etc. [*Reservatur pena.*].—f. 301 b.

## DCXX.

[22 Sept.]

Pronubæ.

*Contra Johannem Powlten et Margaretam ejus uxorem,*

*parochie de Margetinge*.—Detected, that theie are vehemently suspected to be bawdes to their owne dawghter Marie.

[*In the margin is—"Ex." for excommunicati.*]

LIBER ACTORUM ex offic[io in] Archidiaconatu  
Essexie incipientium xix<sup>o</sup> Octobris anno 1590.

DCXXI.

[19 Nov.]

*Contra Robertum Reade, parochie de Chigwell*.—Detected, for that the said Roberte Reade expounded the Scriptures privatly, in the house of the said Mrs. Stonaire, synce Whytsontyde last past: and that yt ys not knowen whether the said Roberte Read be a lawfull minister and licensed to preache or noe. \* \* \* Being asked for his orders, he sheweth his orders of ministry under the seale of the Reverende Father in God Rich., Lord Bishop of Peterburrowghe, being date the ix<sup>th</sup> of Aprill, anno Domini 1587. Deinde dominus injunxit ei, to minister the sacramentes in the parishe church of Chigwell upon some Sondag, or hollyday, before the latter ende of January nexte; which the said Reade doth expresslye refuse to performe; saieing that he neither may nor will intrude himselfe to another mans charge. Being certified by Mr. Archdeacon that he will procure his lycens to minister the sacraments in Chigwell church, of the minister there, he notwithstandinge refuseth to administer the sacraments in Chigwell. Whereupon the judge doth suspende him from all exercise of his function and chatechisinge, untill he doo procure himselfe to be sufficiently lycensed by the Queenes Majestie, or my Lordes grace of Canterberye, or my Lorde Bisshopp of London, or one of the two Universities: and the judge doth further suspend him the said Reade from all function of his ministrye, untill he shall administer the sacraments in Chigwell church, and bringe unto the judge certificate thereof.—f. 22 b.

Monition to administer the sacraments.  
Refusal to intrude himself in that manner.

Suspension thereon.



## DCXXII.

[21 Nov.]

Refusal to re-  
ply to the judge  
in Latin.

*Contra Magistrum Wm. Pinder, clericum, rectorem de Haverdestocke.*—Quo die comparuit personaliter dictus W<sup>us</sup> Pinder, quocum dominus expostulavit in lingua Romana, ipso Pinder contumaciter recusante domino archidiacono respondere, in eadem lingua : et respondente se nolle in eadem lingua cum eo loqui in presenti. Tunc dominus archidiaconus ex eo quod dictus Pinder predicatur et ut asseruit, ad predicandum et proponendum verbum Dei licentiatur, et tamen secum expostulare in lingua Latina contumaciter recusavit, et sese etiam aliter contumaciter et nimis audaciter et loquaciter gessit, dominus [suspendit ab omni exercitio ministerii.] \* \* \* —f. 34.

Suspension.

## DCXXIII.

[16 Dec.]

Bribing the  
apparitor.

[*Contra Edwardum Eve, parochie Omnium Sanctorum Malden.*— \* \* \* Fassus est, that he gave xs. to Gilbert thapparitor to thend that he might not be called into this corte. \* \* \* —f. 51.

## DCXXIV.

[18 Jan.]

Letting the  
people depart  
from church at  
the time when  
an assessment  
was gathered.

*Contra Jonam Miles, de Raleighe.*—Detected, that he did unorderedlye, againste the churchwardens willes, lett forth the people, forth of the churche, the core beinge abowte the gatheringe of a seisement towards the repayinge of the glasse windowes. \* \* Negavit, that he did anie waye interupte or trowble the said churchwardens in the gatheringe of theyre seisement etc. Tunc dominus, cum monicione, to be of good behavior towards the churchw. et dimissit eum.—f. 57.

## DCXXV.

[6 May, 1591.]

Specimen ser-  
mon to be  
preached

[*Contra Amosim Lewis, curatum de Cranham.*— \* \* Fassus est, that he hathe expounded and is not yet licensed

thereto, but wold that Mr. Archdeacon would appoint some <sup>before the archdeacon.</sup> time that he might preache before his wor[ship,] and yf he should accepte of him he would request his wor[ship] to be meanes unto my Lord of London that he may be licensed to preache. [*A day appointed for the same.*—f. 113.

## DCXXVI.

[16 June.]

[*Contra*] *Johannem Woolbere et Ameam Gardiner, de Blackmore.*—Detectum hiis verbis viz. for that they fall out <sup>Talebearers, &c.</sup> and fight in the street; and go from house to house, with tales to make discord betwene neighbors. Ex.—f. 137 b.

## DCXXVII.

[12 July.]

*Contra Johannem Burr Generosum [etc.] de Barking.*—<sup>Monition to receive according to the book of Common Prayer.</sup> \* \* Respondebat, that he hath received according to his conscience; and further he confesseth that his conscience will not permit him to receive, according to the booke of Common Praier: but he allegeth, that he cometh to his parish church of Barking, to here divine service. Unde dominus monuit, that he shall receive the communion in his parish church of Barking, according to the book of Common Praier, before Christmas next. \* \* —f. 147.

## DCXXVIII.

[Eodem die.]

*Contra Magistrum Gage et uxorem, de Laighton.*—<sup>\* \* Fine to the Exchequer for recusancy.</sup> [His servant allegeth] that his master is indited to pay unto her Ma<sup>ty</sup> as a recusand, viz. xx*li.* every month: and for proffe wherof, he exhibiteth a talles for the paiement thereof out of the Exchequer, and also an acquittance for the payment of one halfe nowe past. Unde dominus acceptavit et decrevit supercedendum fore, donec in proxima curia \* \* —f. 149 b.

## DCXXIX.

[Eodem die.]

[*Contra*] *Magistrum Thomam More et ejus uxorem, de*

On refusal to attend church, by a person who had suffered imprisonment for that reason.

*Laighton.*—Comparuit personaliter dictus Mr. More et fassus est, that truth it is, that he hath not receaved the communion, and hath not come to church, to here divine service of longe time: and allegeth that he hath ben imprisoned in divers places, for that his conscience wold not permit him to come to church & receive the communion: and doth nowe remaine her Ma<sup>ties</sup> prisoner, and goeth abroad being bond to answere, when the counsell shall call for him; and therefore ought not to be further any waies molested, as appereth by a warrant under the hand of the Right Honorable Mr. Anthony Astley, one of the clarkes of the counsell: and that he is also indited to her Majesty & his goods and lands is ceised to her Ma<sup>tie</sup>; and therefore requireth to be dismissed. \* \* [*Ad comparendum et ad videndum ulteriorem processum fieri.*]—f. 149 b.

DCXXX.

[Eodem die.]

Warrant to excuse attendance at church, &c.

*Contra dominam Margeriam Throgmorton parochie de Westham.*]—[Similiter.] Quo die comparuit Mr. Ricardus Swarton et nomine dicti domine Throgmorton fassus est, that the presentment is true; but allegeth that the said lady his mistres, hath a sufficient warrant, to dispense both for herself and for her whole howsehold servantes; that they, nor eyther of them, shall not be trobled by the ordinary of the place, or any other whatsoever; but only to be at the counsell's commandment, whensever they shalbe called: as appeareth by a warrant from the said counsell. \* \* [Dominus] decrevit supercedendum fore donec de novo presentatur.—f. 150.

DCXXXI.

[13 July.]

Not visiting the sick, &c. Suspected of papistry.

*Contra Magistrum Clipsam, rectorem de Stanford le Hope.*—Detected, that he visiteth not the sicke; when he is absent he seldom leaveth any to serve the cure in his absence; he & his wif very often departe the church in sermon tyme: wherefore they are suspected to favore the popishe religion. Prox.—f. 155 b.

## DCXXXII.

[26 Oct.]

*Contra Joannem Fryday alias Wright, de Curringham.*—Detected, that in the time of her widowehood she defyled her body, by common fame. Comparuit Christopherus Fryday maritus dicte Joanne et nomine dicte conjugis sue, negavit detectionem: et ulterius allegavit se esse conventum coram domino commissario Essex, et exhibuit quendam actum sub manu propria Thome More, actuarii dictorum commissariorum, ut ibidem assignandum ad se purgandum de crimine istius etc. Unde dominus decrevit dictam Joanam Fryday excommunicandam fore. \* \* —f. 196 b.

[25 Nov.]

[*Contra Eandem.*]— \* \* [Dominus absolvit eam] [she] saith that she was presented only by evill report of one Gabriell Holt, late of the same parishe, who was a suiter unto her in the way of marriedg; and in that she liked not of him, he very malisiously did slander this respondent, and said that he did defile this respondentes body; and he himself byd one of the sidemen presente this respondent therefore. \* \* [*Ad exhibendum certificatorium honeste conversationis sue.*]—f. 213 b.

## DCXXXIII.

[18 Dec.]

*Lodowicum Billinges, de Barkinge.*— \* \* \* Objectum Failing in pur-  
per dominum, that he hath failed in his purgacion \* \* gation, not  
[Allegavit] that he is a very poore man and not able to having the  
procure his neighbours to come to the cort and beare their means of bear-  
charges. \* \* [To acknowledge his fault, &c.] ing the charges.

LIBER ACTORUM ex officio domini Archidiaconi Essexie  
1591.

DCXXXIV.

2 Maii, 1592.

On thanks-  
giving.

[*Contra*] *uxorem Roberti Aylet, parochie de Hornchurch.*—  
Detected, that she never gave thanks after the delivery of  
two children, and after the delivery of the third she came  
to geve thancks, without any other woman with her, to  
the offence of her neighbors.—f. 55 b.

DCXXXV.

5 Maii.

Confession of  
bigamy.

*Johannem Tytman, de Woodham Mortimer.*—Detected, for  
that he confesseth himself to have two wyves living, and for  
not receaving the communion at Easter last, for not coming  
orderly to church, and for a brawler and skowlder w<sup>th</sup> his  
neighbours. Ex.—f. 67 b.

DCXXXVI.

2 Maii.

Penance.

*Contra Willielmum Peacocke, de Leighton.*— \* \* \* The  
said Wm. Peacocke shall prepare himselfe to receave the  
holie communion with the whole congregacion, or with so  
many of them as then shall happen to receave: and when  
the whole companie of communicantes are gathered together  
in the quier, and before the communion be administered,  
he the said Wm. Peacocke shall publicquely after the minis-  
ter (in parte of his punishement for his said offence) con-  
fesse that he hath greviuslie offended the majestie of  
Almightie God, and deserved his wrath and hevie judg-  
ment, for his lewde offence, by him wickedlie committed  
with the foresaid Alice Stane: for the which he shall con-  
fesse himselfe hartely sorye; desiringe Allmightie God in  
mercy to accepte of his penitencye and contrycon, and to  
pardon his said offence and vouchsafe in mercie to receave  
him into the number of his elect: promisinge that by the

helpe of God he will never committ the like offence againe ; also he shall desyer all good people, then there presente, or wheresoever eles, whom he by his evell example hath offended, to pardon and forgive him: and lastlie shall entreate the people all to praie unto Almightye God for and with him, and shall after the minister saie the Lordes praier *Our Father*, &c. \* \* \* —f. 70 b.

## DCXXXVII.

. 1 Junii.

*Magistrum Tho. Spackman, de Chigwell.*— \* \* Dictus On excuse from office of churchwarden. Spackman allegavit, that he is above lxx<sup>em</sup> yeres old, and weeke in body, and not able to execute the office of a churchwarden. Unde dominus acceptavit eumque in hac parte dimisit, et decrevit novum gardianum eligendum et jurandum.—f. 74.

## DCXXXVIII.

3 Junii.

*William Hylls, de Sandon.*—Detect, to be a very lewde Ill-treating wife. and uncharitable man with his wif, and hath used her most ungodly ; not only by refusinge her company, but also by beating her most cruelly, without any pittie or compassion. Quo die comparuit et fassus est, that he upon occasion that his wif had beated and missused his syster, and some fatherlesse children, whom he kepethe in his house ; he gave her viii strokes with a wand : for the which he is sory for now, and promiseth never to use himself in like sort hereafter. [*To acknowledge his fault.* ]—f. 83 b.

## DCXXXIX.

[30 Oct.]

*Contra Willielmum Whelpdale, curatum de Rothinge Abbas.* Monition to study theology. Comparuit et dominus monuit eum ad exercendum se studiis et exercitiis theologicis, et ad ostendendum M<sup>ro</sup> Page rectori rectorie de Rothinge Abbas predicte, easdem exercitationes, quibuslibet tribus mensis in scriptis ; et sub manu ejusdem M<sup>ri</sup> Page certificandum domino archidiacono, seu ejus officiali \* \* \* —f. 114 b.



## DCXL.

[18 Nov.]

Abusing the  
parson.

*Contra Zachariam Some, de Sandon.*—Detectum per gardianos, that he hathe uncharitablye abused their parson, for that the said Zacharye called him prattling foole, for preaching against dronkenes; saing moreover, that he could, if he had authoritye within a fortnight space, make as good a sermon as he: [also] that he & William Reynold of Westhanfeild did unreverentlie behave themselves in the church of Sandon, upon a Saterdaie at night, being the xxvii<sup>th</sup> daie of Maye, by throwing of pesokes at the head of the sexten & thereby brake his head. Ex.—f. 125.

Irreverence.

## DCXLI.

[19 Jan.]

Refusal to say  
the command-  
ments.

*Ricardum Brett, de [Friering].*—Detectum per gardianos, that he refused to saye the ten commandentes etc. \* \* Fassus est, \* \* [To acknowledge his fault.]

## DCXLII.

[20 Feb.]

Blasphemy,  
&c.

*Carolus Payne, de Buttesburye.*—Detected, that he liveth very disorderly, nether frequenting his parish church, nether in any order emongest his neighbours; but will most unreverentlie blaspheme the name of God, by cursing & swearing, even at his owne mother. \* \* \* [He confessed the same, and was admonished to acknowledge his fault, and ask his mother's forgiveness.]—f. 168.

## DCXLIII.

[Eodem die.]

Easter offer-  
ings.

*Contra Edwardum Crispe, de Hockley.*—Detected, that he dwelling in Walleetts, who is reported to be of the parish of Hockley, and hath used (as we are informed) aforetime, to paye his offering for himself & his wife to our minister at Easter; he neither the last Easter paid his offering, nor since that time, hathe bene at our cherche. Preconisato, venit et promisit dictus Crispe in posterum frequentare

eandem ecclesiam, et solvere oblaciones etc. et dominus eum dimisit.—f. 171.

## DCXLIV.

[20 March.]

*Contra Jasperum Dormer Generosum, de Stanford le Hope.* <sup>Marrying wife in her 'mask.'</sup>  
—Detected \* \* for marieng his wife in their parish church in her mask and for having of twoe wyves alyve at once & that he was never divorced from her. \* \* Prox.

## DCXLV.

[25 May, 1593.]

*Contra Robertum Hunter, rectorem de Easthorndon.*—De- <sup>Charge of bigamy against a rector.</sup>  
tected, that there is a common fame that Mr. Hunter oure parson hath twoe wyves alyve. Comparuit personaliter dictus Mr. Hunter et objecto per dominum articulo etc. fassus est, that in the time of Quene Maries raigne, before he was made minister, he was married to one Margaret Wattes; \* \* and that she died as he hath heard about xii yeares agoe, last past, and that within iii or iiij yeares after her departure from him he was married to Elizabeth Turner, of Southweld, in the parishe churche there; with whome he lived xxviii yeares, and that he married with the said Elizabeth Turner, the said Margaret Wattes his first wife then living; for that he saith that the said Margaret Wattes, was then the lawfull married wife of Richard Mingsden of Maidston, in the county of Kent. \* \* Ad videndum ulteriorem processum fieri.

[Further] detected that he geveth ill example of life by <sup>Ill-treating wife.</sup> unquiett living, beating & cheening of his wife to a post, and is a slaunderer of his neighbours.

[To bring the L. Bishoppe Grindall's order for the allowance of his second marriage.—f. 223.]

## DCXLVI.

[6 June.]

*Magistrum Bainbrigg, ministrum de Norton Mansfeld.*— <sup>Not burying the dead according to the</sup>  
Detected, for burieing the dead corps of one father Cooke

book of Com-  
mon Prayer.

not saing servyce in manner & forme as it is in the book of Common Prayer prescribed. \* \* Fassus est, that he did not goe to the grave according to the book of Common Prayer, by reason of a greate winde, & he not being well durst not goe into the danger of taking cold in the ayre; but he saith that he redd the whole servyce, according to the booke of Common Prayer. Unde dominus injunxit ei, that on Sunday next he shall acknowledge that he hathe omitted his dewty, in not burieng the dead, according to the order prescribed \* \* —f. 217.

## DCXLVII.

[28 April, 1595. MR. JOHN BOWYER, LL.B. official.]

Encourage-  
ment to return  
to sin.

[*Contra*] *Richardum Thornton, de [Westham]*.—We present Ric. Thornton, for that upon Sondaie being the first daie of December last, he did publicly encourage an adulteres, (who was then doing penance) to goe forward & to returne againe to her former folly, the morrowe after, as freshe as ever she did: who being reproved by one of the sidemen, for giving such lewd counsell and encouragement to sinne, hath very uncharitably abused the said sideman, with reprochefull speaches.—f. 16.

[*Excommunicated. Absolved* f. 70 b.

## DCXLVIII.

[*Eodem die.*]

Refusal to be  
ordered by the  
churchwar-  
dens.

*Henricum Clary, et uxorem, de Lamborn*.—We present etc. which will not be ordered in the church by us the churchwardens & doth use us with very hard speeches \* \* Dominus habita monitione etc. dimisit etc.—f. 18 b.

## DCXLIX.

[*Eodem die.*]

Parishioners  
die and remain  
unburied.

*Mr. Shawe, rectorem de Chinkford*.—Detected, that the minister hathe not served the cure emongest us above iii Sondaies since Christ-tide: parishioners dye & some are faine to staye still unburied till a minister be gotten. \* \* —f. 19.

## DCL.

[29 April.]

*Joannam Madyson, de [Buttesbury].*—Detected, that she <sup>Assault of</sup> unreverently abused Mr. Simons our minister in striking <sup>minister.</sup> him upon his head in suche sorte that she brake the same & made the blode runne downe. \* \* Dominus decrevit dictam Margaretam excommunicandam fore.—f. 24 b.

## DCLI.

[6 May.]

*Contra Hamonem Carter, parochie de Easthorndon.*— \* \* Receiving offering and not allowing the person to communicate. [He] saith as followeth viz. that he the said Carter on Good Fridaie laste, came to Mr. Hunter their parson of Easthornedon, and gave him *vid.* for his owne offering and for his wife, & Faith Burre his maide servant; and told Mr. Hunter, that he & his wife & his maide servant did meane to receyve the holy communion, on the next morrowe; and that Mr. Hunter aunswered the said Carter that his wife and his maid shold receyve, but he wold not receyve the said Carter to communicate &c.: and then the said Carter (as he saith) said to Mr. Hunter, the *iid.* which I have paid you for my offering, I pray you give me againe; and Mr. Hunter said no, I may take my offerings, though you do not receyve \* \* \* [*Ordered to receive.*].—f. 31 b.

## DCLII.

[15 July.]

*Joannam Wheeler, de [Dengie].*—For brawlinge in the church on Whitsondaye last before the comunion, & for <sup>Not eating the bread at the communion.</sup> that shee did not eat the bread of the communion, but put it in her pocket at Easter last was twelvemonth. \* \* \* [*Reserved.*].—f. 57 b.

## DCLIII.

[13 Jan. 1595.]

*Willielmum Foster, de Barking.*—We present William Foster of our towne, upon the suspicion of a most shamefull matter of incest, with his owne daughter. The ground of

which suspicion we build not onely upon common report, but upon the assertion of honest women, who have had the examination of the young wenche. \* \* [*Ad purgandum se.*—f. 106 b.

## DCLIV.

[10 Feb.]

Making a pew. *Matheum Everedd, de [Rettingden]*.—Detected, that there is a pewe made by Mathew Everedd & it did breed contention. \* \* [he saith] that there is no contention nowe for it.—f. 113 b.

## DCLV.

[11 March.]

Defiling a stile. *Johannem Sowthend, de [Warley magna]*.—We present one John Sowthen butcher, for that he beastly & lewdly did defyle a stile leading to the churche on New Yeares daie at night. Prox.—f. 123.

## DCLVI.

[15 May, 1596.] Coram venerabili viro Magistro WIL-  
LIELMO TABOR, Sacre Theologie Bacc. Archidiacono  
Essex.

Coming to  
churchinman's  
apparel.

*Joannam Towler, de Downham*.—Detected, for that she came into our church in manes apparell upon the Sabaoth daie in the servyce time. Prox.—f. 149 b.

## DCLVII.

[Eodem die.]

Rector sus-  
pected of in-  
continency.

*Magistrum Robertum Hewetson, rectorem de Pitzye*.—We present Mr. Robert Hewetson our parson, for that he is suspected upon a cryme to live incontinently with Ellen Tate his maide. \* \* Dominus absolvit et restituit.—f. 150 b.

## DCLVIII.

[Eodem die.]

Keeping a  
house of  
bawdry.

*Johannem Manister, et uxorem, de Woodhamferris*.—Detected, for that they kepe an open house of bawdry.—f. 150 b.

## DCLIX.

[5 July.]

*Uxorem Mauricii Jones, de Barking.*—We present the wife of Maurice Jones, who being sent unto by one Robgentes wife to praye her to releive & helpe the said Robgentes wife with some medecine for the colick; she the said Maurice Jones wife fell downe upon her knees, & after many curses & evill speches, praied, that the said Robgentes wife, might never be cured; but that she might abide the extremest tormentes that ever was abidden: since which time, the said Robgentes wife hath lien, & yet dothe lye in great misery, and can find no ease.—f. 164.

Praying that a person might abide the most extreme tormentes.

## DCLX.

[30 July.]

*Johannem Gillman, de Stanford le Hope.*—Detected, for that he refuseth to paie the sexten his wages, holding two farmes in his occupacon: and also for that he sett in another to ring the knell & to make the grave, when his child was buried. Comparuit et objecta detectione etc. he saith that he hath paid it to him that he did take to be sexten etc. Unde dominus monuit eum ad solvendum salarium juxta consuetudinem.—f. 178 b.

On payment of sexton.

## DCLXI.

, [14 Jan.]

*Magistrum Johannem Fabian, rectorem ecclesie, parochialis de Warley Magna.*—Notatur publica fama, that on Sunday at night the second of January last he did to the scandall of his calling and offence of good Christians behave himselfe very dissolutely and wantonly in the parish of Kelvedon etc. in taking upon him to be a lord of misrule or Christmas lorde etc. emongest certein yongelings etc. \* \* [Suspended.]—f. 244.

Rector taking upon him to be a lord of misrule.



*[The following curious letter is inserted between folio 253 and 254, where the said vicar is mentioned as being restored from suspension.]*

(In dorso.)

To the Right Worshipfull and his singuler good frend  
MR. TABOR, Archdeacon of Essex, give these.

Right worshipfull my humble duty remembered &c.  
Wheras heretofore I have bene with other of my frendes  
an earneste suter to your wor. at sundre tymes, on the  
behalf of Mr. Mercer vicare of Little Wakeringe, for many  
& sundre causes to that ende as I then thought, to doe  
hym good, & that he wold have bene reclaymed and brought  
to a new life, and to have forsaken his old filthie and  
former lothsome kinde of dronken and other evell and  
wicked condicions, which is more fitt for ruffins and var-  
lettes to use, then for one of his profession eyther to  
think of, or to use, the company of any that useth such  
kinde of bad liffe, as he hath used of late, and specially  
sence the tyme that your wor. did last helpe hym out of  
his troubles before Mr. Chauncelour at Easter last (sence  
which tyme he hath given himself to all kinde of badnes,)  
many other good friendshipps have your wor. done for  
hym, but he hath greatly abused your wor<sup>ps</sup> good & mylde  
lenitye and your fatherly good admonicions by you given  
unto hym, many tymes, and ever bearing with hym (as I  
well knowe) with his necligence & his behaviours, thinking  
(as I ame suer your wor. did) that he wold become a newe  
man, and he that shuld not be quite put downen by those  
of whose complayntes you have hard, which neyther I  
thinke loved your wor. nor hym. But seinge that neyther  
your good and godly instructions, nor all your gentlenes,  
myldnes nor long sufferance, nor no others goodwill and  
friendship will do no good of hym, but rather maketh  
hym worse, and more shamles now then before, I trust  
your wor. shall do great honour to Almightye God and his  
Churche, great good to Christe Gospell, great pleasure to  
the congregacion where he now is and much ease to the  
common wealth where he now nere dwelleth (because malt

is so deare) and reasonable peace to all his neybouris if that your wor. wold be a meane to avoyde or gitt hym out of the ministrye, which he doth most shamefully stayne, for I think in my owen conscience ther was, nor is not a worse that reigned in Godes Church, since the tyme of Hildibrand alias Fierbrand, called Gregory the vii<sup>th</sup>, who was a bastard, and when he was christened he did beraye the font &c. This Mercer, although I think he was not a bastard borne, yet a bastard in Gods Church, and defiled the same with his evell maners as bad and as fowle as Hildibrand did the font (for with greffe I speak yt) if not servyng his cure & function in his parishe tenne Sondaye[s] sence Easter last, in being dronke at the least xxx<sup>i</sup> tymes sence that tyme, & when he is droncke in singing most filthye and bawdye songes, in being madde when he is drunk. Hallowing and whisseling up and down the streates to the great trouble of his neybouris, in monstrous beating his wiffe, in brawling with all the ale wiffes, for more drinke when God knoweth he hath to[o] muche and yett he is in most of their dettes, in drinking in his own church porch with roges & beggars a hole daye together, and his ordinary companie is tynkers & pedlers. He did drink at Reylygh this somer xvi<sup>d</sup>. in sallett oyle and of his word and promyse most unfaythfull and frevolous with many hundreths more falts. But these is to[o] many at the first, which I ame ashamed to rehearse to your wor. because I have bene a speaker & writer for hym too often, which I crave pardon of you, for I thought yt wold have bene for his amendment and for my childrens sake which he then did teache (or shuld have done) but I and they maye curse hym for their lost tyme they spent with hym. He doth much bragg (as I understande) that he can have my letter to your wor. of his good behaviour. If I shuld so abuse your wor. & presume so to doe I were not worthie to be counted a Cristian man, but a rakeshame. I knowing so much as I doe of hym that I shuld writ to your wor. or any other that hathe to deale in Godes Church in such cause: but I will to my pore [power] do all I maye or can procure to roote & weede out of Gods Church suche catterpillers or spiders which doth nothing but suck the

swete & spynneth suche webbes as maketh the enemyes of Crist Gospell to laught and gere to se[e] such ministers, but I leave all these matters to your wor. godly and grave consideracon committinge the same to the tuicion and saffe kepinge of the Almightye who ever preserve you and yours. Barlinge this xx<sup>th</sup> of December, 1596.

Your wor. at comaundment,

[*Vide 15 May, 1601.*]

JO. BUNTING.

## DCLXII.

[29 April, 1597.]

On baptism of child.

*Janam uxorem Johannis Minors, de Barking.*—We present Jane the wife of John Minors for keping her child unbaptised a whole moneth. \* \* \*

Feasting at a tavern when she came to be churchd.

[Also] detected, for that she very unwomanlike, came to be churchd at the end of the said moneth, together with her child to be baptized, and feasted at a taverne 4 or 5 howres in the forenone: and [in the] afternone came to the church, rather to be seene, then upon any devotion, as it seemed; for whilst the minister was burieng a corps, she went owte of the church, unchurchd, unto the taverne againe. And when she was spoken unto by the clerk to returne to church againe & to give God thanks after her deliverye, she answered it was a ceremonye. The which abuses of the said Jane, seeing they are so publique & notoriouse, & the example unpunished, maye prove dangerous, we praye that your w. wold enjoyne, that her satisfaction maye be also publique; to the content of many of good worth. \* \* \* Dominus commisit vices suas Magistro Wignall et aliis per eum convocandis ad audiendum et terminandum etc.—f. 2.

Committal of the power of examining, &c. to deputies.

## DCLXIII.

[12 July.]

Rhyme concerning the

*Thomam Ellis, de Boreham.*—Detected, he hathe reported a ryme upon names of sondry men & women in our parishes,

but will not beknoweledg [who] made it nor of whome girl of the side-man.  
 he had it. \* \* Fassus est, that he had a ryme of the  
 girle of the sideman etc. Unde dominus habita monicione  
 etc. eum dimisit etc.—f. 51 b.

## DCLXIV.

[13 July.]

*Johannem Stud, Sancti Petri in Mawldon.*—Detected, that Throwing stones and breaking the church tiles.  
 he did uppon the vi daye of June beinge Sondaie, did  
 stande in the streete & throwe stones, which fell uppon the  
 churche & brake the tyles of the church. Cit[atus].—f. 56.

## DCLXV.

[9 Nov.]

*Richardum Swetnam, de Ingatestone.*—We etc. doe pre- Tolling the bell for a person drunken.  
 sent Richard Sweetenam as author of disorder in owre said  
 towne; in that when one was drunck, he caused the bell  
 to be touled. \* \* He saith that there was a frend of  
 his which had an impostume broken on him, the night  
 before he caused the bell to be towled for him, & found  
 him withowt breath, & then he caused him to be towled  
 for etc. [To acknowledge his fault at morning prayer].—  
 f. 119.

## DCLXVI.

[11 Jan.]

*William Haynes, de Sowthbemflete.*—Detected, for that Breaking the Sabbath by dancing with minstrels.  
 upon Sondaie before Michaelmas in the time of afternoone  
 service he was dancing with minstrells on a grene by Thomas  
 Harris his howse.—f. 140.

## DCLXVII.

[26 April, 1598.]

*Thomam Browne, de Lees magna.*—Detected the v<sup>th</sup> daye Retiring from the church to fight.  
 of Marche being the Lords daye, being bothe of them in  
 the churche, in the time of the sermon, went forthe into  
 a meadowe & there did fight: for many in the churche  
 did here them & went forth: which was a great disquyeting  
 to the parishe. [To acknowledge his fault].—f. 212.

## DCLXVIII.

[Eodem die.]

A common  
baretter.

*Magistrum Goffe, vicarium de Waltham magna.*—Detected, that he was indited at the syses for a common baretter as the reporte goeth. \* \* Negavit articulum. \* \* Ad videndum ulteriorem processum.—f. 214 b.

## DCLXIX.

[Eodem die.]

Profaning the  
Sabbath by  
playing at foot-  
ball.

*Hugonem Bailye, de [Badowe magna].*—Detected, that in the tyme of evening praier he was in the churchyard with a foote ball under his arme, by meanes whereof the yowthes of other parishes there was so muche noyse emongest them, that the minister could not be heard, to the prophaning of the Saboth daie. \* \* he saith that he went owt & took the ball from the yowthes & was coming into the church. Unde dominus habita monitione eum dimisit.—f. 216 b.

## DCLXX.

[23 May.]

Refusal to pro-  
ceed to mar-  
riage on ac-  
count of in-  
firmity of the  
party.

*Willielmum Walford, de Sowthfjambridge.*— \* \* Fassus est, that he was asked in the church and had purposed to have married the said Joane Packman, but for secrete causes, & specially for that the said Joane is not sound in body, nor hathe any haire on her head, he will not procede any furdur etc. Unde dominus consideratis allegatis decrevit supersedendum etc. donec etc.—f. 247 b.

## DCLXXI.

[19 July, 1598. Coram REPENTO SAVAGE, officiali.]

Theft.

*Johannem Gutterig, de [Prittlewell].*—Detected, for stealing woodd of Sondaie the vii of May, the yeare above 1598. Quesitus.—f. 37 b.

## DCLXXII.

[20 July.]

Harbouring a  
papistical  
woman.

*Willielmum Humphrye, de Walthamstowe.*—Detected, for harboring an old papistical woman, & thought to be a com-

mon messenger betwene recusants, to the discontent of her Majesties subjects: & a secrete slanderer of the Quenes proceedinges. Comparuit et objecta detectione, he saith he hathe one Welch Nan his servant.—f. 48 b.

## DCLXXIII.

[9 Aug.]

*Edwardum Pharowe, de Hoklye.*—Detected, very negligent in coming to church, who upon the first Sunday in Lent in the afternone had company at his howse dauncing; he plaing upon his musicall instruments. So both he & they were absent from evening prayer, passing awaye that afternoone, he in plaing & others in dauncing: but who they were, we knowe not for certein.—f. 66.

Passing the Sunday in playing and dancing.

## DCLXXIV.

[12 April, 1599.]

*Thomam Ward, de Purleigh.*—We present Thomas Ward, as by reporte, to seke helpe at sorcerers handes. Fassus est, that he having lost certein cattell & suspecting that they were bewitched, he went to one Tailer in Thaxted, a wysard, to knowe whether they were bewitched or not, & to have his helpe. [*To acknowledge that he is heartily sorry for the same.*]—f. 198.

Seeking the aid of a wizard.

## DCLXXV.

[Eodem die.]

*Magistrum Jacobum Wallinger, curatum de Laindon Hilles.*—We do present one Mr. James Wallinger oure curate, for that there is a common fame and reporte with and amongest honest & credible persons, that the said James Wallinger liveth incontinentlye with one Suzan Hales, single woman, of the parishe of Graies Thorock; and that there is a vehement suspicion of incontinency of him, in that behalf; for that (as it is reported) he was taken in bed with her.—f. 198 b.

Incontinency of curate.

\* \* Fassus est, that there is suche a fame & reporte within the said parishe of Laindon Hilles & that he was taken in bedd with the said Susan in his owne howse in



Laindon Hilles aforesaid about the second daie of Marche last past betwene tenne & twelve of the clock in the night time by the conspiracy of others.

A blasphemmer,  
&c.

[Also] we doe present the said James Wallinger to be a common swearer & a blasphemmer of the name of God, and to be a man whose tounge is full of ribaldrye & filthy speeches; to the greate discreditt of his coate & calling, & to the evill ensample of others. Item, we present the same James Wallinger for a common brawler & a debate maker, & a sower of sedition, betwene neighbor & neighbor. [*Suspended.*].—f. 199.

## DCLXXVI.

Minister boasting of his drunkenness.

*M<sup>rum</sup> Jacobum Boxer, de Woodham Ferris.*—Detected per gardianos de Danburye, that he boasted of his drunkenness and said that he was fitter to be a drunken companion then a minister.—f. 200.

## DCLXXVII.

[2 May.]

A drunken frolick.

*Nicolaum Marden, de Curringham.*—Detected, that he & one John Smith of the parishe of Curringham & one Richard Cottes of Orsett & George Landishe of Barkinge, after greate abuse in drinkinge, did at theire parting, take with them into the feilde, at the townes ende where they ment to parte, foure or sixe potts of beere; & there setting them downe, did themselves upon theire bare knees humbly kneele downe, & kysinge the potts & drinking one to the other, & prayed for the health of all true & faythfull drunckards; & especiallie for Mr. Andrew Browghton, as they said the maintainer & upholder of all true & faythfull drunckards; and having done they kissed ech other & for a memorye of their worthy acte did every man make his marke or name, upon an ashen tree, that stood there by them. [*Ad agnoscendam culpam.*].—f. 212.

## DCLXXVIII.

[Eodem die.]

*T. Marlborowe, de Purleigh.*—Detected, for misdemeanor

in the churche in time of common praier & the sermon especiallye upon Easter daye after he had received the holy communion. Ex.—f. 219 b. Misdemeanour  
in church.

## DCLXXIX.

*Johannem Squire, et uxorem, de Buttesbury.*—Notatur de incontinentia ante nuptias \* \* He saith that being contracted to her he staid to goe to her frends in Cambridgeshere to gett her portion before he wold have married her [etc.] \* \* Ad agnoscendam culpam. \* \* —f. 219 b. Ante-nuptial  
incontinence.

## DCLXXX.

[14 June.]

*Jacobum Warly, de Billirica.*—Detectum per gard. de Graies Thorock, That whereas of long time, long before the memory of any man living, there were belonging to our parishe churche 40 mother shepe; the benefitt whereof shold yearely redound to the releiff of the poore, in beare bread & cheese; yet one James Warlye of Billirica, confederating with one Robert Attridg, of Kent, hathe made away the said sheepe, contrary to the will of the dead: whereby the poore are robbed of their dewe.—f. 266. Taking away  
church stock.

## DCLXXXI.

[2 July.]

*Robertum Hanger, de Waltham Stowe.*—Detected, for that he cometh very seldome to church, & is indebted to the parishe, for ringing of a knell, at the death of his son xvid.; which he obstinately refuseth to pay, contrary to order & custome. \* \* Dominus monuit eum ad solvendum. \* \* —f. 272 b. On payment  
for knell.

## DCLXXXII.

[3 Sept.]

*W<sup>m</sup> Farrington, clericum de Chipin Ongar.*—We certifie youe that one William Farrington clerk, as he saith, liveth idly in our towne without serving any cure, contrary to the articles & lawes ecclesiastical. Item, we present him Living idly, not  
serving a cure,  
&c.

for not receiving the sacrament in our church for three quarters of this yeare, of purpose going out of the towne every communion to avoid it. Item, we present him to be a malicious, contentious & uncharitable person, & a railer of our minister & of most of the inhabitants that professe religion; calling them all heretiks, hypocrits such as he hathe ever & in everye place detested, clownes etc. Item, we present him for his often absence frome praiers on the Saboth daies, in contempt of our minister, & for his usuall departure owte of the church, at such time as he cometh before the people be dismissed, contrary to the articles.—f. 315 b.

## DCLXXXIII.

[16 Oct.]

Marrying under a bush.

*David Harbert, et uxorem, de Eastham.*—Detected, that he & Elizabeth his wife, for that a common fame hath bene raised by Katherine Gawen, of Eastham aforesaide widowe, that the saide David Harbert & Elizabeth his wife were marryed under a bushe; the said Elizabeth answering to the same—Did my husband tell you that? \* \* Prox.—f. 358 b.

## DCLXXXIV.

[28 Nov. 1599.]

Laying a load of broom in the church.

*Willielmum Phillipps, Sancti Petri in Mawldon.*—Detected, for that he hathe laid a lode of brome, or there aboute, in our church, very noysum & unsemelye, withowte oure consent. Prox.—f. 25.

## DCLXXXV.

[17 June, 1600.]

On reception of account of the churchwarden.

*Johannem Tiball, [et alios] de Ramsden Bellowse.*— \* \* [non receperunt] compotum Nicholai Tabor et Fuller nuper gardianorum [ibidem] \* \* they saye they did not receive the accompt offered by the said Nicholas Tabor, for that he was not chosen by their parson. \* \* Ad videndum ulteriorem processum fieri etc.—f. 123.

## DCLXXXVI.

[Between folios 161 and 162 is the following certificate.]

Bowers Gifforde 30 Julie a<sup>o</sup> 1600.

I certifie by these presents that Joane Milderbe of the parish aforesaid did all the time of divine service & of the sermon stand in a white sheete, but would not confesse her fault, although I persuaded earnestly so to do. Not confessing fault.

Per me GEORGIUM CLIDWELL pastorem ibidem.

JOHN ASHEWELL.

## DCLXXXVII.

[26 Sept.]

*Richardum Prentyce, de Eastilberye.*—We upon the report of the sexton with other doe present Richard Prentyce [and three others] for carieng William Goodin upon the old hearse into the church yard & John Jobson for aiding in ringing the bells.—f. 194. Misbehaving in church.

## DCLXXXVIII.

[22 Oct.]

*Thomam Peryn, de Rayleighe.*—Detected, for a common drunkard & a reylour & chyder to the greife of the Godlie & greate danger of his soule. Prox.—f. 213 b.

## DCLXXXIX.

*Georgium Rodgers, de eadem.*—Detected, that he hath married a wife beinge excommunicated aboute Laindon, never regardinge the lawes of God.—f. 214. Marrying a wife, being excommunicate.

## DCXC.

[20 Oct.]

*Willielmum Wallis, et uxorem, de Stanford Rivers.*—Detected, for that they have made their habitacion in the south porch of the parishe church, & therewithall he dothe not otherwise provide; but hathe suffered his wife to travaill in childbirth therein & to continue there her whole moneth. Lodging in the church porch.

\* \* Fassus est.—f. 232.

## DCXCI.

13 Jan. 1600.

Lying with his mother. *Edwardum Saunders, de Stambridge magna.*—Detected, that he hathe often lyen with his owne mother an olde woman to the greate offence of many. Quesit.—f. 10.

## DCXCII.

[15 May, 1601.]

Excommunicate person ministering the sacraments. *Magistrum Mercer, vicarium de Wakering parva.*—Detected, that beinge excommunicated, he did administer the communion at Easter last & received others thereunto; and did also administer the sacrament of baptisme, beinge required & admonished that he should not doe the same, viz. the sacrament of baptisme; & that he administring the communion on Sundaye laste, was dronken before he went to bed.—f. 112 b.

## DCXCIII.

[Eodem die.]

Being privy to the picking the lock of the parish chest. *Magistrum Newman, vicarium de Canvedon.*—Detected, that he was consentinge & privye unto the picking the locke of our parishe chest, wherein we keepe our evidences and writings: oute of which cheste, there was certeine evidences taken awaye at the same time. \* \* Further, we saye our said vicar is verye slacke & negligent in going the perambulation for these ii yeares past.—f. 114.

## DCXCIV.

[16 May.]

Defacing the names of churchwardens, cut out on a post. *Willielmum Thresher, de Alveley.*—Detected, for cuttinge owte the names of William Hurt & Thomas Collines churchwardens, owte of the post whereunto the church stile was joyned, most maliciously defacing the same, there joyned by an order from Romforde to be sett upp by us; to the greate dislike of many in the same parishe & scandall to the churche of God; & made his vaunts & common jests of it after he had done it.—f. 118 b.

## DCXCV.

[Eodem die.]

*Edmundum Grave, de Sowthockendon.*—Detected, for selling goods of deceased person without authority. inge of certeine goods of Jane Bird deceassed, havinge noe aauthoritie to doe the same. Citentur gardiani.—f. 119 b.

## DCXCVI.

[12 May, 1602.]

*Uxorem Collins, de Sowthebemflete.*—Detected, that she coming to the church to be churched, or to give God thanks for her delyvery upon the Saboth daie, came very undecently & contrary to order, unto the church; without kercher, midwife, or wyves; & placed herselfe in her owne stoole, not in the stoole appointed: by the which she shewed herselfe derisious, in coming so like a light & common woman, so that she returned not churched according to the book: which she best liked, and saith that in places from whence she came, the use is suche, neither did she at any time otherwise.—f. 11 b.

## DCXCVII.

[7 June.]

*Henricum Filoll, et Mariam ejus uxorem [de Alveley].*—On reception of communion from diseased minister. \* \* [The said Filoll] saith that he hath not received the communion of Mr. Austen their vicar, because as he saith, the said Mr. Austen hathe the piles in the highest degree etc. & dowl infection: & therefore desire that they may receive the communion at the hands of some other minister there. Unde dominus injunxit ei, ad recipiendam eucharistiam, per manus dicti Magistri Austen \* \* —f. 29 b.

## DCXCVIII.

[25 Oct.]

*Contra Willielmum Gylchrist, de Westham.*—Detected, for derision of marriage. that upon Sunday, being the xxvii<sup>th</sup> of June laste, when there was a marriage to be solemnized, he the saide Gylchrist in derision of holy matrimonye, gott a boughe hanged



with ropes endes & besett with nettles & other weedes, & carryed the same in the streate & churchyarde before the bryde, to the greate offence of the congregation.—f. 94 b.

## DCXCIX.

[21 June, 1603.]

Not coming to  
be examined.

*Rettindon. Thomam Robinson.*—Presented for not comyng to the mynister, to be examined in the principles of religion, wherein he was found ignorant. \* \* Dominus monuit eum, that he repaire to his parson and be instructed by him \* \* —f. 202 b.

## DCC.

[19 July.]

Preacher re-  
fusing to ob-  
serve the form  
of Common  
Prayer.

*Billarykey. Magistrum Georgium Watson, predicatorem ibidem.*—Ad certificandum, that he hath administred the sacraments of the Lord's Supper and of baptisme, in decent sorte, accordinge to the booke of Common Prayer, with the surples, in the church of Billaryekey: and that he doth use the signe of the crosse in baptisme, istis die et loco habet. Comparuit et allegavit, that he is not bounde to observe these thinges, which were enjoyned him, and that he is onely to attend his office of preachinge \* \* Quia recusavit observare formam libri communium precium, dominus suspendebat eum ab ingressa ecclesie, et ab functione et exercitio officii et ministerii interdicebat.—f. 215.

## DCCI.

[Eodem die.]

Opinions of the  
sacrament.

*Sowthamingfield. Aliciam Harvey.*—Presentata, for that she holdeth an unreverend opinyon of the sacrament of the Lord's Supper, to wit, that there is noe difference betweene the action of receyvinge bread and wyne there, then eatinge and drynkinge in a common alehouse; and that she hath noe neede of any suche meanes, to put her in remembrance of the passion of Christ, &c. Ex.—f. 217.

## DCCII.

[26 Sept.]

*Sowthwelde. Henricum Graye.*—Presentatus, for making

preparation with others, for to daunce the morice in the sermon while; and that they mett with the bridegrome and came dauncinge the morrice home with them. Ex.—f. 238.

Dancing the morrice at a wedding.

## DCCIII.

[25 Oct.]

*Prittlewell. Uxorem Johannis Woodde.*—Presentata, for a troblesome and a contentious person with widowe Browne and her daughter in fighting together and calling one another in undecent termes as w—— b——ch and such like. Ex.—f. 252.

Fighting, and calling opprobrious names.

## DCCIV.

[9 March.]

*Southbemflitt. Thomam Blackmore, Willielmum Heynes, gardianos.*— \* \* Dominus interrogavit eos in vim eorum juramenti—Whether they do knowe, that the wife of Robert Lewgare, will not permitt or suffer water to be sprinkled or poured uppon a child, when it is baptized, neither the childe to [be] signed with the signe of the crosse? Responderunt in vim eorum juramenti, that they neither knowe, nor have harde, that the said Lewgar's wife is any suche person, as is mentioned in the presentment; nor do beleve her to be soe. Tunc interrogavit, Whether the presentment exhibited under their names & hands be trewe yea or noe? They answer it is not trewe: et dictus Blackmore affirmavit in vim juramenti sui, that he was sicke and did not subscribe the presentment. Tunc dominus dimisit dictum Blackmore, et injunxit dicto Heynes, to aske the said Lewgars wifes forgiveness, for presentinge of her without a cause, in presentia Lewgar; ad ejus petitionem dominus dimisit dictum Heynes sine penitentia.—f. 7.

Churchwarden to ask forgiveness, for presenting without cause.

## DCCV.

[23 May, 1604.]

*Ramsden Bellowes. Robertum Boothe, rectorem ibidem.*— Presentatus, for not regestringe the wedings, christenings and buryings &c. Citetur.—f. 31 b.

Not registering the weddings, &c.

## DCCVI.

[18 June.]

His Majesty's  
pardon  
pleaded.

*Dagenham. Catherinam Gates.*— \* \* Allegavit, that the falte was by her comitted before Marche was twelve-monthe and desireth the benefitt of his Majestys pardone \* \* Dominus concessit ei beneficium condonacionis regie et eam dimisit ab officio suo &c.—f. 41.

## DCCVII.

[20 Dec.]

Receiving fees  
and not dis-  
patching busi-  
ness.

*Westham. Franciscum Willson.*—Citatur ad respondendum certis articulis, for that he receveth fees of diverse poore people and large somes of money to procure administrations &c., and dothe not dispatche theire busines; and namely he tooke xxxs. of Widowe Coates [&c.] \* \* [Dominus] eum dimisit cum monicione quod bene se gerat quoad premissa.—f. 97.

## DCCVIII.

[10 May, 1605.]

Popish recu-  
sant.

*East Tilburye. Mariam Crabb uxorem Rogeri Crabb yeoman.*—Presentata, to be a recusant, her estate is not knowen, a portion she hath by her fathers gifte, she hath byn altogether brought up in poperie; she is a seducer of others as the common fame goeth; and conference will not prevayle with her; she is obstinate, and yet ignorant. Ex.—f. 132.

## DCCIX.

[11 May.]

Seducing to  
popery.

*Stondon Massie. Willielmum Bird et Elenam ejus uxorem.*—Presentantur for popyshe recusants; he is a gentleman of the Kings Majesties chapell, and as the minister and churchwardens doe heare, the said William Birde, with the assistance of one Gabriel Colford, who is now at Anwerp, hath byn the chiefe and principall seducer of John Wright, sonne and heire of John Wright, of Kelvedon, in Essex, gent. and of Anne Wright the daughter of the said John Wright thelder: and the said Ellen Birde as it is reported

and as her servants have confessed, have appointed busines on the Saboth daye for her servants, of purpose to kepe them from churche, and hath also done her best endeavour to seduce Thoda Pigbone her nowe mayde servant; to drawe her to poperie, as the mayd hath confessed: and besides hath drawn her mayde servants from tyme to tyme these 7 yeres, from comming to churche: and the said Ellen refuseth conference: and the minister and churchwardens have not as yet spoke with the said W<sup>m</sup> Birde, because he is from home, &c. And they have byn excommunicate these 7 yeares.—f. 136 b.

## DCCX.

[3 July.]

*Thoroche parva. Edwardum Row.*—Presentatus, for that he at the marriage of Thomas Brock and Rebecca Foster, did fasten a payer of hornes, upon the church-yard gate, of the parishe of Grayes Thoroche; and being rebuked for the same, afterwards did avowe that he did it, and if it were to doe againe, he would doe it. Prox.—f. 200 b.

## DCCXI.

[2 Sept.]

*Dudinghurst. Andream Walmesley.*—Presentatur, for a verie seditious and contentious fellowe troblesome both in the church, and also otherwise in the parishe: and such a one as did the ix<sup>th</sup> daye of June 1605 in tyme of divine service in the forenoone molest the minister and the whole parishe there present in answeringe him contemptuously, when he was demaunded for a certificate of his absolucion, sayinge that he wold not depart when he was admonished so to doe; so that the minister was urged therby to goe out of his pue, and out of the church from divine service, untill that afterwards other honest men did persuade him, when he said he would not, by the admonicion of the said minister: with other words and speaches, not decent for him then to use.—f. 210.

## DCCXII.

[14 Feb.]

Accessory to  
incontinence.

*Dagenham. Jacobum Gates patrem [Catherine Gates].—*  
Presentatur, as accessorie to the matter of incontinencie be-  
twixt William Good and Catherine Gates his daughter. \* \*  
Ad purgandum se.—f. 283 b.

## DCCXIII.

[3 May, 1606.]

Refusal to ad-  
mit a person  
considered in-  
fectious, to the  
congregation.

*Loughton. Magistrum Henricum Davie, rectorem ibidem.*  
— \* \* Allegavit, that he did hould the said Grace, to  
be uncleane and infectious, and not fitt to be admitted into  
the congregation, in that he was commonlye reputed within  
the said parishe, to be infected with the loathsome disease  
———. Unde dominus non obstante allegata per eum,  
monuit eum ad recipiendum eum ad sacramentum eucha-  
ristie.—f. 309 b.

## DCCXIV.

[21 July.]

Returning  
thanks for  
child-birth at  
home by  
license.

*Lamborne. Richardum Mathewe.*—Presentatur, for that  
he standeth pemptorie upon the poynt, affirminge in playne  
termes, that his said wife shall not come to the parishe  
churche; but shall make her thanksgiving at home, at his  
owne howse, and for that purpose (as it is said) hath pro-  
cured (it is not knowen from whence) a strainge minister  
taken up by the waye to solemnize that dutie, in his owne  
house and after his owne manner; in contempt of the order  
appoynted in the booke of Common Prayer. Quo die com-  
paruit personaliter Richardus Mathewe, et allegavit, that  
his wiffe was churched, or gave thancks after her delivery,  
in her howse, beinge thereunto by Mr. Archdeacon of Essex  
licensed, in regard of her weaknes: and further he saith  
that he did repaire to Mr. Tunstall curate to Mr. Reynolds  
to request him to performe that office &c., which he would  
not; and after that, he procured Mr. Farrington to doe that  
office, in the presence of many of his neighbours. Unde

facta fide super veritatem premissorum dominus eum dimisit.—f. 350.

## DCCXV.

[Eodem die.]

*Alveley. Margaretam Jones uxorem W<sup>mi</sup> Jones.*—Presen- Swearing.  
tatur, for a swearer usinge most cursed oathes, as namely, *God's wounds, God's hart.* And being reprov'd by the minister she replyed, sayinge God's hart she would sweare in spitt of his teeth; as she used much swearinge, so she layde violent hands and smote the vicar of the said parishe, reproving [her] for her swearinge, and followed him swearinge most develishly, from the one ende of the towne to the other: yet nevertheless she presumed to come to the table and there used her tongue, to the greate offence of all that were present; and at length when the communion was done, she stayed the going forth of the vicar, and rayled on him most shamfully.—f. 351.

## DCCXVI.

[Eodem die.]

*Dagenham, Christoferum Curtis et ——— Radsdale.*—De- Burying without ceremony,  
tected for burying one Christofer ——— a cobbler dwellinge and dividing the goods of  
in the said parishe, at xii of the clocke at noone daie and the goods of deceased.  
that he was alive at viii of the clocke of the same daie; without anie toulunge of a bell, or anie dutye done by the minister; and that the said Christopher had certain moneye about him at the same tyme to the vallew of *vli.* and certaine waris in his shoppe which they sould and distributed betweene themselves. [*Vide 1 Sept. following.*]—f. 354.

## DCCXVII.

[22 July.]

*Canveden. Richardum Childs.*— \* \* [Presented] for Ploughing up  
that verie uncharitably he hath plowed up the common church path.  
usuall and ordinarie church pathe from the west ende of  
our parishe to church: being a verie noysome and troublesome thinge to all inhabitants and passingers. \* \* —f. 263 b.



## DCCXVIII.

[1 Sept.]

Burial of a person supposed to have died of the plague.

*Dagenham. Christoferum Curtis et Georgium Radsdale.*— \* \* Allegarunt, that the said partie was founde deade in the highewaye, and as it was thought he dyed of the plague; and that thereupon they bothe did helpe to carrie him to the churche &c., and that the sexten did burye him, and that they receyved noe parte of his goods. Unde dominus eos dimisit cum monitione.—f. 3.

## DCCXIX.

[20 Oct.]

Contempt of court.

*Lamborne. W Ivie.*— \* \* \* The said William beinge present in the chappell of Romford, loco judiciali iudice sedente pro tribunali, in very angrie malicious maner did saye, Mr. Reignolds was a knave, & that Mr. Savage, whoe then sate was to[o] younge to be a judge. Unde dominus propter proclamationem hujusmodi verborum, loco predicto, pronunciavit eum contumacem, et eum excommunicavit in scriptis.—f. 33.

## DCCXX.

[17 Nov.]

On collecting for the poor at the communion.

*Stifford. Johannem Patche et Georgium Hole, gardianos ibidem.*— \* \* They have not anie gatheringe for the poore at the tyme of the administracion of the sacrament. \* \* —f. 53.

## DCCXXI.

*Copia commutationis factæ pro Catherina Cotton de Horndon super Montem.*

Commutation of penance.

Samuel Harsnett M<sup>r</sup> of Arts Archdeacon of Essex.—To the minister, churchwardens and parishioners of Horndon on the Hill sendeth gretinge, that whereas Katheryne Cotton of the said parishe of Sowthbemflett, of my archdeaconrye of Essex, hath byn detected unto me, for that she beinge a single woman, had a childe begotten of her bodie in fornication, by one Mr. Vaughan. And whereas the said

Katheryne Cotton hathe, uppon the said detection, byn convented before Mr. Repent Savage my officiall concerninge the said falte, and was by him enjoyned publike pennaunce, accordinge to the laws cannon in that behalfe: These are to signifie unto you that for diverse speciall causes, me especiallye movinge, I have thought good to commute her said pennaunce, into a pecuniarie mulcte, and have with good advise and deliberacion to and with the consent, assent and approbacion of the Right Reverend Father in God the Lord B<sup>p</sup> of London nowe beinge, commuted the penance of the said Catherine Cotton in this manner followinge: viz. that the said Catherine Cotton shall paie or cause to be paid the same fine of five pounds, of lawfull Englishe monye, into the hands of the said Reverend Father; to be ymployed towards the mending and reparations, of the ould fabricke, of the cathedral church of St. Pawle in London; and also the sum of xxxiiis. iiid. of like lawful monye, to be paid by the said Catherine Cotton, to the hands of you the churchwardens of the said parish of Horndon on the Hill; to be by you, to and with the advise of the minister of your said parishe, forthwith distributed, to & amongst the poore people of the said parishe of Horndon on the Hill, accordinge to your discretions. \* \* [Dated 14 Dec. 1606.]—f. 64 b.

## DCCXXII.

[8 June, 1607.]

*Laughton. Magistrum Owen Ludimagistrum.*—Presentatur, <sup>Misconduct of schoolmaster.</sup> for that he teacheth publiquely in the church, but readeth noe catechisme to his schollers, and when they come to church they behave themselves verry disorderlye & doe disquiet the minister & parishioners. Prox.—f. 139.

## DCCXXIII.

[12 Oct.]

*Lamborne. Thomam Griffen alias Evans.*—\* \* Alle- <sup>Working on holidays.</sup> gavit, that the minister gave noe warninge of the same daye: and further saieth that God commaunded to worke six

dayes and to rest the vii<sup>th</sup> daye, and therefore he may worke upon holydayes. \* \* —f. 183.

[*To acknowledge his fault*, f. 190.]

## DCCXXIV.

Coming to church in man's apparel.

*Graies Thorocke. Catherinam Banckes famulam domesticam Johannis Whitebread.*—Presentatur, for cominge in man's apparell into the church \* \* to the contempte of religion, therby dishonouring God & disturbinge the minister & the congregation. \* \* Dominus injunxit ei penitentiam in her usuall apparell with a paper on her brest \* \* f. 182 b.

## DCCXXV.

[4 May, 1608.]

The vicar a great gamester.

*Nazinge. M<sup>m</sup> Rich. Sherman vicarium ibidem.*— \* \* [presented] that he is a great gamester as he hathe confessed & lastlye for his disordered preachinge & raylinge most absurdlye to the greate greife & offence of the congregation. \* \* [*Ad purgandum se v<sup>ta</sup> manu clericorum.*].—f. 5 b.

## DCCXXVI.

[6 Feb.]

Sitting with his hat on during divine service.

*Alveley. Milonem Shepheard.*—Presentatur, for coveringe his head in service tyme in the church. Comparuit cui objecta detectione, fassus est, that some times in colde weather when he is evill at ease. Unde habita monicione, that hereafter he sit bareheaded, without his hat, at the time of devine service. Dominus eum dimisit solutis feodis.—f. 26 b.

## DCCXXVII.

[13 July, 1609.]

Not ringing for service on holydays.

*Nazinge. Robertum Foster, sexten there.*—Detected, for that he dothe not ringe or tole upon any holy dayes, to geve the parisheners warninge to come to service.—f. 164 b.

## DCCXXVIII.

Installatio archidiaconi Essex.

M<sup>d</sup> quod octavo die mensis Novembris 1609 venerabilis vir Magister Georgius Goldman sacre theologie prefessor,

installatus fuit archidiaconus Essex, in choro ecclesie cathedralis divi Pauli London.—f. 214.

## DCXXIX.

[26 April, 1610.]

*South Bemflett. Contra Magistrum Bally vicarium.*—For Non-residence, that he is non resident, insomuch that sometimes for a month together ther is noebody to bury the dead, nor to christen.—f. 262 b.

## DCCXXX.

[19 July.]

*Thornton. Contra Denbye Leekes gardianum.*—Presentatur, Altering the bill of presentment. for altering the bill of presentment which we had & wherunto he had given his consent, and wherein we had presented four persons, and he for favor hath put them out, and hath caused none to be presented. \* \* Ad recipiendam penitentiam.—f. 310 b.

## DCCXXXI.

[4 Sept.]

*Dagenham. Contra Thomam Burr et Elenam ejus uxorem.* Setting up a May-pole during service. —Presented, for having a May-pole set up att his dore in time of divine service. \* \* Fassus est, that he is not certeyne at what tyme it was sett upp but thincketh it was at eveninge prayer tyme, et submitit se etc. Unde habita monicione etc. dominus eos dimisit.—f. 330.

[*Twenty-four other persons also presented.*]

## DCCXXXII.

[27 March, 1612.]

*Warley Magna. Contra Thomam Lacye.*—Citatur ad re- Not paying for ringing knells, &c. spondendum articulis, for not payinge of viiid. for ringinge of two knells, and xiid. for making of two graves, for two of his children, due to Hamond the parishe clerke.—f. 120 b.

## DCCXXXIII.

[11 June.]

*Alveley. Contra Magistrum Augur.*—Presentatur, for that

Professing to  
be a phisician  
and surgeon.

he professeth himselfe both a phisicion and a surgion and taketh both upon him but with what skill or by what authoritie the churchwardens knowe not. Citetur.—f. 158 b.

## DCCXXXIV.

Aloose and idle  
person, &c.

*Contra Warterum Hicocks.*—Presentatur, for a loose and idle person and for not receavinge the sacrament this Easter and for a common drunkard and gamester. Citetur.—Ib.

## DCCXXXV.

[8 Feb.]

Disturbing the  
preacher, &c.

*Shelley. Contra Samuelem Gover.*—Citatur ad respondendum detectioni, for advisinge and bidinge James Westwood in the sermon tyme, to goe forth of the church into the churchyard, and to tell the preacher that his roast meate did burne; whereupon the said Westwoode did disturbe the preacher and the congregacion in sermon tyme. Citetur. f. 2 b.

## DCCXXXVI.

[4 March.]

Monition to  
take down the  
head of a pew.

*Stifford. Contra Magistrum Radulphum Heard et Robertum Heard gardianos.*—Notatur officio ex publica fama, that there is a close pewe built six foote highe, by one Mr. Thomas Gurney Esquier, et respondendo eidem fatentur eandem esse veram. Unde dominus monuit eos, that they take downe the head of the same pewe, ante proximum etc. \* \* f. 20.

## DCCXXXVII.

[30 March, 1613.]

On kneeling at  
the prayers.

*Paglesham. Contra Johannem Harmon.*—Presentatur, for refusing to kneele when those prayers are read which are appointed in the book of Common Prayer, and for affirminge that he knoweth noe reason whie he shold use any other behaviour at such tymes, but such as the Sperite of God shall move him unto. \* \* Ad purgandum se 3<sup>a</sup> manu \* \* \* —f. 27.

## DCCXXXVIII.

[23 April.]

*Curingham. Contra Joannam uxorem Nathanielis Whitup.*

—Presentatur, for that she beinge admonished, that when she came to church to give God thanks for her safe deliverance in childbirth, that she shold come with such ornaments as other honest women usually have done, she did not, but cominge in her hatt and a quarter about her neck, sate downe in her seate where she cold not be discried, nor seene unto what the thanksgivinge was read: which beinge done she did as disorderly walke out of the church as she came in: and also for that she said that none but whores did weare vayles and that a harlott or a whore was the inventor of it, or that first wore a vayle. Ex.—f. 38.

On costume worn at returning thanks.

## DCCXXXIX.

[1 July.]

*Rayleighe. Contra Richardum Standishe.*— \* \* We present that in the farme of Parkers in Raighley which Richard Standishe holdeth, there is cutt downe this yeare an olde oake tree marked with a crosse tyme out of mynde, for the severalties of the parishes, but who cut the same downe the churchwardens knowe not. Citetur.—f. 80 b.

Boundary tree cut down.

## DCCXL.

*Rochford. Contra Robertum Greshopper alias Waterman.*—Presentatur, for that a sheete newe bought, is gone out of the chest, in the tyme of Robert Waterman the clarke, which was commaunded to be kept for the punishinge and pennance of incontynent persons. \* \* Ex.—f. 80 b.

Abstraction of sheet used for penance.

## DCCXLI.

[29 March, 1614.]

*Canweden. Contra Magistrum Thomam Newman, vicarium ibidem.*—Notatur officio, that he absolved one Sampson and Briant of Burnham; and that he had viiis. of Briant and 8s. of an other of the same parishe, for absolvinge of him: and that he hath absolved diverse of Rochford, and stayed the publishinge of the excommunication against diverse of the same parishe; without any warrant from the judge of this courte, and that he did absolve one Rayleighe within this twelvemonth last past.—f. 266.

Receiving monies for absolution without authority.



## DCCXLII.

[6 May.]

Parish clerk  
setting a bad  
example.

*Eastham. Contra Thomam Milborne.*—Presentatur, for spreadinge mowle hills with a shovell in the churchyard upon the Sundaye nexte Septuagesima last being the xiii<sup>th</sup> daye of Februarie 1613 and that betweene morninge and eveninge prayer; and was then taken at worke by the minister and other of the parishioners, and for that he doth not kneele on his knees in tyme of devine service when as it is fittinge he should and the rather in that he is the parishe clerke who ought to give good example therby unto others that are negligent therin, and he hath often tymes bene admonished for to kneele by the minister but he doth altogether refuse it. And for that he singeth the psalmes in the church with such a jesticulus tone and altitonant voyce, viz. squeakinge like a gelded pigg which doth not onlie interrupt the other voyces, but is altogether dissonant and disagreeing unto any musicall harmonie and he hath been requested by the minister to leave it, but he doth obstinatlie persist and contynue therein. Prox.—f. 294 b.

## DCCXLIII.

[Eodem die.]

Brownists.

*Eadem. Contra Johannem Hartford et ejus uxorem.*—Presentantur, for that they doe refuse to come to their parishe church as they are enjoyned, and it is vehementlie suspected that they are Brownists or of some such like secte and faction; and they have been seene to entertheyne xii persons into their howse at one tyme, of their secte and scisme, and the rather suspected for that they were all strangers, and came from London, from whence the partie abovesaid came to the parishe at Michaelmas last; since which tyme he or she never came to church.—f. 295.

## DCCXLIV.

[1 July.]

Licence to  
practise sur-  
gery.

*Negocium concessionis licentie Stephano Spikernell, Chirurgus ad exercendam chirurgiam intra Archidiaconatum Essex.*

—Quibus die et loco comparuit personaliter dictus Spikernell et exhibuit certificatorium de et super experientia sua in chirurgia subscriptum, tam manibus quorundam chirurgorum, quam aliorum quorum morbos dictus Spikernell curavit; ut ex dicto certificatorio apparet. Unde dominus facta prius per eum fide, tam de agnoscendo regiam suprematam quam de fideliter exequendo facultatem chirurgi etc. Solvit vis.—f. 329 b.

## DCCXLV.

[5 Sept.]

*Stondon Massey. Contra Johannem Demaunder.*—Presentatur, for that upon the fowerth Sundaye in Lent he did abuse the minister after this manner. In primis the said John Demaunder, Dawber and Logg Clever, in the presence of the most parte of the parishioners, presentlie after the ende of morning prayer that daye, not farr from the said church of Stondon above said, upon smale or noe occasion, said that the minister was a contentious disquiett person, and that usuallie at everie good tyme he tooke occasion to troble and fall out with somebodie, to disquiet the whole parishe; and added that he was fitter to have made a lawyer then a minister: moreover he said whereas he shold be a lanterne of light to leade men to God, he was a lanterne of light to leade them to the devill; besides that on the Sundaye before, he had preached well, but as soone as he was out of the pulpitt he quarrelled with all the parishe. Then passinge alonge toward the parsonage beinge but a Dawber as above is said, he tooke the upper hand of him, walkinge in the path, and bravinge him and geeringe him in the face, settinge his teeth at him, usinge these words and often repeateinge them,—Strike yf you dare: strike me yf you dare.—f. 32.

Railing  
speeches  
against the  
minister.

[To acknowledge his fault, f. 846.]

## DCCXLVI.

[26 May, 1615.]

*Westham. Contra Nicholaum Bembrick, victualer.*—Presentatur, for that upon Palme Sundaye, beinge the second daye of Aprill last, there beinge company in his howse

Refusal to open  
his doors to the  
vicar, &c.

in the tyme of devine service, and he himselfe at home, refused to open his dores unto the vicar and churchwardens ; to let them see who they were that they might have presented them.—f. 212 b.

## DCCXLVII.

[16 June.]

Selling church  
goods.

*Walthamstowe. Contra Paulum Bowcher, generosum.*—Presentatur sub hiis verbis, there was sould from the churche by Paul Bowcher gent. a payer of organs and the leade of the church porch which he gave accompt for unto the parishe. Prox.—f. 230 b.

## DCCXLVIII.

Keeping com-  
pany inces-  
tuously.

*Eadem. Contra Edwardum Corbye.*—Presentatur, for keepinge company with Suzan Brooke at bedd and bord incestuously, as yf she were his wife, and they saye they are marryed. Ex.—f. 230 b.

## DCCXLIX.

[13 Feb.]

Fox-hunting on  
Sunday.

*Fryeringe. Contra gardianos et economos.*— \* \* To present such as were a fox huntinge upon Sundaye the 4 of February. Citentur.—f. 25.

## DCCL.

[9 Sept. 1616.]

Attending con-  
venticles at  
night ; also  
adultery.

*Shelley. Contra Elizabetham Ramsie uxorem Johannis Ramsie.*—Presentatur prout sequitur, whereas heretofore we the churchwarden and sidemen of Shelley, have presented Elizabeth Ramsie the wife of John Ramsie and Richard Palmer some tyme servant to the said John, to be suspected by a common fame and report, to have committed adulterie ; and nowe are enjoyned by the 117 cannon to explane the said presentment, doe nowe againe, having heard further of the offensive behaviour of the said Elizabeth in former tyme ; as namely when she was first marryed, she usinge to goe to conventicles in the night to Chipinge Ongar, her husband beinge at that tyme fast asleepe, she was ordi-

narylie brought home by one yonge man or other, and had then bene presented by the churchwarden, but that our minister diswaded him; this is to be proved yf neede be; since which tyme she hath sundrye tymes ridd abroad; sometye with one man and sometye with another, and have bene knowen to lye in chamber with some that have ridd forth with her, neither coulde she denye it, beinge urged in the matter: and especially with one Andrewe Warmsley of Chipinge Ongar, who was one, when she was a mayde, that woulde have marryed her, and when she was newly marryed was her servant; at which tyme it was observed by many she was more kinde to hym then to her husband; as indeed she hath bene to all her men servants from tyme to tyme, which hath bene offensive to many and much talke hath bene of it, and she hath bene reproved for it by our minister: upon which circumstances we doe by these presents confirme our former presentment, in these words followinge: That is—We doe present upon a common fame and report, Elizabeth Ramsie and Richard Palmer some tyme servant to John Ramsie, and nowe servant to Christopher Wilkin of Highe Ongar, to have committed adulterie.

## DCCLI.

[5 March.]

*Woodham Mortimer. Contra Daniele Courtman.*— \* \* Vomiting in the church.  
 Allegavit, that he was present at a marriage upon the daye specified in the presentment, in his parishe church, which was upon a workinge daye, and that he was then verie sicke and ill at ease, not by reason of drinkinge: and that after the same marriage was ended and most of the people gone, by reason of his sicknes and weaknes, he did vomit in the church, for which he is hartelie sorrie.  
 [Dismissed.]—f. 268 b.

## DCCLII.

[1 Apr. 1617.]

*Burnham. Contra Hayward, puellam.*—Presentatur, for

A young maid sitting with her mother in church. that she beinge but a yonge mayde, sat in the pewe with her mother, to the greate offence of many reverent women: howbeit that after I, Peter Lewis the vicar, had in the church privatlie admonished the said yonge mayde of her fault, and advised her to sitt at her mothers pewe dore, she obeyed; but nowe she sitts againe with her mother.—f. 284.

## DCCLIII.

Working on the day of the gunpowder plot. *Colde Norton. Contra Richardum Denham.*— \* \* Two of his men went to carte almost all daye upon the Kings daye which was the papists conspiracie being the 5 of November \* \* \*

## DCCLIV.

[5 June.]

Churchwardens suffering unlawful games. *Stowe Maris. Contra Edwardum Osborne et Johannem Davies, gardianos.*—Presentantur, for sufferinge the youth of the parishe and other with them, to prophane the Saboth, by playinge at unlawfull sports and games, as raysinge the footeballe in the churchyard, and abusinge the name of God by most fearefull oathes, and in most rude manner playinge at other sports, abusing themselves by fightinge. Comparuit dictus Osborne \* \* [et] Denegavit eandem esse veram et allegavit, that he dwelleth farr from the church.—f. 38 b.

## DCCLV.

Stubbornly refusing to answer when examined. *Eadem. Contra Annam Sammes famulam Johannis Davies.*—Presentatur, for her most stoborne behaviour openly in the congregation in the tyme of holie exercise, on the Saboth daye, in the afternoone, beinge the 12 of Aprill for as the assemblers were present at the church to heare, I, with the rest of the youth, examyned her, and she would not answer; although I demaunded her beinge present, yea though I rehearsed the answer to the question, she would not saye after me: and since that she would have come unto the communion, and examininge her, she was so ignorant that I durst not admitt her.—f. 38 b.

## DCCLVI.

*Eastwood. Contra Richardum Downham.*—Presentatur, for sleeping in the church. \* \* Allegavit, that he did not sleepe in the church this twelvemonth. Unde dominus habita monitione eum dimisit.—f. 43 b.

## DCCLVII.

*Sowthbemflett. Contra Katherinam Edwards.*—Presentatur, for a sclanderer of her neighbours, a make bate and a common lyer, which if it be not reformed will make much striff.—f. 44.

## DCCLVIII.

[16 June, 1618.]

*Leighes Magna. Contra Jeremiam Clerke.*—Presentatur, for that he hath cutt downe the auncient true marke and hath not sett up an other and denyeth the auncient custome to make the procession drinke.—f. 268.

## DCCLIX.

*Muckinge. Contra Magistrum Nathanielem Crosier, curatum ibidem.*—Notatur officio, for not wearinge of the surplis on Trinitie Sunday in the forenoone, neither did he reade the chapters appoynted for the daye, nor the Epistle and Gospell, and did omitt Gloria Patri when he did reade the Psalmes, and did alter the Lord's prayer.—f. 269.

## DCCLX.

[8 July.]

*Rayleighe. Contra Edwardum Whittop.*—\* \* Allegavit, that he beinge upon Easter Tuesday last in the churchyard of Hadley, was called into the church by Eustace Chappell one of the collectors for the poore of the said parishe, who demaunded collection money of him for a howse in the said parishe; and this respondent answered that he had noe reason to paye any collection money, seeinge they kept the howse from him, whereupon Edward Reynold alias



Kent, churchwarden, said that it was none of this respondents howse; it was one Croftons howse and reviled this respondent with many bad speeches. [*Dismissed.*—f. 272.

## DCCLXI.

Scurrilous language of curate.

*Stowe Maris. Contra Magistrum Randall, curatum ibidem.*  
—Notatur officio, that about the month of March last past he rayled upon John Davies and called him sawcie powde Jack, and base rascallie slave, and shackrell, and a powde taylorly slave. [*He denied it, and was dismissed.*—f. 274.

## DCCLXII.

Breaking open a pound.

*Hadley. Contra Edwardum Whittop.*—Presentatur, for sending of his servant Jonothan Hoodes upon the Saboth daye, in the tyme of divine service and sermon, to break open a pound, and would not be stayed by noe meanes: and he answered that his master would beare out in his disorder, whatsoever it cost. [*The servant to purge himself.*]—f. 274 b.

## DCCLXIII.

[13 May, 1619.]

Suspicion of harbouring popish mass-priests.

*Cold Norton. Contra dominam Franciscam Herryce uxorem Francisci Herryce [militis].*—Presentatur, for popish recusancie, who came not within our church dore, since she dwelt in our parishe, and besides, we doe much suspect her to be a harborer and an ordinarie of popishe masse priests.—f. 68.

## DCCLXIV.

Living scandalously with his wife.

*Eadem. Contra Willielmum Walford.*—Presentatur, for lyvinge most scandalouslie with his wife and in most unchristian manner doth call her by noe other name but jade, queane, witch, &c.: and also without any guilt of her parte, as we beleve, doth verie openlie affirme her to be a witch: besides his order is when he comes to visite any sick neighbor, to perswade them that they are bewicht, and tells them withall except they will be of that beleefe,

Telling sick people that they are bewitched.

they can verie hardlie be holpen of theire disease and sicknes. \* \* Fassus est, that there have bene some unkindnesses betwixt him and his wife, et submisit se. Dimissus.—f. 69.

## DCCLXV.

*Nothshoburie. Contra Henricum Harwood.*—Presentatur, Calling the constable and other murthers, &c. and refusing to humble himself. for not receavinge the communion, being put by, by our vicar for raylinge and abusinge the constable and the whole parishe, in executinge the Kings warrant upon him, accordinge to lawe, in callinge them murtherers and villaines, with other base and slanderous names to the great offence of the whole parishe, persistinge in the same obstinatlie, and refusinge to humble himselfe, beinge exhorted thereto by our minister. [*Monition to receive.*].—f. 69.

## DCCLXVI.

*Northshoberie. Contra Venerem Harwood.*—Presentatur, Contemptuous speeches. for rayling at our vicar in most base and contemptible manner, saying that she would never receive a cupp of salvacion at the hand of so damned a priest; and by comparing him to a dogg, with many other vile and contemptible termes, as shall be verified against her, by the oathes of diverse witnesses, yf they be called thereunto; to the disgrace not onlie of his person, but also of the whole ministrie in him; and to the greate offence of the whole parishe, she persistinge obstinatlie in her malice. [*To acknowledge her fault.*].—f. 69 b.

## DCCLXVII.

[26 Oct.]

*Wickford. Contra Johannem Tile, victualer.*—Presentatur, Withholding reverence at the name of Jesus, &c. for that he hath not used such reverence and attention within the church, at the tyme of divine service, as is required by the 28<sup>th</sup> constitution; but in contempt of the rights and ceremonies in the church established, he hath used to sitt at the sayinge of the Beleeve, and hath not given such reverence as is required, when the name of Jesus is mencioned, in the tyme of divine service; but useth laughinge and deridinge gestures when divine service is read; in derision and contempt of the forme and cere-

monies then used, and contemneth or neglecteth the celebration of holie Church and festivall dayes, appoynted by our Church to heare divine service, as upon Sundayes; and that beinge lovinglie admonished by our minister of these things, he used quarrellinge and opprobrious speeches towards him in the church; publiquellie revilinge him, with clamerous and raylinge termes, both against his person and preaching \* \* [*Ad purgandum se.*].—f. 181 b.

## DCCLXVIII.

[14 March.]

Answering the minister saucily, and catechising him.

*Contra Nicholaum Weald, parochie de Burstled Magna.*—Presentatur, for suffering his sonne to answer me sawcilie when he was to be catechized. I askeinge him who gave him his name in baptisme;—he answered me, his father; and asked me whether I would have him tell a lye, and whether a lye were a sinne; and so catechizinge me \* \* \* Prox.—f. 265 b.

[*Five others return similar impudent answers.*]

## DCCLXIX.

[2 June, 1620. Coram Magistro JOHANNE MORFE, clerico Surrogato.]

Getting drunk at the communion.

*Sowth-Ockendon. Contra Richardum Browne.*—Notatur officio ex publica fama, that at the communion upon Easter daye last, he did drinke of [f] a whole cup of wyne; and that by reason therof, and with drinkinge before, he was drunke at the same tyme; and also that he useth to be drunke verie often. Ex.—f. 311.

## DCCLXX.

[28 Nov. Coram Magistro WILLIELMO FARRINGTON, clerico Surrogato.]

Contempt of churchwarden's authority in ringing the bells.

*Springfeild. Contra Willielmum Harries.*—Presentatur prout sequitur:—And we present such persons hereafter named, for contempt against our straight commaunde, where we have expresslie forbidden the ringinge of our bells at certeyne tymes upon the Saboth dayes, and havinge given diverse warnings to the contrarie, except they had our

leave, yet they have not onlie attempted to doe it against our wills, but have watched when the sexten hath bene alone in the church and would ringe, whether he would or noe; as namelie the xxii<sup>th</sup> of this instant month; which thinge we tooke for a disgrace to our office and callinge, to have our lawfull authoritie contemned. Citetur.—f. 64 b.

## DCCLXXI.

[27 March, 1621.]

*Burstead Magna. Contra Aronem Ealsmeare.*—Presentatur, <sup>Being sponsor to his own child.</sup> for that he upon Sundaye beinge the fowerth daye of March, would be godfather to his owne childe in baptisme; openlie naminge his childe and answeringe for it, contrarie to the 29 cannon. Comparuit personaliter dictus Ealsmere cui dominus objecit presentationem et respondendo eidem, fateatur, that by error he did stand, for that Mr. Pease did not tell him to the contrarie, et submisit se. [*Dismissed.*] —f. 124 b.

## DCCLXXII.

[17 Maii.]

*Springfeild. Contra Johannem Nashe, a butcher.*—Presen- <sup>Incontinence.</sup> tatur prout sequitur. John Nashe butcher, who is notoriously defamed for incontynencie with sundrye persons. In particuler he doth nowe harbor in his howse one Elizabeth Sweetinge, beinge both an excommunicate person (as we are certified by the parson of Willingale) and also doth keepe her as his common strumpet for the space of these two or three monthes last past; professinge himselfe to have bene so longe married to her: and yet nowe beinge further examyned he sayeth he is not; and it appeareth that they are not married, because he hath bene but twice asked this Easter tyme; so that we hope that this court will not suffer such wickednes to goe unpunished, without some speciall pennaunce: also he hath formerly bene presented for other offences and because this court hath dealt favorably with him, and forgiven him the fees, therefore he doth but laughe and deride at your courte, and sweares you shall never get penny of him, doe what you can: but

we hope nowe that he shall not onlie be punished in purse, but also put to some further open shame.—[*To purge himself, and pay the fees of court.*].—f. 137 b.

## DCCLXXIII.

[9 July.]

Subtraction of  
clerk's wages  
and burial fees.

*Chigwell. Contra Johannem Broade.*—Presentatur, for not paying the clerke his wages, and [for] burying of his childe. \* \* Allegavit, that he spake to have his child buried where he had one buried before, under the church-wall; and that William Knight the clerk made the grave and buried his childe under trees, and that by reason of the rootes of the trees the grave was not deepe enough, by reason whereof the ded corpes did smell and the hoggs rooted it up.

Debet for 3 yeares wages 2s. and for buryinge of his childe 12d. [*The said clerk ordered to attend, &c.*].—f. 170 b.

## DCCLXXIV.

[23 Julii.]

Detaining col-  
lection for the  
French pro-  
testants.

*West Tilburie. Contra Robertum Ilford, gardianum antiquum.*—Presentatur, for deteyninge to his owne use one halfe or above, of the money collected for the reliefe of the French protestants. \* \* Fassus est, that he hath some money in his hands, xii*d.* or therabouts. [*To pay the same into the judge's hands.*].—f. 326.

## DCCLXXV.

[12 Aug.]

Suffering the  
dead to remain  
unburied.

*Raynham. Contra Magistrum Willielmum Morne, vicarium ibidem.*—Notatur officie, that he did suffer a childe this summer to lye three dayes unburied after it was dead untill it did stinke. Citetur.—f. 334.

## DCCLXXVI.

[11 July, 1623.]

Rude be-  
haviour to the  
minister, &c.

*Hadley. Mariam uxorem Josephi Camber.*—Presentatur, for her rude and immodest behaviour towards diverse of her

neighbours at sundrye tymes and espetiall towards the minister and other officers of the same parishe. Citetur.—f. 193.

[12 Aug.]

\* \* Fassus est, that she said that Mr. Sabridge did putt her child's neck out of joynt when he did christen it, and that he did preach of womens matters things which were not fittinge. [*To acknowledge her fault.*].—f. 220 b.

### DCCLXXVII.

[23 Sept.]

*Graves Thorock. Contra Thomam Farnell, generosum.*—Incroachment on the pews. Presentatur, for that he hath taken two seates or pewes to his owne use, from the parishioners of the said towne, in which the better sort of the parishioners did sitt; so that by this meanes diverse of the parishioners wanteth sufficient place to sitt in the church, and many for this cause did refuse to paye parishe and church dutyes. Citetur.—f. 228.

### DCCLXXVIII.

[18 Nov.]

*Rawreth. Contra Magistrum Richardum Mason, rectorem* Felling wood on the glebe land. *ibidem.*—Presentatur, for making strip and wast in felling of the wood and timber both yonge and olde and burning of it off his gleable land.—f. 267.

### DCCLXXIX.

[20 July, 1624.]

*Hackwell. Contra Johannem Crushe.*—Presentatur prout Profaning the Sabbath. sequitur. We present John Crushe of our parishe husbandman, for that he the said John, on the second day of May 1624, being Sunday, prophaned the Sabbath in this manner, the same day at evening prayer time, not regarding the service and worship of God did burne a lambe on our common, which he sayth was bewitched; and so set fire on the common beeing full of rubeysh, burneing a great compasse, drawing the parishe with amazement from the church, affrighting also the country round about: for which



we leave him to your worships censure. [*Fassus est et dominus injunxit ei penitentiam.*].—f. 79 b.

## DCCLXXX.

[17 Jan. 1625.]

On election of  
sexton.

*Eastwood. Contra Magistrum Bradfordum Burye seniozem.*  
— \* \* Dominus objecit ei posteriorem partem presentationis et respondendo eidem, allegavit, that the election of the sexten belongeth tyme out of mynde to the parishioners of Eastwood, and not to the vicar, et allegavit, that the nowe sexten was elected and chosen sexten by Mr. Purcas the vicar, and not by the parishioners and therfore he refuseth to paye him. \* \* Prox.—f. 8.

## DCLXXXI.

[5 Sept. 1626.]

Baptizing a  
child not being  
a full minister.

*Sowthbemflett. Contra Proctor, curatum.*—Notatur officio, for baptisinge of a childe, not being full minister.—f. 15 b.

## DCCLXXXII.

[23 Oct.]

An infamous  
person to the  
whole parish.

*Alveley. Contra Robertum Cole, shomaker.*—Presentatur, for a most notorious and common drunkard, infamous and offensive to the whole parishe and congregacion; who in his drunken fitts walketh about the streetes with his naked sword, breakinge the windowes, quarrellinge and raylinge, brawlinge and cursinge, after a fearfull manner: who we have therefore refused this last Easter to admitt to the holie communion, and humbly desire that you would be pleased to compell him to some orderly and civill carriage as becometh a Christian.—f. 32.

## DCCLXXXIII.

[23 Oct.]

Intermeddling  
with the goods  
of deceased  
person, without  
authority.

*Eadem. Contra Hellenam Ringsole uxorem Radulphi Ringsole.*—Presentatur, for intermedlinge with the goods of Joane Simmonds late deceased, without any authoritie from the ordinarie, to the damage and hurt of her poore kindred.

Comparuit personaliter Edwardus Everett maritus filiæ dicte defunctæ, et ostendit litteras acquietancias, unam subscrip-  
tam manu propria Willielmi Jordane et alteram subscrip-  
tam manu propria Katerine Jordane, consanguiniæ dicte  
defunctæ super satisfactionem. . . Unde dominus eum  
dimisit.—f. 32.

## DCCLXXXIV.

[23 Feb.]

*Waltham Magna. Contra Annam uxorem Thome Webbe, Scoffing, &c.  
de Churchend.*—Presentatur, for that she upon Christmas  
daye last in the forenoone, did the most parte of sermon  
tyme, scoff and laughe at the minister, preachinge of the  
decencie and indifferencie of mens gesture, at the receavinge  
of the communion and other church seremonies; and beinge  
at a feast in dynner tyme she uttered these or the like  
words (he did preach he could not tell what, things not  
to be spoken of in a pulpitt) so much that the master  
and mistress of the howse reprehended her, and bade her  
forbear medlinge in church matters; she answered what  
skills it howe we receive the communion, she heard a  
good man once teach that leaving at the communion was  
best of all. Citetur.—f. 103.

## DCCLXXXV.

[18 July, 1627.]

*East Hanningfeild. Contra Benjamin Morgan.*—Presentatur prout sequitur. Wheras one Benjamine Morgan of East Hanningfeild hath come into our parishe of Westhaningfeild and there not onlye made a songe, a most dissolute and ribbaldrye songe in the alehowse to the greate scandall of all the parishe, and doth the like in other townes &c. The scandalous words used in this songe are that for the greatest parte of all the wyves are whores and their husbandes cuckolds. These scandalous rymes were songe on Tuesdaye the 12<sup>th</sup> of June. Citetur viis et modis.—f. 177 b.

Making and  
singing ribbald  
songs.

[Dominus injunxit ei ad agnoscendam ejus culpam publice in curia, proximo die juridico, et decrevit intimationem parochianis de Westhaningfeild predicta.]—f. 194 b.

## DCCLXXXVI.

[2 Oct.]

Misdemeanour  
in church.

*Leighe. Contra Johannem Kibbitt famulum Thome Albo-  
roughe.*—Presentatur, for that in prophane manner in tyme  
of the sermon upon a Sundaye, in the afternoon he did  
— in the church into the hat of one that sate by him.  
Prox.—f. 208 b.

## DCCLXXXVII.

[29 May, 1628.]

Filthy and pro-  
fane talk.

*Stamford Rivers. Contra Johannem Glascocke seniore.*—  
Presentatur \* \* for usinge themselves disorderly on  
Sundayes, by filthy and profane talke, and miscalling theire  
neighbours and by other imodest behaviour. \* \* [Ci-  
tetur.]—f. 294 b.

## DCCLXXXVIII.

[14 July.]

Causing the bell  
to be tolled.

*Walthamstowe. Contra Johannem Powell alias Matter-  
daye.*—Presentatur, for abusively causinge the bell to be  
tolled for his wife when he and his wife were at discord,  
and she not answeringe his unkinde speaches reported, that  
she was speachlesse and therupon caused the bell to be  
tolled. Citetur.—f. 311.

## DCCLXXXIX.

[23 July, 1629.]

Various defects  
in the church.

*Ilford parva. Contra Johannem Lord, gardianum.*—Pre-  
sentatur, for that the leades of the church want mendinge  
by reason wherof it rayneth into the church, the flowere  
of the church wanteth pavinge, and for that there lyeth  
a greate heape of dust and drosse in the church neere unto  
the sowth dore, which annoyeth the church and for that  
three of the church windowes are stopped up with ragged  
stones to save glasse, and the other two windowes doe want  
glassinge; and for that we have not a convenient font for  
baptisme, nor a convenient communion table; and for that  
the wyne is brought in a vinegar bottle to the communion,

and for that there is not a convenient deske to reade prayers in; and also for that there is not any pulpitt to preach in, nor any cushion nor pulpitt cloth, and for that the north dore of the church is fastened up to save charges of a lock and keye, and the south dore of the church is all to peeces; and for that the steeple is in greate decaye and one of the bells broken and the other bell lacketh a rope: and also for that the tenne commaundements, the Lords prayer and the Creede are wantinge in our church: and lastlye for that the churchyard lyeth unfenced by reason wherof the hoggs doe roote up the graves: and the clerks wages is not payde. Prox.—f. 145.

## DCCXC.

*Southweald. Contra Robertum Smith, unum gardianorum.* Not giving account of rate.  
—Presentatur, for not giving an accompt to the towne upon a rate made by them for provision of certaine utensills for the chappell of Brentwood by injunction from the Chauncellor to the Lord Bishop of London.—f. 145.

## DCCXCI.

[30 June, 1630.]

*Munden. Contra Willielmum Stock.*— \* \* There are many unlawful paths made over the church-yard by William and Thomas Stock and their servants. \* \* —f. 22 b. Making unlawful paths in the churchyard.

## DCCXCII.

[18 Jan.]

*Leighes Magna. Contra Johannem Strutt [et alios].*— \* \* Drunkenness, and coming to church drunk.  
John Strutt and one Joseph Bridge Joane Goodman and Amye Thorpe singlemen and singlewomen, departed out of the church in the tyme of the sermon in the forenoone of that Sundaye, they went to the alehouse or taverne, which one William Chaundler keepeth, and there stayed eatinge drinkinge and tiplinge, both wyne and beare, untill eveninge prayer. John Strutt came not at all to eveninge prayer but lay asleepe in the feilds. The rest came to church. Joane Goodman went out of church about the beginning of the sermon and was observed by some of

the parishe to goe out reeling: she laye downe at the ende of the chancell and there laye asleepe till the later ende of the sermon, her hatt lyinge at her feete and in other unseemly fashion. The sideman, Robert Barnard by name, goinge out of the church to see who were without, espied her so lyinge and awakened her and came in againe, and wished her fellowe, the other mayde to goe to her; but she sittinge still (rather then the whole parishe should at their cominge forth vewe her in that case) the sideman went out againe himselfe and awakinge her, led her out of the churchyard; she beinge not able to goe of herselfe: and then after, her fellowe went alonge home with her: and the said sideman thinketh that she was drunke: and so it is commonly noysed and reported, both at home and abroade in many places that she was drunke, who are also scandalized thereat. Citentur.—f. 122 b.

## DCCXCIII.

[12 July, 1631.]

Disturbing the  
neighbours.

*Springfeild. Contra Willielmum Watkins [et alios].*—Presentatur, for disorderlye carryinge of himselfe on the Sabbath dayes, and sittinge up the greater parte of the night, disquietinge of his neighbours with their showtinge and outcryes.—f. 189.

## DCCXCIV.

[11 June, 1632.]

Sitting at the  
confession of  
faith.

*Dagenham. Contra Richardum Faune.*—Presentatur, for sittinge at the confession of the faith. \* \* Allegavit, that he was newly come into the church and that he did kneele downe and saye his prayers, and that he is hard of hearinge, et super veritatem hujusmodi allegationis fecit fidem.—f. 294 b.

## DCCXCV.

[14 Aug.]

*Raynham. Contra Mariam Cutford.*—Presentatur, for that she did most wickedlie wishe herselfe to be a witche for a tyme that she might be revenged of her adversarie, meaninge the said Anne Dawdrye. \* \* Ad agnoscendam ejus culpam.—f. 29.

## DCCXCVI.

[17 Sept.]

*Northockenden. Contra Henricum Aylett.*— \* \* Fassus Monition to  
est, that he was in fault in not standing up at the confession stand at the  
and kneeling at the readinge of the letanie, et submisit confession, &c.  
se etc. Unde dominus injunxit ei ad agnoscendam ejus  
culpam, \* \* et monuit eum, to stand up herafter at the  
confession and to kneele at the communion.—f. 38.

## DCCXCVII.

[8 Jan.]

*Northockenden. Contra Robertum Lincolne.*—Presentatur Concealing in-  
\* \* for countenancinge his brother Thomas Lincoln in continence, and  
his incontinenie committed with his servant in his howse, advising not to  
after he knewe of it; in hydinge concealinge and sendinge marry.  
him awaye, to the end that the course of justice might  
not proceede against him; when as he himselfe by his office,  
being constable, ought to have carryed him and the woman  
before a justice: He also diswaded his brother from marry-  
inge the woman whom he had wronged, when he sawe  
him inclined to it; and sclanderouslie abused the parson of  
the said parishe, sayinge that he would take a whore's  
parte before an honest mans; because he privatlie exhorted  
his brother, to marrie the woman whom he had wronged,  
as beinge the honestest and safest course.—f. 92.

## DCCXCVIII.

[29 Jan.]

*Grayes Thorock. Contra Johannem Richardson.*—Presen- Forbidding the  
tatur upon a crime, for that Marie Evans sayeth she is banns.  
with childe by him and for that cause forbid the banes  
in the church; since which tyme he hath marryed another  
woman in the same parishe which we hold verie unlawfull.  
Prox.—f. 104.

## DCCXCIX.

[5 June, 1633.]

*Burnham. Contra Anetem uxorem Willielmi Manfeild.*—



Adultery. Presentatur, for beinge taken in the acte of adulterie with a stranger whom we knowe not. \* \* Denegavit eandem esse veram. \* \* Prox.

DCCC.

[30 March, 1634.]

Not observing  
holy day. *Sowthockendon. Contra Henricum Reddall et Jacobum Walter, gardianos.*— \* \* Being asked whether they had any prayers or divine service read or sayde in their church upon the Kings daye, beinge the 27 day of this instant month of March, or any ringinge in tokinge of rejoycinge for sending us so gracious and peaceable a prince as our kinge is, to reigne over us: Responderunt, that they had not any of these duties performed in their church on the daye aforesaid, and also said and affirmed that their minister did not bid the said daye to be kept holie daye, nor gave any notice to the parishioners to resort to church to divine service and to give praise and thanks to Allmighty God, on the daye aforesaid. Prox.—f. 43.

DCCCL.

[30 April.]

Refusal to baptize child. *Fifeild. Contra Magistrum Alexandrum Reade, rectorem ibidem.*— \* \* \* He refused to baptise the child of Thomas Boardman a parishioner beinge brought to church the 4<sup>th</sup> of August last past beinge Sunday at morninge prayer he havinge notice of it before, where he was earnestly solicited by the said Thomas Boardman, the midwife and diverse others of neighbours, the child beinge very weake and sicke, neverthelesse to their greate discontentment he refused to baptise it, and told them he would not baptise it untill the afternoone and so it was carryed away againe unbaptised.—f. 57 b.

DCCCII.

[26 June.]

Not presenting  
absentees from  
church. *Fifeild. Contra Robertum Ashwell, nuper gardianum.*— Presentatur, for that he hath not duringe the tyme of 2 yeares churchwardenshipp, presented any for absence on

holidayes ; notwithstandinge I have bene compelled to come backe from church, for the most parte of the holidayes in the yeare, for want of company to reade prayers to ; and when I doe reade prayers, yf I have 4 parishioners besides the clerke and myne owne famylie it is the greatest number that usually is had ; yea himselfe hath bene as much absent as others, and his wife and family more then he. \* \* [*Dominus dimisit eum.*]—f. 88 b.

## DCCCIH.

[16 Sept.]

*Leighes parva. Contra Henricum Barnard et Margaretam ejus uxorem.*— \* \* Allegavit, that he is not satisfied that he maye goe to his parishe church and heare prayers and divine service there read with a safe conscience, and therefore desireth conference with some divine for the resolvinge of some doubts and for the satisfyinge of his conscience. Unde dominus injunxit ei ad conferendum cum Magistro Johanne Willis, rectore de Inгатstone et Magistro Josua Mapletoft, vicario de Margettinge ; et assignavit ei ad certificandum super hujusmodi conferentia in ecclesia parochiali de Inгатstone \* \* —f. 121 b.

## DCCCIV.

[17 Sept.]

*Asheldam. Contra Alexandrum Skingley.*—Presentatur, Words said for saying the parson would not putt him into the court, against the parson. because he the said Alexander holp the said parson to steale two bushells of lyme out of the church, to rob the church : or words of the like nature. Prox.—f. 127.

## DCCCIV.

[9 Jan.]

*Thaydon Garnon. Contra Simonem Lake et Elizabetham ejus uxorem.*—Notatur officio ex publica fama, that the said Simon Lake did begett the said Elizabeth with child, in the said parishe of Thaydon Garnon before marriage, in anno 1629 : she was delivered of the same child in the parishe of Enfeild, in the countie of Midd. Let him bringe To bring a cer-

tificate of marriage, except he will confesse. a certificate of his marriage, and another of the baptizinge of his child; excepte he will confesse.—f. 179 b.

## DCCCVI.

[24 Nov. 1635.]

Pulling off the bridegroom's garters. *Rayleighe. Contra Edwardum Cumberland.*—Presentatur, for offeringe violence unto John Riggs pullinge of [f] his garters and behavinge themselves in a very irreverent and uncivill manner, in the church of Rayleighe, at the communion table, upon the 12<sup>th</sup> of September 1635. \* \* Fassus est, that he did pull the bridegroomes garter of [f], at the communion table, et submisit se etc. Unde dominus, habita monicione, eum dimisit.—f. 295.

## DCCCVII.

[31 May, 1636.]

Excommunication for giving the lie in court. *Alveley. Contra Johannem Sotherne.*—Dominus decrevit eum excommunicandum fore, for givinge the lye in the open courte, in Romford chappell.—f. 32 b.

## DCCCVIII.

[12 July.]

Hanginge linen in the church, &c. *Baddowe parva. Contra Susannam Cooke uxorem Johannis Cooke.*—Presentatur, for hanginge her linnen in the church to dry, and when our minister Mr. Newton told her of it, she [said she] might hange her raggs there as well as the surpysse and bad him doe his worst. \* \* Dominus decrevit eam suspendendum fore ab ingressu ecclesie et eam suspendit.—f. 43 b.

## DCCCIX.

[3 Aug.]

Smiling in church. *Prittlewell. Contra Josephum Phenn.*—\* \* Allegavit, that he did smile as many others in the church did, at one that came into the church with his face all crock't, et submisit se etc. Unde dominus, habita monicione, eum dimisit.—f. 55.

## DCCCX.

2 August. Coram domino officiali in edibus apud Baddowe.

Letting blood contrary to the statute. *Rochford. Contra Johannem Dox.*—Presentatur for lettinge blood contrary to the statute. \* \* Fassus est, that

sometymes he doth lett blood, when he is sent for in a case of necessity, et submisit se etc. Unde dominus habita monicione eum dimisit.—f. 56.

## DCCCXI.

[8 Nov.]

*Northockendon. Contra Guilielmum Jackson, clericum rectorem rectorie ibidem.*— \* \* (1) We present him for not wearinge the hoode with the surplesse \* \* (2) We present him upon a common fame that about 16 or 17 yeares agoe in askinge the banes of a poore cupple he did not keepe himselfe to the forme prescribed in the canon; but signified to the parishe that they would marry and goe a begging together; and asked yf any knewe lawfull cause why they might not doe so; which gave offence to the parties then livinge and to some others. (6) We present him upon a report that upon some difference betwixt Laurence Searle and him about 5 or 6 yeares agoe, when the said Searle bid him kisse his tayle, he made him answer, that a man might have done that a while agoe, without untrusinge his poynts: and this, Searle sayeth, was spoken in the church \* \* Fassus est eandem esse veram et submisit se correctioni domini judicantis. Unde dominus eundem Guilielmum Jackson ab exercitione functionis sue ministerialis, et ab ingressu ecclesie suspendit.—f. 96 b.

Rector presented.

Suspended.

## DCCCXII.

[29 Nov.]

*Sandon. Contra Thomam Sharpe et Tabitham ejus uxorem, Thomam Sharpe juniorem, et Annam Wittam.*— \* \* They doe all refuse to bowe at the blessed name of Jesus, or to stand up at the Creed, accordinge to the cannon: but doe scoffe at the minister and others that doe. The said Tabitha did not come to be churched in a vaile; nor did kneele by the communion table, accordinge to the Rubricke: The said Sharpe is a common depracer of the government ecclesiasticall, and of the rites and ceremonies of this church, since his cominge from Newe England. \* \* Citentur.—f. 102 b.

Scoffing, &amp;c.

## DCCCXIII.

[7 Feb.]

Working in  
church during  
service.

*Rayleighe. Contra Aliciam uxorem Willielmi Cooke.*—Presentatur, for workinge in makinge up of neckclothes in the church upon the fast day, duringe the tyme of divine service and sermon, to the great dishonor of God and the greife and scandall of the congregacion.—f. 121 b.

## DCCCXIV.

[Eodem die.]

Attempt to  
sewe a person  
in a sheet.

*Baddowe parva. Contra Elizabetham Turnishe.*—Presentatur ut sequitur, we present Elizabeth Turnishe the wife of Thomas Turnishe and Frances the wife of one Silvester of our towne of Little Baddowe, that it is reported, that they both should goe in the night, up into the chamber of John Vessey, and pull him out of his bed, and endeavored to binde him up in a sheete \* \* Fassa est, that she came into his chamber with an intent to sowe him in a sheete, et submisit se. [*To acknowledge her fault.*—f. 122.

## DCCCXV.

[2 May, 1638.]

Misdemeanour.

*Fryeringe. Contra Johannem Beard famulam Christoferi Symons.*—Presentatur, for ——— out of the steeple upon some of the parishioners heads. Comparuit, respondendo eidem fassus est, that beeing in the steeple ringing amongst many others, he did make water which fell upon the heads of some of the parishioners, et submisit se. [*To acknowledge his fault.*—f. 241.

## DCCCXVI.

[20 June.]

Detaining ■  
corpse.

*Wakering magna. Contra Richardum Cole et uxorem ejus.*—Presentatur, for that whereas Samuell Tiffin deceasing on Munday the xxiii of Aprill, and being demaunded to be buried on Tuesday, the corpse then becing at the house of Tho. Cranwell victaler, it was denied, and by force deteyned, till Friday following; although the preacher was prepared and the people in great number waiting in the

streete; to the deluding of the preacher and people and danger of infecting the country. Comparuit et objecta presentatione, allegavit, that they did not deteyne the said body but for a small tyme, & buried it in decent manner. Unde dominus habita monicione dimisit.—f. 276 b.

## DCCCXVII.

[Eodem die.]

*Eadem. Contra Georgium Munson.*—Presentatur, for neglecting to chime the last peale on Whitsunday last \* \* \* [also] for neglecting to towle the passinge bell upon due warning given him. \* \* Dominus habita monicione dimisit.—f. 276.

Neglecting to toll the passing bell, &c.

## DCCCXVIII.

[17 Dec.]

*Stambridge magna. Contra Johannem Smyth.*—Presentatur, for not bowing at the name of Jesus, for kneeling and not standing at the Creed, for not answering with a loud voice to the responds, for not turning his face towards the east at the Doxologies, Creed, & Gospell. Prox.—f. 53.

Not answering aloud to the responds, and not turning to the east, &c.

## DCCCXIX.

[8 May, 1639.]

*Walthamstow. Contra Willielmum Grome.*—Presentatur, for being negligent in the place of a schoolmaster, his schollers not profitting under him; and refusing to teach poore mens children gratis, as by the foundation of the schoole he ought to doe: and it is desired that unlesse he doe reforme, he may be suspended; having been formerly admonished & not reformeing the same. Comparuit et objecto presentatione, denegavit eandem esse veram et humiliter petiit dictos gardianos citandum fore erga proximum ad justificandam.

Neglect of duty by schoolmaster.

[In the margin is,—Fiat citatio cum intimacione.]—f. 81 b.

## DCCCXX.

[28 Nov.]

*Steeple. Contra Sargent Winckfeild.*—Presentatur, for misdemeanour and unseemly actions, by casting things at



the maides in sermon tyme and sticking feathers on a maides wastcoate.

[*In the margin is,—Abiit.*—f. 149.

A.D. 1639,  
1640.

SECUNDO DIE JURIDICO post festum sive diem Sancti Edmundi Regis vicesimo septimo viz<sup>t</sup> die mensis Novembris anno Domini 1639 inter horas 9<sup>am</sup> et 11<sup>am</sup> ante meridiem ejusdem diei in ecclesia Christi prope Newgate civitate et Archidiaconatu London coram Ven<sup>li</sup> viro WILLIELMO CLARKE legum doctore officiali etc. presente Magistro MARTINO DAWSON notario publico Registrario.

#### DCCCXXI.

On the duty of  
the 'Aque-  
bajulas.'

*Parochia ecclesiæ Christi. Contra Anslowe unum Aquebajulorum.*—Presentatur per gardianos, for beinge absent when hee should attend the minister in visiting the sicke and ministringe sacrament and likewise for beinge absent from divine service. Reservatur pena etc. in hunc diem.—f. 1 b.

#### DCCCXXII.

Quinto die juridico post festum sive diem Sancti Andree apostoli die Veneris sexto viz<sup>t</sup> die mensis Decembris anno Domini 1639. Coram eodem.

*Parochia Sancti Botulphi extra Aldersgate. Contra Annam Carter, stronge water seller in Longlane.*—[Presentatur] for having company drinking of tobacco and beare in her house in time of divine service on Sonday the xxv<sup>th</sup> of August last past.

#### DCCCXXIII.

Refusal to ad-  
mit church-  
wardens to  
search.

*Eadem. Contra Johannem Gray, inhoulder at y<sup>e</sup> Bell in Aldersgate St.*—Similiter. For refusing to lett the churchwardens into his house on Sonday the xxvii<sup>th</sup> day of October

last when they came to search for company in time of divine service, they verily conceiving there was company in the house.—f. 17.

## DCCCXXIV.

Die Sabbathi decimo quarto viz<sup>t</sup> die mensis Decembris anno Domini 1639 etc.—f. 26.

*Parochia Sancti Leonardi Shoreditch. Contra Magistrum* Not paying for  
*Stacy.*—[Notatur officio] for not paying his marriage marriage.  
to the parson of Allhallowes the lesse.—f. 36.

## DCCCXXV.

Quinto die juridico post festum sive diem Sancti Wolstani episcopi die Sabbathi vicesimo quinto viz<sup>t</sup> die mensis Januarii anno Domini 1639 etc.

*Parochia Sancti Jacobi infra Aldgate. Contra Georgium Cope, ejusdem parochiæ.*—Presentatur per gardianos, for asking a woman what offence shee had done, that shee did pennance cominge to church in a vaile. Monitus est ad comparendum istis etc. ad videndum ulteriorem processum fieri.—f. 46.

## DCCCXXVI.

[Eodem die.]

*Parochia Sancti Ethelburgi. Contra Richardum Brenton.* Sitting at the  
—Presentatur per rectorem, for sitting on his breech at the Creed.  
Creede on St. Thomas' Day last & for not paying the parson his tythes.—f. 51 b.

## DCCCXXVII.

[Eodem die.]

*Parochia Sancti Leonardi Fosterlane. Contra Johannem* Not paying  
*Cocke, baker.*—[Denuntiatur domino judicanti] for not pay- marriage dues.  
ing 8s. 6d. for marriage due to the parson & clarke.—  
f. 53.

## DCCCXXVIII.

Quinto die juridico post festum sive diem Sancti Blasii episcopi die Lunæ 10<sup>o</sup> viz<sup>t</sup> die mensis Februarii anno Domini juxta etc. 1639 etc.—f. 69.

*Parochia Sancti Olavi Silverstreet. Contra Elizabetham* On behaviour  
*uxorem Johannis Bateman.*—[Presentatur per gardianos] for in church.

that on Sunday the second of Feb. 1639, juxta etc. last in the forenoone all the time of divine prayers after the 2<sup>d</sup> lesson shee did not kneele and did talke to them in the next pewe to her & [when] shee was admonished by the sexton who was sent by the churchwardens shee very scornfully answered, Oh ! let them present mee.—f. 75.

## DCCCXXIX.

Eodem die [viz. 26<sup>o</sup> Feb. 1639] coram venerabili viro GUILIELMO CLERK legum doctore officiali etc.

Having a child  
baptized  
secretly, &c.

*Parochia Sanctæ Trinitatis in le Minories. Officium domini contra Nicholaum Skinner.*—Detectus est officio, That he had a gentlewoman brought to bedd in his house beinge an unmarried woman and the childe secretly conveyed away to be baptised. Comparuit personaliter dictus Skinner, cui dominus objecit detectionem predictam, cui respondendo dixit et respondit, That the said gentlewoman mencioned in the detection aforesaid is a married woman the wife of one William Thorowgood, and that shee was brought to bedd in his house on Tuesday the fowerth of Feb. last, and caused the child secretly to bee conveyed under her mans cloake to bee baptized but hee the said Nicholas Skinner cannot tell where it was baptized, but when it was brought in againe, Mrs. Thorowgood's man told him the said Nicholas Skynner, that the childs name was Thomas, but would not tell this deponent where the said child was baptized. And that the said Mr. Thorowgood secretly stole out of his howse on Saturday the 22<sup>th</sup> of February last, and that they came from Mr. Hobsons house of Bromley in Kent. Dominus monuit dictum Skynner ad comparandum 5<sup>o</sup> 15<sup>ne</sup> Pasche proximi ad respondendum ulteriorem processum fieri.—f. 89.

## ANALYTICAL TABLE OF CONTENTS.

---

### ABSOLUTION, 198 (*passim*).

Committed by the court to curate, 179. 360.

Curate absolving without authority, 741.

### ADMINISTRATION.

Administering goods without authority of ordinary, 76. 81. 152. 695. 783.

### ADULTERY, &c., 7. 13. 27. 71. 78. 100. 107. 199. 235. 297. 330. 343. 750. 799.

Inquisition upon fame of, 174.

### ALMS TO THE POOR.

Church stock for poor, 379. 680.

Collection-money for a house demanded, 760.

Detaining money collected for French Protestants, 774.

Monition to make a weekly payment, 448.

No collection for poor at the communion, 720.

Not giving to the poor, 535.

Taking money out of the poor-box, 452.

### APPARITOR.

Apparitor's fees, 536.

Assaulting apparitor or Mandatory, 39. 119. 199. 205. 227.

Bribing the apparitor, 623.

Causing an apparitor to be unjustly arrested, 110.

Commission of sub-apparitor, 173.

Exercising office of apparitor without licence, 165. 314.

Hindering apparitor, 311.

Mandatory, sequestration of goods by, 213.

Refusal to accept citation without seeing the apparitor's commission, 169.

Subtracting apparitor's commission, 316.

Threatening apparitor, 277. 315.

### APPEAL.

Renunciation of, 304.

## AQUÆBAJULUS.

- Admitted to office without consent of rector, 22.
- Certificate of publication of banns given by aquæbajulus, 192.
- Conduct of parish-clerk, 742.
- Complaint of disobedience to rector and curate, 254.
- Custody of penance-sheet, 740.
- Duties of parish-clerk, 348. 350. 380. 821.
- Inability of clerk, 530.
- Refusal to pay salary and wages of aquæbajulus and parish-clerk, 4. 140. 230. 239. 283. 293. 773. 789.

## ARBITRATION AND COMPROMISE, 11. 17. 26. 75. 88. 102. 201.

## ARCHDEACON'S JURISDICTION.

- Exhibition of letters of orders, 363. 372.
- Installation of archdeacon of Essex recorded, 728.
- Monition to curate to study theology and exhibit exercises, 639.
- Oath to archdeacon upon decree for induction, 356.

## ASSAULTING PRIESTS, 11. 139. 210. 350. 650.

## BANNS OF MARRIAGE.

- Banns forbidden on ground of precontract, 142.
- published in two churches, 287.
- Certificate of banns, 303.
- Dispensation for third publication of banns, 209. 233.
- Forbidding banns, 24. 503. 798.
- Having banns asked and not proceeding to marriage, 145. 554.
- published without precontract, 279.
- Marriage celebrated on wrong certificate of publication of banns, 192.
- solemnized without banns, 198. 614.
- Marrying non-parishioner without certificate of banns, 222.
- Person instructed to forbid banns, 126.

## BAPTISM.

- Admitting children to be godfathers, &c., 523.
- Baptism delayed for two days, 6 ; for three weeks, 595 ; for a month, 662.
- Being godfather to his own child, 771.
- Child baptized by one not a full minister, 781.
- with one godfather, 595.
- Delaying baptism, 560.
- Examination of godfather and godmother, 451.
- Godmother not having received communion, 526.
- Having a child secretly baptized, 829.
- Rebaptizing a child baptized by a midwife, 52.
- Refusal to baptize a child, 801.
- have a child baptized without the word, 592.
- Use of cross in baptism, 542, 543. 704.
- Words spoken respecting unbaptized child, 490.

## BELL-RINGING.

- Suffering unruly persons to ring the bells, 561.
- Unlawful ringing of bells, 567. 665. 687. 770.

## BIBLE.

- Of largest volume to be bought, 513.

## BISHOP'S PARK, violating, 183. 241.

## BLASPHEMY, 130. 267. 344. 396. 485. 642. 715.

## BREAKING FAITH.

- In hiring foreigners to work at his trade, 36.
- In a bargain, 30.
  - breaking promise not to prosecute, 47. 118.
  - not abiding by arbitration, 17.
    - fulfilling time of service, 46.
      - his oath as a member of the bakers' company, 68.
  - keeping promise, 177.
  - paying a debt, 31. 95. 113. 200. 272.
  - restoring a pledge, 49. 114. 242.
  - restoring goods, 86.

## BURIAL.

- Burial fees, 237. 773.
- Burying out of parish, 129. 553.
  - without ceremony and proper service, 553. 607. 646. 716. 718.
- Collection made for poor person's burial, 309.
- Delaying burial improperly, 816.
- Refusing to bury without receiving mortuary, 255.

## CATECHIZING.

- Answering saucily when catechized, 768.
- Being unable to say the Lord's Prayer, &c., 177.
- Not coming to be examined, being ignorant, 699.
  - knowing the Ten Commandments, 437.
    - reminding the parishioners to learn the Catechism, 446.
- Parishioners refuse to send youth to be catechized, 463.
- Refusing to be examined, 755.
  - say the Ten Commandments, 641.
- To certify of having learned the Creed and Ten Commandments, 481.

## CHANCEL.

- Chancel out of repair, 347.
  - used by schoolmaster, 583.
- Parsonage in decay, 369.

## CHARITY.

- Imprecation, 659. 795.
- Not living in charity, 371.



## CHRISM.

Not receiving "oleum sanctum," 229.

Separavit "oleum sanctum," 208.

## CHURCH (MISBEHAVIOUR IN).

Blowing out altar-lights, 423.

Coming to church in man's apparel, 656. 724.

Disturbing one receiving the Sacrament, 340.

service, 104. 157. 158. 176. 244. 253. 271. 349. 394. 499.  
531. 647. 678. 715. 735. 767. 784. 786. 806. 828.

Effusion of blood in church, 144.

Forcing his way into the church, 586.

Getting drunk at the communion, 769.

Going out of church during service, 532. 792.

Hanging linen in the church, 808.

Laying brome in the church without leave, 684.

Misbehaviour of a boy in church, 476.

Not eating the communion bread, 652.

    kneeling at the communion, 538.

    making reverence to the name of Jesus, 590. 767.

Needlework in service time, 413.

Refusing to receive the blessed bread, 317.

    sing, 429.

Sitting at the confession of faith, 767. 794. 796. 818. 826.

    with hat on, 726.

Sleeping in the church, 756.

Smiling in church, 809. 820.

Striving for places, 531.

Taking the Sacrament in his hand, 278.

Throwing pax-bread on the ground, 191.

Vomiting in the church, 751.

Washing his hands in the font, 308.

## CHURCH BOOKS AND REGISTERS.

Custody of books in parish chest, 693.

Register of marriages and deaths and christenings, 497. 705.

## CHURCHING OF WOMEN.

Coming to be churchd unattended, 634.

Churching of mother of illegitimate child, 41.

Disorderly conduct of women, 506.

Feasting on the day of churching, 662.

In a private house, 57. 345. 714.

Kerchiefs worn at the ceremony, 514. 696. 738. 812. 825.

Mass said at purification, 368.

Not coming properly to be churchd, 595.

Stool for churching, 696.

## CHURCH RATES.

- An individual rated by assessors to church dues, 58.
- Assessment collected in the church for repairs of windows, 624.
- Not paying rate for ringing bells on the queen's accession, 612.
- Subtraction of rate made by minister and substantial men, 544.

## CHURCH REPAIRS.

- Chancel windows broken, 455.
- Church darkened by painted windows, 539.
- Churchwardens' monition to repair, 353. 497. 597. 789.
- Monition to enclose churchyard under penalty, 162. 324.
- Surplice ordered to be provided, 516.

## CHURCH STOCK.

- Church kyne, 367. 379. 680.

## CHURCHWARDEN.

- Choice of churchwarden by parson, 685.
- Churchwarden to be reminded of duty by curate, 594.
- Letter on churchwardens' misconduct, 368.
- Making untrue presentment, 704, 730.
- Not concluding with the sworn men, 566.
  - providing bread and wine for communion (excuse for), 525.
  - presenting faults, 563.
  - suffering their minister to preach, 579.
- Presenting persons absent from church, 500. 578. 589. 594. 746. 802. 823.
- Refusing to be churchwarden or sidesman, 449. 492. 559. 637.
- Suffering a minstrel to play in church at a wedding, 598.
  - the Sabbath to be profaned, &c., 754.

## CHURCHWARDEN'S ACCOUNT.

- Account rendered of ecclesiastical dues before churchwarden, 201.
- Churchwarden to render account, 218. 353. 379. 581. 615. 685. 790.
- Not rendering account of church goods, 230.

## CHURCHYARD, &amp;c.

- Cemetery not properly enclosed, 162. 324.
- Church path, ploughing up, 717.
  - stile, 655.
- Defacing name of churchwarden on church stile, 694.
- Feeding cattle in churchyard, 351. 364.
- Keeping cossetts in the churchyard by night, 386.
- Lodging in the church porch, 690.
- Making disturbance in churchyard, 687.
  - unlawful paths in churchyard, 791.
- Misbehaviour in the steeple, 815.
- Penance for feeding a horse in a churchyard, 181.

## CHURCHYARD, &amp;c. (continued).

Taking turfs from churchyard, 166.

Throwing stones at church, 664.

## CLERICAL MISCONDUCT.

Absence from procession, 410.

Acting as lord of misrule, 661.

Allowing children to die unbaptized, 560.

Assault by priest in a church, 180. 193.

Baptizing child baptized by a midwife, 52.

Being indicted for a common barreter, 668.

Betraying confession, 368.

Breaking open the parish chest, 693.

Celebrating divine service, &amp;c., without orders, 454. 584.

Conduct of rector to his curate, 369.

Exposing person, 52. 61.

Feeding horse, &amp;c., in churchyard, 181. 351.

Felling timber on glebe, 778.

Giving a false certificate of banns, 303.

Going perambulation in a surplice, 451. 458. 693.

Gross language during divine service, 50.

Haunting taverns (drunkard), 376. 489. 569. 676.

Having private conventicle, 556. 621.

Immodest behaviour to females at confession, 153. 202.

Improper behaviour whilst carrying the host in visiting the sick, 163.  
362.

expression in the pulpit, 395.

Incontinence, and suspicion of, 25. 52. 178. 211. 261. 303. 362. 369.  
375. 381. 393. 657. 675.

Living idly, &amp;c., 682.

Marrying non-parishioners, 471.

irregularly, 614.

Ministering, being married, 420. 422.

communion, but not receiving it, 611.

being excommunicate, 605. 692.

the Sacrament, &amp;c., in English, 404. 407.

with loaf-bread and cakes, 450.

Neglecting the homilies, 471. 489.

Non-residence on vicarage, 252. 478. 488. 729.

Not baptizing a child, 801.

burying a child, 775.

celebrating according to agreement, 296.

churching in prescribed form, 471.

distributing the king's sylv, 377.

following the Book of Common Prayer, 502. 700. 759.

having sermons preached, 375. 397. 439. 447.

quarterly sermons and communions, 483.

## CLERICAL MISCONDUCT (continued).

- Not hearing confession, 410.
  - ministering in surplice and hood, 444. 542. 759. 811.
  - praying for the queen, 555.
  - reading the Injunctions or Six Articles, 390.
  - registering weddings, &c., 705.
  - reminding the parishioners to learn the Catechism, 446. 488.
  - serving cure or saying mass, &c., at proper hours, 143. 187. 211. 347. 351. 354. 362. 376. 377. 381. 382. 390. 401. 445. 483. 649.
  - sprinkling holy water according to custom in London, 127.
  - using cross in baptism, 542. 543. 555. 605. 700.
- Office of preacher, 700.
- Officiating after committing an assault, 193.
  - without license, 194. 408. 420. 509. 560.
- Order to turn to the people and say service, 460. 493.
- Playing at dice, &c., 54. 725.
- Preaching, &c., without leave of rector or curate, 52. 266. 370.
  - without license, 625.
- Refusal to take oath of obedience to rector, 53. 286.
  - to celebrate marriage without payment of fees, 221.
- Refusing to administer communion, 621.
- Rejecting person from the communion, 713.
- Simony, 178.
- Solemnizing marriage without communion, 438.
- Speaking disrespectfully of the bishop and his officers, 127.
- Suspicion of Papistry, 509. 631.
  - being a felon, 178.
- Swearing, 54. 675.
- Taking excessive fees for marriage, 582.
- Using scurrilous language, 761. 811.
- Usurer, 504.

## COMMUNION.

- Not receiving, 495. 538. 540. 697. 734. 765.
- Receiving from a friar without curate's leave, 292.
- Rejection from, 437. 782.

## CONFESSION.

- Not confessing at Easter, 29. 101.
  - to his own priest, 67. 101. 103. 281.
  - before marriage, 106.

## CONTEMPT OF THE CLERGY.

- Calling a clergyman heretic, 60.
- Speaking ill of the clergy, 56. 60. 108. 231. 259. 278. 317. 443. 511. 640. 745. 766. 776. 804.
- Rejoicing at seeing priests in trouble, 141.

CONVENTICLES, 550. 552. 556. 562. 593. 750.

## COURTS AND THEIR OFFICERS.

Commissary's communion, 269.

Contempt of court in vexatiously arresting an apparitor, 110.

non-appearance, 116. 148.

proceeding under royal authority, 346.

vexatiously against parties in secular court, 122.

refusing to answer, 151.

answer in Latin, 622.

take the oath, 332.

hindering the appearance of a party, 263.

citing without a commission, 307.

Clergy sworn to obey the court, 133. 155. 217.

Curate invading the authority of the ordinary, 133. 215.

authority of court by enjoining public penance, 164.

Defacing letters of excommunication, 136.

Fees of court, 99. 186. 536.

Giving the lie in court, 807.

Jealousy between the bishop's and the archdeacon's court, 133. 167. 204. 217. 312.

Jurisdiction of the Commissary over the Savoy, 322.

Not certifying execution of letters of excommunication, 149. 167. 270.

Refusing to execute decree of suspension, 119.

Resistance to execution of letters of excommunication, 136. 155. 168. 178. 256. 288. 289. 600.

Security given not to depart out of jurisdiction, 199. 212.

Sequestration of witness, 355.

Sickness pleaded for non-appearance, 172. 359.

Speaking abusively of the court and its officers, 63. 305. 321. 436. 562. 574. 719.

Suspension for non-appearance, 23. 25. 115. 171. 182. 608.

Violation of the liberties of the church in arresting a person cited, 170.

## DIFFAMATION.

Being common diffamers, &c., 125.

Calling a person "heretic," 134.

Causing suspicion of heresy, 203.

Diffamation, 24. 79. 102. 216. 231. 265. 267.

Making rhymes of the parishioners, 546. 663. 785.

Nailing horns at a door, 609.

Railing speeches, 601. 703. 757. 765.

Talebearer, 626.

Telling a man to saw off his horns, 475.

## DRESS OF CLERGY.

- Dressing as a layman, 403.
- Monk using secular priest's dress, 214.
- Not using surplice, 275.
- Wearing hermit's dress, not being professed, 212.

DRUNKENNESS AND HAUNTING TAVERNS, 105. 156. 485.  
606. 677. 688. 782. 792.

## DUES AND FEES.

- Due to churchwarden for burial, 59.
- parish-clerk for graves, 732.
- marriage, 8.
- Fees for marriage, 221. 582. 824. 827.
- Not paying burial fees, 237.
- for knell, 681.

## EXCOMMUNICATE PERSONS.

- Administering the communion, &c., being excommunicate, 489. 605. 692.
- Entering the church being excommunicate, 341.
- Marrying a wife being excommunicate, 589.
- Minister constrained to cease service, excommunicate persons being present, 619. 711.
- Receiving excommunicate persons into church, 610.
- Showing favour to excommunicate persons, 14, 15.
- Standing excommunicate for not proving a will, 603.
- Writ de excommunicato capiendo, 434. 520.

## FOX'S MONUMENTS.

- To be bought and fastened in the church, 513.

## FRATERNITY (Goods of).

- Guardians of goods compelled to give account, 175.

## HERETICAL OPINIONS.

- Being "apostata," 23.
- Brownists, 743.
- Contempt of God and of the saints, 35.
- the cross, 206. 391.
- holy bread, 384.
- holy oil and of baptism, 228.
- Declaring the sacrament of the altar to be "panis materialis," 34. 195.
- False opinions respecting the Gospel, 405.
- Lollardy, eating flesh on prohibited days, 426.
- Maintaining heresy, 432.
- Objecting to kiss the pax, &c., 428.
- the Latin service, 427. 429.
- Opinions concerning the mass, real presence, 74. 357. 413. 414. 419. 431. 558.



## HERETICAL OPINIONS (continued).

- Opinions on confirmation, 430.
  - immortality of the soul, 596.
  - preaching and prayers, 551. 575.
  - the sacrament, 701.
  - the Trinity, 524. 534. 537.
- Prayers for the dead, 361.
- Reading heretical books, 424, 425.
- Reconciliation of a heretic, 433.
- Refusal of absolution, 421.
  - to kneel according to the Common Prayer, 627. 737.
- Speaking slightly of excommunication, 151.
- Suspicion of heresy, 84. 135. 219.
- Swearing by the mass, 459.

## INCEST, 92. 280. 653.

INCONTINENCE, 3. 9. 44. 62. 73. 91. 94. 96. 98. 99. 124. 130. 160.  
257. 258. 274. 301. 313. 328. 334. 398. 399. 467. 477. 512. 528. 547.  
548. 573. 577. 585. 588. 602. 618. 632. 657. 679. 691. 748. 772. 797.  
805.

## INFANTS.

- Causing birth of a dead child, 128.
- Procuring abortion, 331.

## INJUNCTIONS, 254. 387. 523.

## LICENSE TO OFFICIATE.

- Burying dead not being licensed or in orders, 584.
- Expounding, not being licensed, 560. 576. 604. 625.
- Friar celebrating without license, 194.
- Inhibition not to officiate without license, 408.
- License to a rector to officiate in any church, 117.

## MATRIMONIAL CAUSES.

- Banns of marriage forbidden, 142. 571. 798.
- Bigamy and precontract, 37. 45. 220. 300. 306. 310. 323. 327. 635. 644.  
645.
- Celebrating marriage at forbidden times and places, &c., 247. 507. 587.  
591. 683.
- Clandestine marriage, 268.
- Consenting to a divorce for money, 572.
- Contract of marriage, 19. 21. 98. 100. 190. 197. 232. 279. 282. 302. 339.  
411. 515. 517.
- Deaf and dumb person married, 507.
- Death of a husband proved by witnesses, 109.
- Deriding marriage, 698. 710.
- Dispensation for marriage (special license), 319.
- Divorce by reason of cruelty, 441.

## MATRIMONIAL CAUSES (continued).

- Divorce by reason of precontract, 295.
- Expelling his wife, 5. 83. 249. 294. 474.
- Infirmity pleaded for not marrying, 670.
- Injunction to marry, 291.
- Jactitation of marriage, 248.
- Living apart not divorced, 487.
- Marrying a wife, being excommunicated, 589.
  - in a mask, 644.
  - without ring, 565.
  - in another parish without license of rector, 370.
  - wife within prohibited degree, 435. 508.
  - persons precontracted, 252. 545.
- Monition for separation, 510.
  - not to contract marriage pending suit, 132.
- Not treating wife or husband properly, 161. 276. 298. 638. 645. 764. 788.
- Nun's confession of marriage, 409.
- Refusal to marry or be married, 260. 496. 599.
- Sentence for alimony and cohabitation, 320. 441.

## MIDWIVES AND SURGEONS.

- License to officiate, 417. 733. 744. 810.

## MISCELLANEOUS OFFENCES.

- Attempting to sew a person in a sheet, 814.
- Deriding ecclesiastical censure, 519.
- Keeping bad rule in his house, 224.
- Poisoning, 138.
- Serving a writ on a Sunday, 472.
- Singing the Litany in Guildhall, 33.
- Theft, 196. 671.

## ORDERS (HOLY).

- Baptizing, not being a full minister, 781.
- Burying dead, not being in holy orders, 584.
- Reading prayers, not being a deacon, 521.

## ORDINATION.

- Proof of ordination required, 306.

## OVERLAYING INFANTS, 89. 150. 185.

## PARDON.

- King's pardon allowed, 706.

## PARDONER.

- Pardoner's authority pleaded, 168.

## PARISH BOUNDS.

- Cutting down a boundary tree, 739.
- an ancient mark, 758.
- Ploughing up a mark, 491.

PARISH CLERK. See Aquæbajulus.

PAX-BREAD AND BLESSED BREAD, 191. 317. 381. 387.

## PENANCE (FORMS OF).

- Bond to perform penance, 268.
- Carry a taper or stand in a sheet, &c., during service, 7. 15. 41. 123. 164. 206. 220. 253. 273. 280. 285. 302. 328. 398. 402. 454.
- Fasting in Lent, 308.
- Giving alms, 297. 318. 522. 612.
- Indulgence pleaded for remission of penance, 329.
- Not fulfilling, 56.
- Oath to perform penance, 55. 63. 121.
- Pecuniary commutation of penance, 71. 73. 78. 189. 198. 267. 318. 328. 333. 358. 567. 721.
- Penance not particularly described, 50. 106. 121. 151. 167. 169. 170. 191. 192. 228. 268. 278. 279. 304. 311. 334. 336. 343. 349. 352. 368. 413. 519. 730.
- Praying with bare legs and feet, 335.
- Private, substituted for public, penance, 299. 330. 333.
- Public confession or declaration of fault, 55. 383. 392. 419. 431. 434. 438. 450. 458. 459. 473. 480. 484. 485. 504. 525. 531. 532. 533. 538. 548. 551. 554. 555. 557. 564. 568. 577. 587. 606. 614. 636. 642. 679. 724. 766. 785. 795.
- Receiving discipline at mass, 295.
- Refusal to confess publicly, 686.
- To say the psalter of the Virgin, 294.
  - give milk for wasting tithe-milk, 486.
  - offer wax tapers, 1. 297.
  - stand in the market-place, 464.

PENANCE-SHEET, 740.

PERJURY, 75. 77. 93. 131. 146. 147. 200.

## PEWS AND SEATS.

- Contention caused by making ■ pew, 654.
- Encroachment by taking pews, 777.
- Head of pew ordered to be taken down, 736.
- Offence taken at a young person sitting with her mother, 752.
- Parishioners to be placed according to their degrees, 479.
- Refusing to sit where placed, 517. 648.
- The youth take up the places of the parishioners, 539.

## PLURALITY.

Holding without dispensation, 246.

Monition to declare plurality, 54.

## PROCESSIONS AND PERAMBULATIONS.

General procession of the parish, 251. 416.

Perambulations, 451. 458. 491. 758.

## PROCTORS, 51. 218. 707.

## PROFANING THE CHURCH.

Folding sheep in the church, 522.

Having players in the church, 443. 480.

Painted stuff for plays in the church, 470.

PRONUBÆ, 18. 25. 38. 72. 87. 90. 112. 179. 240. 262. 466. 505. 541.  
549. 616. 620. 658. 712.

## PURGATION.

By the oath or declaration of the party, 92. 96. 99. 108. 258.

vicinorum, 70. 130. 131. 177. 522. 653. 712. 762. 768. 772.

of one compurgator, 62.

of two, 261. 264.

of three, 46. 91. 196. 243. 276. 308. 316. 337. 737.

of four, 18. 38. 41. 100. 163. 180. 232. 245. 277. 535. 550.  
554. 573. 616.

of five, 30. 52. 60. 65. 76. 98. 102. 124. 141. 143. 185. 242.  
558. 725.

of six, 128. 167. 176. 184. 193. 271. 358. 489. 575.

of seven, 135. 186. 211. 262.

of eight, 206. 228.

Commission to curate to receive purgation, 184.

Compurgators' refusal of oath, 3.

Failure in purgation, 9. 336. 358. 533. 633.

Sentence of restitution bonæ famæ, 223, 224. 271.

Proclamation of purgation in church, 223, 224.

## RECUSANCY AND POPERY.

Dispensation from the council, 630.

Payment to the exchequer for recusancy, 628, 629, 630.

Recusancy, 672. 708, 709. 763.

## ROODLOFT or CRUCIFORIUM.

Destruction of roodloft, 412.

Not taking down roodloft, 462. 468.

## SACRILEGE.

Breaking church windows, 529.

Destroying roodloft, 412.

Selling organ, 747.

## SACRILEGE (continued).

- Taking altar-stone, 415.
  - away a chalice, 154.
  - a premar, 243.
  - naviculam of silver, 250.
  - carpet cloth, 374.

## SACRISTAN.

- Election of sexton by parishioners, 780.
- Not chiming and tolling, 817.
  - tolling bell on holy days, 727.
- Office and salary of sexton, 660.

## SCHOOLMASTERS.

- Inhibition not to teach without license, 465.
- Neglect of duty, 819.
- Not being licensed, 521. 562. 570. 583.
  - teaching catechism, 722.
- Schoolmaster's boys misbehaving in church, 722.
- Women not to teach children above ten years of age without license, 613.

## SICK PERSONS.

- Not informing the minister of his wife's sickness, 457.
- Order to minister communion at private house, 518.

## SIMONY, 178. 226.

## SUNDAYS AND HOLYDAYS (NON-OBSERVANCE OF).

- Bell not tolled for service upon holy days, 727.
- Breaking open a pound during service, 762.
- Burning a bewitched lamb on Sunday, 779.
- Dancing in service time, 461. 666. 673. 702.
- Eating flesh on St. Mark's day, 234.
  - a vigil, 402.
- Fighting in service time, 667.
- Having doubts about frequenting parish church, 803.
- Hunting on Sunday, 384. 749.
- License for part of a family to be absent from parish church, 580.
- Lying in bed during matins and mass, 64.
- Not keeping the king's day, 27 March, 800.
- Parish church (not coming to) all the Sundays in Lent, 69.
  - on festival days, 18. 20. 48. 281. 292.
  - 335. 365. 416. 589.
- Playing at cards and dice, 456.
  - ball, 578. 669.
- Sabbath breaking, 103. 236.
- Selling wares in service time, 366. 378.
  - books during sermon time at Paul's Cross, 400.

## SUNDAYS AND HOLYDAYS (continued).

- Sitting in an alehouse, 498.
- Setting up a Maypole during service, 731.
- Victualler having persons in his house, 744. 822, 823.
- Work of necessity pleaded, 501.
- Working on the papists' conspiracie day, 753.
  - on Sundays and feast days, 164. 189. 388. 723.
- Unruly behaviour, 787. 793.

## TESTAMENTARY CAUSES.

- Executors not finding a chaplain to celebrate for the deceased, 12. 16.
- Not accepting or renouncing executorship, 469.
  - paying legacies, 16. 66. 80. 115. 342.
- Penalty enjoined if legacy to a minor should not be paid, 120.
- Support of wife and children by executor enjoined, 453.
- Sureties for payment of children's legacies required, 482.

## TITHES AND OFFERINGS.

- Destroying tithe-oats, 188.
- Detaining a violet cloak, a mortuary, 245.
- Easter offerings, 651.
- Hindering offerings (London), 42.
- Non-payment of priest's salary for celebrating, 97.
- Not offering candle, 176.
  - paying to the *holy loaf*, 387.
- Offering in wrong church, 225. 361.
  - Easter offerings and dues, 281. 643. 647.
- Payment to light, 4. 32. 140.
  - to the high altar, 28.
- Refusal to bury without receiving mortuary, 255.
  - offer, custom of London, 2. 26. 85.
- Subtraction of mortuary, 290.
  - offerings, 292.
  - tithes, 40.
- Wasting tithe-milk, 486.
- Withholding of tithes, 617.

## TORCHES AND TORCHWARDEN.

- Custom of making torches enforced, 373.
- Election of torchwarden, 389.

## USURY, 159. 238. 504.

## WITCHCRAFT, &amp;c.

- Believing in sorcery, 65. 795.
- Concealing a witch, 440.
- Consulting a witch, 473. 494. 568. 674.



## WITCHCRAFT, &amp;c. (continued).

Consumption inflicted, 82.

For cure of fever, 10.

procurement of marriage, 123.

restoration of stolen goods, 43. 284.

Healing by prayer, 442.

Herbs and prayers for cure of disease, 326. 337, 338.

Psalter and key, use of, 207.

Sieve and sheers, 418.

To secure attachment, 27. 325.

Using sorcery, 70. 137. 216. 264.

THE END.

School of Theology  
at Claremont

GILBERT & RIVINGTON, Printers, St. John's Square, London.

41533

337683









DATE DUE

APR 6 1996

3 12 8

Please Do Not Remove This Card From Pocket  
Please Do Not Remove This Card From Pocket



NO. 23-247

PRINTED IN U. S. A.

BX  
5155  
L6

**London (Diocese) Courts.**

A series of precedents and proceedings in criminal causes, extending from the year 1475 to 1640; extracted from act-books of ecclesiastical courts in the diocese of London, illustrative of the discipline of the Church of England. To which is prefixed, an introductory essay. By William Hale Hale ... London, F. & J. Rivington [etc.], 1847.

4 p. l., lxiii, 280 p. 26<sup>cm</sup>.

"An essay on the English ecclesiastical law, and the jurisdiction of the ecclesiastical courts" (lxiii p.)

1. Church of England — Discipline. 2. Ecclesiastical law — Gt. Brit.  
3. Courts—Gt. Brit. 1. Hale, William Hale, 1795-1870, ed. II. Title:  
Precedents and proceedings in criminal causes ... 1475 to 1640.

Library of Congress

BX5155.L6

337683

CCSC/ej



